A reference grammar of Puyuma, an Austronesian language of Taiwan
Pacific Linguistics is a publisher specialising in grammars and linguistic descriptions, dictionaries and other materials on languages of the Pacific, Taiwan, the Philippines, Indonesia, East Timor, southeast and south Asia, and Australia.

Pacific Linguistics, established in 1963 through an initial grant from the Hunter Douglas Fund, is associated with the Research School of Pacific and Asian Studies at The Australian National University. The authors and editors of Pacific Linguistics publications are drawn from a wide range of institutions around the world. Publications are refereed by scholars with relevant expertise, who are usually not members of the editorial board.

FOUNDING EDITOR: Stephen A. Wurm
EDITORIAL BOARD: John Bowden and I Wayan Arka (Managing Editors), Nicholas Evans, David Nash, Andrew Pawley, Malcolm Ross, Paul Sidwell, Jane Simpson, and Darrell Tryon

EDITORIAL ADVISORY BOARD:
Karen Adams, Arizona State University
Alexander Adelaar, University of Melbourne
Peter Austin, School of Oriental and African Studies
Byron Bender, University of Hawai‘i
Walter Bisang, Johannes Gutenberg-Universität Mainz
Robert Blust, University of Hawai‘i
David Bradley, La Trobe University
Lyle Campbell, University of Utah
James Collins, Universiti Kebangsaan Malaysia
Bernard Comrie, Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology
Soenjono Dardjowidjojo, Universitas Atma Jaya
Matthew Dryer, State University of New York at Buffalo
Jerold A. Edmondson, University of Texas at Arlington
Margaret Florey, Monash University
William Foley, University of Sydney
Karl Franklin, SIL International
Charles Grimes, SIL International
Nikolaus Himmelmann, Ruhr-Universität Bochum
Lillian Huang, National Taiwan Normal University
Bambang Kaswanti Purwo, Universitas Atma Jaya
Marian Klamer, Universiteit Leiden
Harold Koch, The Australian National University
Frantisek Lichtenberk, University of Auckland
John Lynch, University of the South Pacific
Patrick McConvell, Australian Institute of Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander Studies
William McGregor, Aarhus Universitet
Ulrike Mosel, Christian-Albrechts-Universität zu Kiel
Claire Moyse-Faurie, Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique
Bernd Nothofer, Johann Wolfgang Goethe-Universität Frankfurt am Main
Ger Reesink, Universiteit Leiden
Lawrence Reid, University of Hawai‘i
Jean-Claude Rivierre, Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique
Melenaite Taumoefolau, University of Auckland
Tasaku Tsunoda, University of Tokyo
John Wolff, Cornell University
Elizabeth Zeitoun, Academica Sinica
A reference grammar of Puyuma, an Austronesian language of Taiwan

Stacy Fang-Ching Teng

Pacific Linguistics
Research School of Pacific and Asian Studies
The Australian National University
# Table of contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>List of tables</td>
<td>xiv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>List of figures</td>
<td>xv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>List of maps</td>
<td>xvi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acknowledgements</td>
<td>xvii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>List of abbreviations</td>
<td>xviii</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## Chapter 1  Introduction

1.1  Goal

1.2  About the people and the language
   1.2.1  The geographical setting and the speakers
   1.2.2  A note on traditional culture and social organisation
   1.2.3  Dialects
   1.2.4  Language use
   1.2.5  Orthography
   1.2.6  The position of Puyuma within Austronesian

1.3  Previous studies

1.4  About this study
   1.4.1  Field methods
   1.4.2  Methodology and the data used
   1.4.3  Informants

## Chapter 2  Phonetics and phonology

2.1  An overview of syllable structure

2.2  Phonemic inventory
   2.2.1  Consonants
      2.2.1.1  Stops
      2.2.1.2  Nasals
      2.2.1.3  Fricative
      2.2.1.4  Laterals and trill
      2.2.1.5  Glides
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2.2.1.6 Minimal pairs for consonant phonemes</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.2.2 Vowels</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.2.3 Phonotactics</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.3 The syllable</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.3.1 More on syllable structure</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.3.2 Medial consonant clusters</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.3.3 Schwa apicalisation and reduction</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.4 Word stress</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.4.1 General rule for stress assignment</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.4.2 Stress shift in interrogative sentences</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5 Morphophonemic rules</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5.1 Assimilation</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5.1.1 Vowel harmony</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5.1.2 Rounding assimilation</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5.2 Dissimilation</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5.3 Insertion</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5.3.1 Glide insertion</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5.3.2 Schwa insertion</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.5.4 Resyllabification</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.6 Allomorphs of “em” and “in”</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.6.1 Allomorphs of “em”</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.6.2 Allomorphs of “in”</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Chapter 3 Morphology**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3.1 Introduction</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.2 Morphological units</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.2.1 Affixes</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.2.2 Roots</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.2.3 Stems</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.2.4 Clitics</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.2.5 Words</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.3 Clitic classes</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.3.1 Genitive bound pronouns</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.3.2 Nominative bound pronouns</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.3.3 Aspect-marking clitics</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.3.4 Vocative marker “=a”</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.4 Reduplication</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.4.1 Fossilised reduplication</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.4.1.1 Monosyllabic root reduplication</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.4.1.2 Disyllabic root reduplication: C&lt;sub&gt;1&lt;/sub&gt;V&lt;sub&gt;1&lt;/sub&gt;C&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;V&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;-C&lt;sub&gt;1&lt;/sub&gt;V&lt;sub&gt;1&lt;/sub&gt;C&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;V&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(C&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;)</td>
<td>38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.4.2 Ca- reduplication</td>
<td>38</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3.4.2.1 Formal subtypes of Ca- reduplication 38
3.4.2.2 Semantic subtypes of Ca- reduplication 39
3.4.2.3 A comparison of the a- morphemes 41
3.4.3 Disyllabic (CV CV-) reduplication 42
  3.4.3.1 Form 42
  3.4.3.2 Meaning 43
3.4.4 First syllable reduplication 44
3.4.5 Rightward reduplication 45
3.4.6 Serial reduplication 45
  3.4.6.1 Ca-Ca- 45
  3.4.6.2 Ca-CVCV- 46

Chapter 4 Lexical categories 47
  4.1 Introduction 47
  4.2 An overview of basic clause structure 47
  4.3 Distinctions between nouns and verbs 48
    4.3.1 Word level 49
      4.3.1.1 Two syntactic tests 49
      4.3.1.2 Nouns 49
        4.3.1.2.1 Syntactic functions and features of nouns 49
        4.3.1.2.2 Noun phrase markers 50
        4.3.1.2.3 A subcategorisation of open-class nouns 50
      4.3.1.3 Verbs 56
    4.3.2 Root level 57
  4.4 The absence of adjectives 60
  4.5 Closed word classes 61
    4.5.1 Personal pronouns 61
      4.5.1.1 Bound pronouns 61
      4.5.1.2 Free pronouns 62
    4.5.2 Temporal nouns 65
    4.5.3 Deictic expressions 65
      4.5.3.1 An overview 65
      4.5.3.2 Demonstratives 66
        4.5.3.2.1 Case and number 67
        4.5.3.2.2 Proximal, medial and distal 68
      4.5.3.3 Spatial deictics 69
      4.5.3.4 Temporal deictics 70
      4.5.3.5 Verbal deictics 70
      4.5.3.6 Deictic expressions in discourse 71
    4.5.4 Numerals 72
      4.5.4.1 An overview 72
Chapter 5  Noun phrase structure

5.1 An outline of noun phrase structure
5.1.1 Common NPs
5.1.2 The functional extension of na as a linker
5.1.3 Personal NPs
5.1.4 Locative NPs
5.2 Case, definiteness, and plurality
5.3 Possessive constructions
5.3.1 The coding of the possessor
5.3.1.1 The possessor is encoded as a pronoun
5.3.1.2 The possessor is encoded as a personal or common noun
5.3.2 Inalienable possession
5.3.3 Distributive possession
5.4 NPs with a numeral or a quantifier
5.5 NPs with a demonstrative
5.6 Relative clauses
5.6.1 An overview
5.6.2 Types of relative clauses
5.6.3 Formation strategy
5.6.4 Non-restrictive relative clauses
5.7 Coordinate NPs

Chapter 6  Subject choice, mood and aspect

6.1 Introduction
6.2 Subject choice
6.3 Mood
6.3.1 Indicative category
6.3.2 Non-indicative mood
6.3.2.1 Hortative mood and the projective marker -a
6.3.2.2 The pronominal clitic ti=
6.3.2.3 paka-
6.4 Aspect
6.4.1 Morphological aspect  
6.4.1.1 Unmarked forms  
6.4.1.2 Verb forms typically used in progressive aspect  
6.4.1.3 Verb forms typically used in durative aspect  
6.4.2 Aspectual notions expressed by clitics  
6.4.2.1 =la  
6.4.2.2 =driya  
6.4.2.3 =dar  
6.5 Morphological classes of intransitive verbs  
6.5.1 Intransitive verbs with <em> and its allomorphs in the realis  
6.5.2 Intransitive verbs with no affix other than Ca- reduplication  
6.5.3 Intransitive verbs with realis ma-  
6.5.4 Intransitive verbs with no realis affix and irrealis/imperative ka-  
6.5.5 Intransitive verbs with realis ma- and irrealis/imperative ka-  
6.5.6 Denominal intransitive verbs taking realis mi- and irrealis/imperative pi-  
6.5.7 Intransitive verbs derived with ki-  
6.5.8 Summary of morphological classes of intransitive verbs  
6.6 A note on ka-  

Chapter 7 Transcategorial operations  
7.1 Introduction  
7.2 Verbalisation  
7.3 Nominalisation  
7.3.1 The status of <in>  
7.3.2 Types of lexical nominalisation  
7.3.2.1 Action/state nouns  
7.3.2.2 Person-denoting nouns  
7.3.2.3 Patient nouns  
7.3.2.4 Instrumental nouns  
7.3.2.5 Locative nouns  
7.3.2.6 Temporal nouns  
7.3.3 A summary of lexical nominalisation  
7.3.4 Some other nominalising affixes  
7.3.4.1 ika-  
7.3.4.2 ya-  
7.3.4.3 si--an  
7.3.5 Gerundive nominals  

Chapter 8 Transitivity  
8.1 Introduction  
8.2 Case marking
8.3 Verbal clause patterns and arguments 147
8.4 Transitivity and the syntactic status of the arguments 149
8.4.1 The syntactic status of the five argument encodings 149
8.4.1.1 Coreferencing clitics on the verb 150
8.4.1.2 Control in serial verb constructions 150
8.4.1.3 Topicalisation 151
8.4.1.4 Floating quantifier 152
8.4.1.5 Raising from a complement clause 153
8.4.1.6 PL^{OBL} vs adjunct 155
8.4.2 Transitivity 155
8.4.2.1 Semantic transitivity 156
8.4.2.2 Morphosyntactic transitivity 156
8.4.3 Instances where there is a definite oblique PL 157
8.4.4 The mapping between transitivity and voice in Puyuma 161
8.5 Ergativity 162

Chapter 9 Re-encoding of arguments 164
9.1 Introduction 164
9.2 Causative constructions 164
9.2.1 Morphological causatives 165
9.2.1.1 Derivation of causative verbs 165
9.2.1.2 Subject choice and case marking of arguments 169
9.2.2 Analytic causatives 172
9.3 Reciprocal constructions 172
9.3.1 The range of situations marked by reciprocal markers 172
9.3.2 Reciprocal markers 173
9.3.3 Dynamic vs stative 173
9.3.4 Other situations marked by a PR marker 176
9.3.5 Argument structure of reciprocals 177
9.3.6 Noun-based derivations 178
9.4 Reflexive constructions 178
9.5 Anticausatives 179
9.5.1 mu- as an anticausative marker 180
9.5.2 m-u- as a bimorphemic intransitive motion marker 181
9.6 ki- passive 182
9.6.1 ki- verbs derived from nominal stems 182
9.6.2 ki- verbs derived from verbal stems 183

Chapter 10 Clause types 187
10.1 Introduction 187
10.2 Verbal clauses 187
10.2.1 The main types of verbal clauses 187
10.2.2 Transitive clauses 188
10.2.3 Intransitive clauses 188
   10.2.3.1 Clauses with a monovalent predicate 189
   10.2.3.2 Extended intransitive clauses 189
   10.2.3.3 Anticausative clauses 190
   10.2.3.4 Passive clauses 190
10.2.4 Ambient clauses 190
10.3 Nominal clauses 190
   10.3.1 An overview 190
   10.3.2 Classifying clauses 191
   10.3.3 Identifying clauses 192
10.4 Locative/existential/possessive clauses 193
   10.4.1 An overview 193
   10.4.2 Existential clauses 195
      10.4.2.1 Marking of case and definiteness 196
      10.4.2.2 Word order 197
      10.4.2.3 Pragmatic function 198
   10.4.3 Locative clauses 198
      10.4.3.1 Marking of case and definiteness 198
      10.4.3.2 Word order 199
   10.4.4 Possessive clauses 199
   10.4.5 A comparison of existential, possessive and locative clauses 201
   10.4.6 Two more possessive/existential/locative predicates 202
      10.4.6.1 kadru ‘there’ 202
      10.4.6.2 mi- ‘have’ 203

Chapter 11 Negative constructions 205
   11.1 Introduction 205
   11.2 Negative verbal clauses 206
      11.2.1 Negation and transitivity 207
      11.2.2 Negation and mood 208
      11.2.3 The lexical category of adri 209
   11.3 Negative nominal clauses 210
   11.4 Negative existential/possessive/locative 212
   11.5 The negative item maulrid 213
   11.6 Summary 214

Chapter 12 Non-declarative clause types 215
   12.1 Introduction 215
   12.2 Imperative constructions 215
12.2.1 General characteristics 215
12.2.2 Requests, commands and instructions: imperatives and politeness 217
12.2.3 A subtype of command: the prohibitive 220
12.3 Interrogative constructions 220
  12.3.1 Yes/no questions 220
    12.3.1.1 Types of yes/no speech acts 220
    12.3.1.2 Neutral yes/no questions 221
    12.3.1.3 Biased yes/no questions 221
    12.3.1.4 Answers to yes/no questions 222
  12.3.2 Alternative questions 223
  12.3.3 Information questions 224
    12.3.3.1 Nominal interrogatives 224
    12.3.3.2 Adverbial interrogative 225
    12.3.3.3 Verbal interrogatives 225
    12.3.3.4 Interrogative numeral 227
12.4 A minor sentence type: the hortative 227

Chapter 13 Serial verb constructions 229
13.1 Introduction 229
13.2 Argument sharing and verbal categories in SVCs 230
  13.2.1 Argument sharing in SVCs 230
  13.2.2 Manifestation of verbal categories 233
    13.2.2.1 Transitivity 234
    13.2.2.2 Mood 234
    13.2.2.3 Aspect 235
    13.2.2.4 Negation 235
13.3 SVCs vs multi-clausal constructions 236
  13.3.1 SVCs vs complement clauses 236
  13.3.2 SVCs vs adverbial clauses 236
  13.3.3 SVCs vs coordinate clauses 237
13.4 Functional types of SVCs 237
  13.4.1 Modal SVCs 237
  13.4.2 Phasal SVCs 238
  13.4.3 Modificational SVCs 238
  13.4.4 Directional SVCs 242
    13.4.4.1 Static direction 242
    13.4.4.2 Motion 242
  13.4.5 Purpose SVCs 242
    13.4.5.1 Directional-purposive 243
    13.4.5.2 Postural-purposive 243
    13.4.5.3 Instrumental-purposive 244
13.4.6 Simultaneous action SVCs 244
13.4.7 Causative SVCs 244
13.4.8 SVCs instead of complements 245
13.4.9 Idiomatic and lexical uses of SVCs 245

Chapter 14 Complement clauses 247
14.1 Subordination 247
14.2 Types of complementation strategy 247
   14.2.1 Complement clauses 248
   14.2.1.1 Complementiser dra 248
   14.2.1.2 The behaviour of verbs in complement clauses 249
   14.2.1.3 Equi-deletion, raising and clitic climbing 250
   14.2.2 Nominalisation as a complementation strategy 253
   14.2.3 The SVC complementation strategy 254
14.3 Types of complement-taking verb 255
   14.3.1 Perception verbs 255
   14.3.2 Utterance verbs 256
   14.3.3 Propositional attitude verbs 257
   14.3.4 Phasal verbs 257
   14.3.5 Knowledge verbs 258
   14.3.6 Desiderative verbs 258
   14.3.7 Psych verbs 259
   14.3.8 Manipulative/causative verbs 259

Chapter 15 Adverbial clauses 261
15.1 Introduction 261
15.2 General characteristics 262
   15.2.1 Subordinating morphemes 262
   15.2.2 Word order 263
15.3 Types of adverbial clause 264
   15.3.1 Clauses denoting temporal relations 264
      15.3.1.1 Temporal posteriority (‘before’ clauses) 265
      15.3.1.2 Temporal anteriority (‘after’ clauses) 266
      15.3.1.3 Temporal boundary (‘since’ and ‘until’ clauses) 266
      15.3.1.4 Temporal overlap (‘when’ and ‘while’ clauses) 267
   15.3.2 Reason and result clauses 268
   15.3.3 Conditional clauses 269
      15.3.3.1 Clauses denoting real events 269
      15.3.3.2 Clauses denoting unreal events 269
Chapter 16 Coordination

16.1 Introduction 271
16.2 General characteristics of coordination 271
  16.2.1 The intonation patterns 271
  16.2.2 Types and position of coordinators 272
    16.2.2.1 Asyndetic coordination 272
    16.2.2.2 Syndetic coordination 273
16.3 Types of coordination 275
  16.3.1 Coordination of noun phrases 275
  16.3.2 Coordination of clauses 277
    16.3.2.1 Symmetrical coordination 277
    16.3.2.2 Asymmetrical coordination 278
    16.3.2.3 Ellipsis in clausal coordination 278
  16.3.3 Adversative coordination 279

Appendix

I A list of texts 280
II A list of Puyuma affixes 282
III Texts of different genres 286
  1 The grandmother and the grandson (Narrative) 286
  2 The process of making rice cakes (Instructions) 294
  3 Part of a prayer 297

List of tables

1.1 Previous studies concerning the Puyuma language 8
2.1 Consonant phonemes 12
2.2 The interaction of the glottal stop and affixation 17
2.3 Vowel phonemes 18
2.4 Combination of onset consonant and vowel 19
2.5 Combination of vowel and coda consonant 19
2.6 Possible consonant clusters across syllable boundaries 21
3.1 Bound and free roots 29
3.2 A comparison of three a- morphemes 42
4.1 A summary of case marking 48
4.2 Noun phrase markers in Puyuma 50
4.3 A comparison among the three subclasses of nouns 51
4.4 Puyuma pronominal clitics 61
4.5 Puyuma free pronouns 63
4.6 Demonstratives 66
5.1 Inalienable possession in Nanwang Puyuma 97
6.1 Verbal morphology of subject choice, mood, and aspect 108
6.2 Morphological classes of intransitive verbs 123
7.1 Action nouns 132
7.2 State nouns 133
7.3 Person-denoting nouns 134
7.4 Formation of agentive nouns 135
7.5 Patient nouns 136
7.6 Instrumental nouns 137
7.7 Locative nouns 138
7.8 Temporal nouns 139
7.9 Types of lexical nominalisation 140
7.10 Aspect and mood in nominalisation 141
8.1 The manifestation of arguments 146
8.2 A mapping of clause types and role/case of arguments 149
8.3 Morphosyntactic properties of argument encodings 154
9.1 Re-encoding of arguments 165
9.2 (Possible) derivations of \(-lriay\) 167
9.3 (Possible) derivations of \(dawak\) 167
9.4 Verbal derivations of \(bu’utr\) 168
9.5 Verbal derivations of \(sanan\) 168
9.6 Formations of reciprocals/plurality of relations (PR) 173
9.7 Categories of \(ki\)-verbs derived from nominal stems 183
10.1 The case and definiteness of the theme 202
11.1 Verbal morphology (affirmative clauses) 208
11.2 Verbal morphology (negative clauses) 208
11.3 The asymmetries in affirmative and negative existential/possessive/locative clauses 212
11.4 Grammatical characteristics of negative items 214
12.1 Affirmative declarative vs affirmative imperative 217
12.2 Negative declarative vs negative imperative 217
13.1 The manifestation of the shared argument in SVCs 230
13.2 The manifestation of verbal categories in SVCs 234
14.1 Syntactic processes in complementation 252
14.2 Types of complement-taking verbs 255

List of figures
1.1 The dialects of Puyuma (from Ting 1978) 5
1.2 Sagart’s (2004) higher Austronesian Phylogeny 7
2.1 Puyuma syllable structure 11
2.2 Pitch of drikedran ‘sticky stuff’ 23
2.3 Intensity of drikedran ‘sticky stuff’ 23
2.4 Pitch and intensity of inaba=ku ‘I am fine’ 23
7.1 Transcategorial operations 127
10.1 Puyuma verbal clause types 188

List of maps
1 The distribution of Formosan languages 2
2 The location of Puyuma villages 3
Acknowledgements

This work is a revised version of my PhD thesis which was undertaken in the Research School of Pacific and Asian Studies, The Australian National University. This book could not have been completed without the assistance of many people. First I would like to express my heartfelt gratitude to my supervisors: Malcolm Ross, John Bowden and Andrew Pawley, for their comments, suggestions and encouragements at all stages of my research. They have helped me a lot in shaping my ideas about how to describe a little known language. Thanks are also due to other staff and fellow students for the stimulating discussions we have had, in particular Wayan Arka, Carol Priestley, Francisca Handoko and Jason Lee. Special thanks to three anonymous examiners, whose comments assisted me in the revision of this grammar.

I also benefited from the following people from Academia Sinica. Elizabeth Zeitoun has constantly discussed Formosan languages with me and read the earlier version of the whole grammar and gave me useful comments. Thank you also to Chih-chen Jane Tang, Henry Yungli and Jonathan P. Evans, who discussed various topics with me. I also owe appreciation to Josiane Cauquelin for sharing her knowledge about the Puyuma people and language.

This study would not have been possible without support from a number of institutions. My studies were supported by an ANU PhD Scholarship and an ANU Tuition Fee Scholarship, Academia Sinica PhD Candidate Fellowship, and an Overseas Scholarship from the Ministry of Education of Taiwan. My field trips were made possible by funding from The Australian National University and the National Science Council of Taiwan.

Last, but not least, I want to express my appreciation to all my Puyuma friends for accepting me as one of them and patiently answering my questions about their language, in particular Rev. Wu and Isaw Lin, who passed away in 2004 and 2006 respectively. To them I dedicate this grammar.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1P</td>
<td>first person plural</td>
<td>LV</td>
<td>locative voice</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1S</td>
<td>first person singular</td>
<td>NEG</td>
<td>negator</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2P</td>
<td>second person plural</td>
<td>NEU</td>
<td>neutral</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2S</td>
<td>second person singular</td>
<td>NMZ</td>
<td>nominaliser</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>third person</td>
<td>NOM</td>
<td>nominative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACAUS</td>
<td>anticausative</td>
<td>NPRS</td>
<td>non-personal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AV</td>
<td>actor voice</td>
<td>OBL</td>
<td>oblique</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CAUS</td>
<td>causative</td>
<td>ORD</td>
<td>ordinal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COL</td>
<td>collective</td>
<td>PASS</td>
<td>passive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COMP</td>
<td>complementiser</td>
<td>PERF</td>
<td>perfective</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COP</td>
<td>copular</td>
<td>PJ</td>
<td>projective</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CV</td>
<td>conveyance voice</td>
<td>PL</td>
<td>plural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DF</td>
<td>definite</td>
<td>POSS</td>
<td>possessive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DIST</td>
<td>distributive</td>
<td>PR</td>
<td>plurality of relations</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DUR</td>
<td>durative</td>
<td>PROG</td>
<td>progressive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ECL</td>
<td>exclusive</td>
<td>PRS</td>
<td>personal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FREQ</td>
<td>frequentative</td>
<td>PSR</td>
<td>possessor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GEN</td>
<td>genitive</td>
<td>PV</td>
<td>patient voice</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ID</td>
<td>indefinite</td>
<td>RECIP</td>
<td>reciprocal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IMP</td>
<td>imperative</td>
<td>RED</td>
<td>reduplication</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IMPF</td>
<td>imperfective</td>
<td>SG</td>
<td>singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ICL</td>
<td>inclusive</td>
<td>SUP</td>
<td>superlative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IRR</td>
<td>irrealis</td>
<td>TOP</td>
<td>topic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ITR</td>
<td>intransitive</td>
<td>TR</td>
<td>transitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LK</td>
<td>linker</td>
<td>VCT</td>
<td>vocative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LOC</td>
<td>locative</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1 Introduction

1.1 Goal

The present study investigates the Nanwang dialect of the Puyuma language, spoken by the people in Nanwang and Paoshang Suburbs of Taitung City in southern Taiwan.

The aim of this grammar is to describe the phonology and morphosyntax of Puyuma. The work is descriptive in nature, and the theoretical framework employed is Basic Linguistic Theory (BLT), following Dixon (1994, 1997) and Dryer (2006). BLT emphasises the need to describe each language in its own terms, rather than imposing on it concepts derived from other languages. Thus, in this study, I abandon traditional terms used by linguists studying Philippine-type languages, such as ‘agent focus’, ‘patient focus’, ‘locative focus’, or ‘instrumental focus’, and replace them with terms such as ‘transitive’ and ‘intransitive’ that are more familiar to most of the world’s linguists.

1.2 About the people and the language

1.2.1 The geographical setting and the speakers

The Puyuma people reside in southeastern Taiwan, in Taitung City and Peinan Township in Taitung County. There are fourteen extant Formosan (Austronesian) languages in Taiwan, but only thirteen indigenous groups are officially recognised by the Taiwanese government.1 Map 1 shows the distribution of these Formosan languages.

---

1 The linguistic situation regarding the Formosan languages is complex. The thirteen groups recognised by the government are Amis, Atayal, Bunun, Paiwan, Rukai, Puyuma, Tsou, Saisiyat, Thao, Kavalan, Sakizaya, Taroko, and Yami. The fourteen extant Formosan languages are Amis, Atayal, Bunun, Paiwan, Rukai, Puyuma, Tsou, Saisiyat, Thao, Kavalan, Seediq, Kanakanavu, Saaroa and Pazeh. Yami belongs politically to Taiwan, but is genetically closer to the Philippine languages (Batanic subgroup). Sakizaya was recognised as an independent group (from Amis) by the government in January 2007. However, most linguists still regard Sakizaya as a dialect of Amis (Joy Wu, pers. comm.). Similarly, while Seediq is still regarded as part of Atayal by the government, Taroko, which is one of Seediq’s dialects, was recognised as an independent group by the government in 2004. Saaroa and Kanakanavu are grouped with Tsou by the government, but they constitute in fact three distinct languages. Pazeh only has one speaker left at the time of writing.
Chapter 1

Map 1: The distribution of Formosan languages (from Zeitoun 2007)²

According to my informants, the word *puyuma* means ‘unity, concord’,³ and was originally the autonym of the Nanwang speech community of Taitung City whose dialect is described in this grammar. Thus for the ethnic group itself, ‘Puyuma’ refers to one of the dialects and the people who speak this dialect. Nanwang speakers have coined two new terms, *pinuyumayan* (which excludes people who speak the Nanwang dialect) and *punuyumayan* (including all Puyuma-speaking people) to refer to the ethnic group as a whole. However, the government and other Formosan-language-speaking groups now use ‘Puyuma’ for the entire Puyuma-speaking group. In order not to confuse the reader I use ‘Nanwang’ for the dialect, and the official and generally recognised term ‘Puyuma’ for the language and the ethnic group.

According to statistics published by the Council of Indigenous People of the Government of Taiwan in August 2007, the total Puyuma population is 10,761.⁴ In addition to the majority Han Chinese people, other neighbouring groups include the Amis, Rukai, Bunun, and Paiwan. Although the Puyuma are not large in population in comparison with other ethnic groups,⁵ they dominated eastern Taiwan during the period when the Chin Dynasty and then Japan ruled Taiwan in the 18th and 19th centuries.

² Languages that are not officially recognised by the government are marked with an asterisk.
³ Zeitoun and Cauquelin (2006:653–663) show that the word *puyuma* can be analysed as *pu-’uma*, meaning ‘send to the field’.
⁴ The figure includes those who have migrated to other places. The number of the people who still reside in Taitung area is much smaller; only around 6800.
⁵ The total population of Formosan ethnic peoples in Taiwan was 481,119 in August 2007. The Amis make up 170,903 of these, Paiwan 82,657, Bunun 48,537, and Rukai 11,326. They are all larger than Puyuma in terms of both population and residential area.
According to Cauquelin (1991b:17), around 1985, the Nanwang dialect was spoken by 1475 persons. Although the ethnic Puyuma population has increased according to the statistics,\(^6\) the number of Puyuma speakers has probably now fallen to less than 1000.

Traditionally the Puyuma are said to comprise eight villages, known as *pa-fan-sher* (‘eight aboriginal villages’) in Chinese. They are Puyuma (Nanwang), Katipul, Rikavung, Tamalakaw, Kasavakan, Pinaski, Alipai and Ulivelivek. Their locations are shown in Map 2.

---

\(^6\) The total population in 1985 was about 6000.
1.2.2  A note on traditional culture and social organisation

The following overview is mostly based on Cauquelin’s (1991b, 2004) work and my own observations. The Puyuma and the Amis are the only two Formosan groups that are traditionally matrilineal and matrilocal. Inheritance usually passed to the eldest daughter, and she was responsible for the family. A man went to live in the residence of his wife’s family. According to Cauquelin’s research, 90% of the population displayed matrilineality before the Japanese came. However, things have changed since the arrival of the Japanese. Nowadays, less than 10% of the population still practise matrilocality, and they are all over 60 years old. Even when men live with wives’ families, their children are given the family name of the father’s side.

Another well-known feature of the Puyuma was their tradition of military education, which is said to be the main reason that they dominated eastern Taiwan in the 18th and 19th centuries. While women were responsible for taking care of the family and the inheritance and for doing the farming, men were responsible for hunting and protecting the village. Every male had different obligations and training at each phase of his life. Boys entered the *trakuban* ‘boys’ meeting house’ at the age of twelve or thirteen and remained there until eighteen or nineteen. The *trakuban* was divided into six grades, and a boy might be held back from advancing if he was a poor learner. The *trakuban* was like a training centre. Traditionally, the Puyuma boys had to learn how to build such a house, and then built their own *trakuban*. A seniority system⁸ was practiced in the *trakuban*. Corporal punishment was very common, and boys were taught to be absolutely obedient to boys from upper age grades. After years of training in the *trakuban*, the young men had to go through another three years of ascetic life in the *palrakuan* ‘young men’s meeting house’. They only had one meal a day and wore only a short skirt all year round. During this time, they were not allowed to talk to women and had to do various kinds of hard work to serve the elders, such as cooking, cutting firewood, fetching water, and adding wood to the fire throughout the night. At the end of this time, they were considered adults and were permitted to get married.

Although there are still some *trakuban* and *palrakuan* standing in the villages, nowadays they mainly serve as tourist attractions.

1.2.3  Dialects

As mentioned earlier, the Puyuma formerly lived in eight villages, and each village spoke a different dialect. Thus, the local residents name the different dialects according to the names of the villages.

Ting (1978) compares six varieties in his reconstruction of Proto Puyuma phonology. They are Nanwang, Katipul, Rikavung, Kasavakan, Pinaski, and Ulivelivek. His subgrouping is based on shared innovation and exclusively shared lexical items. His grouping is shown in Figure 1.1.

---

⁷ The names of the Puyuma tribes are spelt as ‘Kasabakan’, ‘Ulibulibuk’, and ‘Rikabung’ in the map. But since /b/ has become /v/ in these dialects (cf. §1.2.3), I spell them as ‘Kasavakan’, ‘Ulivelivek’, and ‘Rikavung’ in this work.

⁸ The seniority system is the tradition of granting privileges and authorities to those who have been in the *trakuban* the longest. They give instructions and commands to the boys from the lower age grades, and if the younger ones are not obedient or do not accomplish the tasks, they will receive punishments from the seniors.
Proto Puyuma

Nanwang

Pinaski, Ulivelivek, Rikavung, Kasavakan, Katipul

Pinaski and Ulivelivek

Rikavung

Kasavakan and Katipul

Pinaski

Ulivelivek

Kasavakan

Katipul

All dialects except Nanwang belong to a single subgroup, because they share the innovation that voiced stops /b/, /d/, /q/ and /g/ have become fricatives (for example, /b/ → /v/ in Rikavung, Kasavakan, and Katipul; /b/ → /β/ in Pinaski and Ulivelivek; /d/ → /ð/, /q/ → / ucfirst(340) / and /g/ → /h/ in all the other dialects). Nanwang dialect is alone in not undergoing this innovation. Ting notes that the other five dialects vary only slightly in their phonetic features. Li (1991) also classifies Puyuma into two varieties: Nanwang and Katipul (which consists of all the dialects other than Nanwang). His subgrouping is also based on the shared innovation discussed by Ting (1978).

Huteson (2005), unlike Ting (1978) and Li (1991), says that the Puyuma dialects are mutually intelligible, with the exception of the Katipul variety. However, he does not provide any linguistic evidence for this statement.

In 2003, four dialects (Nanwang, Katipul, Ulivelivek, and Kasavakan) were recognised at a government-sponsored conference on writing systems for indigenous languages. In the earlier Puyuma language textbooks, three varieties (Nanwang, Katipul, and Ulivelivek) were differentiated. However, no reasons for these classifications were given.

Although there is no agreement about how many dialects there are within Puyuma, linguists all say that the Nanwang dialect is the most conservative. For example, Li (1991) states that the Nanwang dialect preserves the voiced stops, which are weakened to fricatives in the other dialects. Ting’s (1978) reconstruction of the phonological system of Proto Puyuma also supports the view that the Nanwang dialect is conservative; the reconstructed system looks almost exactly the same as that of the Nanwang dialect.
1.2.4 Language use

There is a correlation between age and language use/language proficiency. Puyuma people over the age of 65 communicate with each other in Puyuma most of the time. Code-switching between Puyuma and Japanese also happens among people of this age group. Elders communicate with younger generations most often in Mandarin, even though the elders’ Mandarin ability is limited. Puyuma people between 50 to 65 can manage both Puyuma and Mandarin without difficulty. Most of them can also speak Japanese.

For the age group between 30 to 50, language proficiency varies from individual to individual. Some can speak Puyuma fluently, but their lexicon is limited compared with that of the older generation. Some hardly use any Puyuma except for a few lexical items.

Children and adults under 30 rarely know more than a few words of Puyuma. They express little interest in the language and feel Puyuma to be useless outside of Puyuma society.

Since 1998 the government has begun to permit and promote mother tongue courses. These classes became a required component of the elementary and junior high school curricula in 2001. However, despite the favourable attitude toward these classes, few parents speak Puyuma with their children.

1.2.5 Orthography

For more than twenty years before the government’s call for a conference on writing systems in 2003, the Roman script had been used in Puyuma communities. Since the 1980s, some Catholic priests and Protestant ministers have been using Roman script in their translations of the scripture and hymn books into Puyuma, and some mother tongue classes have been offered to the communities to teach the Puyuma people how to write their language in Roman script. In the late 1990s, some elementary schools started mother tongue classes, and textbooks were also published in Roman script. During this time, although most speakers used Roman script in their transcription, there was no regulated standard orthography, and different opinions existed among users about the symbols for certain sounds.

In December 2005, a standard orthography was established by the Council of Indigenous People of the Government of Taiwan. The orthography used in this grammar is slightly different from the standard version used by the government. The differences are discussed in §2.2.1.

Although Puyuma speakers now have a standard writing system for their language, inconsistencies still occur in practice from time to time. The most obvious examples have to do with the glottal stop, schwa, and the glides. More discussion will be provided in §2.2.1.5 and §2.2.1.6.

---

9 In Papulu, Taiwanese seems to be used more often than Mandarin.

10 This conference and following workshops were held with the aim to set up an official writing system for each Formosan language.

11 For example, the retroflex lateral is written as $l$ or $L$ by some speakers and written as $\ddot{l}$ by others. The transcription of the glottal stop is inconsistent, and the high vowels are sometimes transcribed as glides.
1.2.6 The position of Puyuma within Austronesian

The current consensus among Austronesian historical linguists is that the Formosan languages fall into a number of different first-order subgroups of Austronesian. What remains under dispute is how many subgroups the Formosan languages comprise.

In an earlier classification, Puyuma was placed in a Paiwanic subgroup. For example, Blust (1977), following Dahl (1973), proposed that Austronesian be divided into four subgroups: Atayalic, Tsouic, Paiwanic, and Malayo-Polynesian. Puyuma was included in the Paiwanic subgroup. Tsuchida (1983) subgrouped the Formosan languages into three groups, based on shared similarities: Atayalic, Northwest Formosan (including Taokas-Babuza, Saisiyat, and Pazeh), and Southern Formosan (including Tsouic, Rukai, and Paiwanic). Paiwanic comprised Amis, Bunun, Puyuma, and Paiwan.

Recently, Blust (1999b) has placed Puyuma in a first-order branch of its own. He proposes ten first-order groups, based mainly on shared phonological innovations: Atayalic (Atayal, Seediq); Northwest Formosan (Saisiyat, Kulon, Pazeh); East Formosan (Basay-Trobiawan, Kavalan, Amis, Siraya); Western Plains (Taokas-Babuza, Papora-Hoanya, Thao); Tsouic (Tsou, Saaroa, Kanakanavu); and Puyuma, Paiwan, Rukai, Bunun, and Malayo-Polynesian. In Ho and Yang’s (2000) classification, which is also based on shared phonological innovations, there are six subgroups, and Puyuma and Paiwan are the only single-member groups.

Sagart (2004), using lexical innovations in numerals, proposes that Luilang, Pazeh and Saisiyat are each a primary subgroup of Austronesian (they have not undergone the shared innovation of *pitu ‘7’), the other Formosan languages falling into a fourth primary group which he calls ‘Pituish’ (languages that have *pitu). Pituish, in turn, consists of a number of languages listed in Figure 1.2 and a ‘Walu-Siwaish’ subgroup (languages that in addition have *walu ‘8’, and *siwa ‘9’). Within his subgrouping, Puyuma falls into the Walu-Siwaish subgroup.

![Figure 1.2: Sagart’s (2004:421) higher Austronesian phylogeny](image-url)
1.3 Previous studies

In the linguistic literature, Puyuma has received relatively little attention compared to other Formosan languages. According to Huang (2000a), from 1936 to 1999 there were 16 doctoral and 45 master’s theses devoted to the study of 15 Formosan languages. None of these 16 doctoral theses include Puyuma as their research subject. Table 1.1 is a summary of previous studies of different dialects of Puyuma. The length of this list is misleading, as the total content of these studies still falls far short of a reference grammar.

Table 1.1: Previous studies concerning the Puyuma language

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Author</th>
<th>Dialect studied</th>
<th>Topic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ogawa and Asai (1935)</td>
<td>Nanwang, Katipul</td>
<td>Texts and notes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suenari (1969)</td>
<td>Rikavung</td>
<td>Phonetics</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sprenger (1971)</td>
<td>Katipul</td>
<td>Numerals</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sprenger (1972)</td>
<td>Katipul</td>
<td>Syntax</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ting (1978)</td>
<td>Puyuma (Nanwang), Pinaski, Ulivelivek, Kasavakan, Rikavung, Katipul</td>
<td>Reconstruction of Proto Puyuma phonetic system</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tsuchida (1980)</td>
<td>Tamalakaw</td>
<td>Lexicon, syntax</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cauquelin (1991a)</td>
<td>Puyuma (Nanwang)</td>
<td>Dictionary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cauquelin (1991b)</td>
<td>Puyuma (Nanwang)</td>
<td>Grammatical notes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tsuchida (1995)</td>
<td>Tamalakaw</td>
<td>Syntax</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tan (1997)</td>
<td>Puyuma (Nanwang)</td>
<td>Syntax</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Teng (1997)</td>
<td>Puyuma (Nanwang)</td>
<td>Syntax</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huang (2000b)</td>
<td>Puyuma (Nanwang)</td>
<td>Short grammar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Teng (2005)</td>
<td>Puyuma (Nanwang)</td>
<td>Syntax</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ross and Teng (2005a)</td>
<td>Puyuma (Nanwang)</td>
<td>Syntax</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ross and Teng (2005b)</td>
<td>Puyuma (Nanwang)</td>
<td>Syntax</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The earliest study of Puyuma is Ogawa and Asai’s (1935:299–327) work. They collected some legends in Nanwang and Katipul villages and translated them into Japanese. They also listed certain phonological, morphological, and grammatical features, such as case markers, pronouns, and different types of verbs. Suenari’s (1969) paper gives an account of the phonological structure of the Rikavung dialect, and he also gives a list of 500 basic lexical items. Sprenger (1971) and (1972) are short papers describing the number systems and construction markers, respectively, of the Katipul dialect. Ting (1978) is a historical paper (see above) which reconstructs the phonological system of Proto Puyuma based on six

---

12 The fifteen languages include Amis, Atayal, Saisiyat, Pazeh, Seediq, Bunun, Rukai, Tsou, Paiwan, Puyuma, Yami, Kavalan, Kanakanavu, Saaroa and Favorlang.
dialects of Puyuma. Tsuchida’s (1980) work is a sketch in Japanese of the Tamalakaw dialect, together with two texts. He provides a description of case markers, pronouns, and verbal derivations. Later on, Tsuchida published another article on the alienable vs. inalienable distinction in the Tamalakaw dialect (1995). Lin (1984) is a paper in Chinese on the phonetics and phonology of the Nanwang dialect. Cauquelin (1991a) is a Puyuma–French dictionary, with about three thousand entries, containing illustrations of cultural terms. However, it is in French, and thus not easily accessible to people in Taiwan. Cauquelin (1991b:17–76) is a short grammar sketch of the Nanwang dialect. Tan (1997) is a master’s thesis on simple sentences in Puyuma. There are various points on which she and I disagree (see §4.5.3.2.2, §5.3.2, §10.4.2, and §12.3.1.3). Teng (1997) is a master’s thesis on complex sentences. Both theses are based on elicited data, so many interesting phenomena are missing. Huang (2000b) published a short reference grammar of the Nanwang dialect in Chinese, intended for native speaker use. It is not aimed at a linguist audience. Cauquelin (2004) is an ethnographic study of the Puyuma people and it contains a very short introduction (only nine pages) to the grammar of the Nanwang dialect. Teng (2005) is a short paper on grammatical relations in Puyuma. Ross and Teng (2005a and 2005b) adopt the typologist William Croft’s framework (2001, Radical Construction Grammar) to describe some aspects of the morphosyntax of Puyuma. Since the late 1990s, several articles on comparative/typological studies of Formosan languages have been published by Huang and Zeitoun and their colleagues, and they have included Puyuma in their studies.13

1.4 About this study

1.4.1 Field methods

My field research took place in two stages. The first stage was in 1996–1997 when I was doing my MA thesis. During this period, I worked with several informants in Taipei, and I also took several short trips to Nanwang. The data I collected during this time were for the most part elicited, which gave me a basic understanding of Puyuma structures.

The second stage was from 2001 until now. During this period, I took two three-month field trips and several shorter trips to Nanwang. I stayed with a Puyuma family, and attended a Mandarin-Puyuma bilingual church. The family are well-known for their efforts to preserve Puyuma culture. They run a traditional dancing group, and almost every day they have people of different ages coming to practice traditional dancing. They also offer classrooms for mother tongue classes. Staying with them, I observed how Puyuma is used in the family and in the community. I collected many texts with the help of my informants. Some texts were recorded during community meetings or traditional rituals. My recordings were intended to include as many different genres as possible, but because Puyuma is not very actively spoken in the communities and in the families, it is inevitable that most texts are narratives. I also recorded several sermons, which were preached by the pastors in Mandarin and immediately translated by a translator into Puyuma. However, not much sermon material is used in the study, because there is a lot of Japanese mixed into the translation.

13 For example, Huang et al. (1997a; 1997b; 1999), and Zeitoun et al. (1999).
After I collected text data from different informants, with the help of my major informant Isaw I keyed my data into the computer and transcribed about 6–7 hours of the collected texts. In addition to the natural speech, around 400 verbal stems appearing in the texts were chosen and comprise the basis of the elicited data. The cooccurrence of a given verbal stem with various verbal affixes (i.e. voice, mood, causative, passive, anticausative and reciprocal) was elicited. A list of transcribed texts (26 in total) used in this grammar is given in Appendix I and three selected texts are given in Appendix III.

1.4.2 Methodology and the data used

Discussing the data used in a description, Payne (1997:366–371) points out that both text and elicited data are essential to good linguistic analysis.

In the present study, the analysis is based mostly on the texts I collected and transcribed. I have covered most of the topics listed by Payne (1997:366–371), with the exception of intonation, the lexical inventory and lexical semantics. Several topics, such as voice (subject choice), transitivity, nominalisation, re-encoding of arguments, existential/possessive/locative clauses, and clause combining are dealt with in more detail. Readers may refer to the table of contents for an overview of the organisation of the study.

1.4.3 Informants

The major informants are listed below (in alphabetical order) with their year of birth and sex indicated.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Sex</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Chen, De-fu</td>
<td>1920</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chen, Guang-rueng</td>
<td>1938</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Takamulri)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cheng, Yu-chiao</td>
<td>1954</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Li, Yuan-de</td>
<td>1943</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lin, Hao-xun</td>
<td>1949</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Isaw)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lin, Qing-mei</td>
<td>1939</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Akawayan)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lin, Zhi-cheng</td>
<td>1932</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Tuyusi)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lin, Zhi-mei</td>
<td>1958</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tseng, Xiang-mei</td>
<td>1958</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tseng, Xiou-hua</td>
<td>1938</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wu, Xian-ming</td>
<td>1945</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zhou, Xi-shu</td>
<td>1918</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
2 Phonetics and phonology

2.1 An overview of syllable structure

This chapter begins with a brief overview of Puyuma syllable structure, as this is necessary for the description of the phonemes in §2.2.

A representation of syllable structure is given in Figure 2.1. In the figure, [σ] represents a syllable, which consists of an onset [O] and a rhyme [R]; a rhyme in turn consists of a nucleus [Nuc] and a coda [Coda].

![Figure 2.1: Puyuma syllable structure](image)

The minimal syllable in Puyuma thus consists of a vowel, and the possible syllable shapes are V, CV, VC and CVC. Any of the four vowels (§2.2.2) can occur in the nucleus position, and any of the consonants can occur in either the onset or the coda position. In this analysis, each vowel forms a syllable nucleus, and thus vowels in a series always belong to different syllables.

2.2 Phonemic inventory

2.2.1 Consonants

There are 18 consonants in Nanwang Puyuma, and they can all appear as the onset or coda of any syllable. Consonants are listed in Table 2.1. This table also presents the
orthography adopted in this grammar. The retroflexes /ʈ/, /ɖ/, and /ɭ/ are written as tr, dr, and lr, /ŋ/ is written as ng, and /ʔ/ is written as ’ (an apostrophe).¹

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 2.1: Consonant phonemes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bilabial</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| voiceless stops | p | t | ʈ (tr) | | k | ? (’)
| voiced stops | b | d | ɖ (dr) | | g | |
| nasals | m | n | | | η (ng) | |
| voiceless fricative | | | ɭ (lr) | | | |
| lateral | | | | j (y) | |
| trill | | | | | |
| glides | w | | | | |

2.2.1.1 Stops

There are nine stop phonemes in the Nanwang dialect. The voiced stops /b/, /d/, /g/, and /ɖ/ are not aspirated. The voiceless stops, other than the glottal stop, are unaspirated before vowels but aspirated in word final position. According to Li (1991:26) and Ting (1978:325–326), only the Nanwang dialect preserves the voiced stops; they have become fricatives in the other dialects. The voiceless retroflex stop /ʈ/ is unique among the Formosan languages; except for the neighbouring Tanan Rukai, which borrowed it from Puyuma,² it only occurs in Puyuma. Examples of stops occurring as onset and as coda are given below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>onset</th>
<th>coda</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>b balri ‘wind’, lrabeni ‘salty’</td>
<td>areb ‘to leak’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d deru ‘to cook’, idang ‘blade’</td>
<td>ngalrad ‘name’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g garem ‘now’, sugay ‘to push aside’</td>
<td>mutrerag ‘to sprinkle’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dr drenan ‘mountain’, ɭidrang ‘old’</td>
<td>tulrudr ‘to hand over’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p pulang ‘to help’, trepa ‘to focus’</td>
<td>selap ‘to sweep’, ngapngap ‘lick’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t tukudr ‘to support’, atel ‘to drop’</td>
<td>apit ‘to arrange’, rutrutan ‘nipple’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k kuatis ‘bad’, trekler ‘to drink’</td>
<td>alrak ‘to take’, tik tik ‘hammer’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tr trau ‘human being’, matrangis ‘to cry’</td>
<td>asatr ‘high’, gutrugutr ‘scratch’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>’ ‘ak’ak ‘crow’, sa’adr ‘branch’</td>
<td>tra’tra’ ‘lock’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

¹ The orthography adopted here is the same as the version recently adopted by the government with one exception. In the official version lr stands for /ɭ/, and /ŋ/ is written as l. Logically speaking we would expect lr to stand for the retroflex lateral /ɭ/ instead of /ŋ/. The reason for not adopting the official version in this book is to avoid potential confusion concerning the fact that lr stands for a sound that has nothing to do with the curling of the tongue in the official version.

² The information is from Elizabeth Zeitoun (pers. comm.).
2.2.1.2 Nasals

There are three nasals. Examples showing their distribution are given below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>onsets</th>
<th>coda</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>manay ‘what, who’, rami ‘root’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>ninik ‘knife’, enay ‘water’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ng</td>
<td>ngisngis ‘beard’, lrangitr ‘sky’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.2.1.3 Fricative

The only fricative in the Nanwang dialect is a voiceless alveolar fricative, /s/. This is palatalised as [ʃ] before the high vowels /i/ and /u/ and realised as [s] elsewhere. For example:

/siri/ ‘goat’ → [ʃiri]
/susu/ ‘breast’ → [ʃuʃu]
/sagar/ ‘like’ → [sagar]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>onsets</th>
<th>coda</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>supeng ‘to kiss’, asal ‘again’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.2.1.4 Laterals and trill

There are three liquids in Puyum a; two laterals (/l/ and /ɭ/) and a trill (/r/). Li (1991) reports that there is no clear [l] in Puyuma dialects; instead it is a fricative lateral [ɮ]. He also mentions that the fricative property of [ɮ] is weakened in the Nanwang dialect. According to my own fieldnotes, as well as Lin (1984) and Ting (1978), in the Nanwang dialect there is no frication in the lateral /ɭ/. In other dialects, especially in the Kasavakan and Katipul dialects, the fricative property is very strong.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>onsets</th>
<th>coda</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td>laman ‘sympathy’, wali ‘teeth’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lr</td>
<td>lrutung ‘monkey’, bulray ‘beautiful’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>r</td>
<td>redek ‘to arrive’, deru ‘to cook’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.2.1.5 Glides

In terms of their articulation, glides are more like vowels than consonants, since there is no contact of any kind between the articulators. They behave like consonants in that they do not form a syllabic peak and never carry stress. Like the consonants discussed above, in Puyum a the glides can appear as the onset or coda of any syllable. However, in the corpus I have not found any example showing a glide before or after a schwa (§2.2.3). In other words, glides do not occur in a syllable where the syllable nucleus is a schwa.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>onsets</th>
<th>coda</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>w</td>
<td>wari ‘day, kawang ‘to walk’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>y</td>
<td>yuyu ‘you’, ulaya ‘exist’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
A number of words which I originally thought contained /j/ or /w/ were later found to contain an underlying /i/ or /u/. From the surface structure, it seems that the high vowels are replaced by a homorganic glide, but in fact there are two steps in the process: first, a glide is inserted, and then the high vowel is deleted. The second step is optional. For example:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Glide insertion (Obligatory)</th>
<th>High vowel deletion (Optional)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mi-alup → [mijalup]</td>
<td>[mijalup]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki-umal → [kijumal]m</td>
<td>[kijumal]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mu-a-timulr → [muwatimul]</td>
<td>[mwatimul]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Glide insertion is also discussed in §2.5.3.1.

### 2.2.1.6 Minimal pairs for consonant phonemes

<p>| /b/ vs /p/ | bu’ut    | ‘to stop’ |
|            | pu’ut    | ‘wart’    |
| /lr/       | abak     | ‘to contain’ |
|            | alrak    | ‘to take’ |
| /ng/       | balrad   | ‘to spread’ |
|            | ngalrad  | ‘name’    |
| /w/        | bali     | ‘shadow’ |
|            | wali     | ‘teeth’ |
| /p/ vs /g/ | supay    | ‘grindstone’ |
|            | sugay    | ‘to push aside’ |
| /dr/       | supeng   | ‘to kiss’ |
|            | sudrung  | ‘handle of a tool’ |
| /tr/       | asap     | ‘a kind of grass’ |
|            | asatr    | ‘to be high’ |
| /n/        | sukup    | ‘to disassemble and pile up’ |
|            | sukun    | ‘to encircle and suppress’ |
| /ng/       | piselr   | ‘to squeeze’ |
|            | ngiselr  | ‘tartar’ |
| /r/        | apetra   | ‘to put things in order’ |
|            | aretra   | ‘to contract’ |
| /t/ vs /d/ | tikes    | ‘to shoot’ |
|            | dikes    | ‘to hold’ |
| /l/        | bati     | ‘to tell’ |
|            | bali     | ‘shadow’ |
| /s/        | puatel   | ‘to drop off’ |
|            | puasal   | ‘grapefruit’ |
| /ng/       | pulat    | ‘to use up’ |
|            | pulang   | ‘to help’ |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Phoneme</th>
<th>Example 1</th>
<th>Example 2</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>/t/</td>
<td>bu’ut</td>
<td>bu’ur</td>
<td>‘to stop’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘thyroid gland’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/d/ vs /dr/</td>
<td>idang</td>
<td>‘knife blade’</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘to be old’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/l/</td>
<td>wadi</td>
<td>wali</td>
<td>‘younger sibling’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘teeth’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/r/</td>
<td>wari</td>
<td></td>
<td>‘day’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/y/</td>
<td>ngalrad</td>
<td>ngalray</td>
<td>‘name’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘saliva’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/tr/ vs /dr/</td>
<td>trekelr</td>
<td>drekelr</td>
<td>‘to drink’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘to choke’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/l/</td>
<td>butri</td>
<td>bulri</td>
<td>‘to close one eye’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘wound’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/l/</td>
<td>asatr</td>
<td>asal</td>
<td>‘to be high’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘again’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/s/</td>
<td>lrangitr</td>
<td>lrangis</td>
<td>‘sky’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘decorative chain’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/y/</td>
<td>kutru</td>
<td>kuyu</td>
<td>‘headlouse’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘fox’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/dr/ vs /s/</td>
<td>tenegro</td>
<td>tenges</td>
<td>‘to invade, to kill’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘to bind’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/k/</td>
<td>alradr</td>
<td>alrak</td>
<td>‘hedge’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘to take’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/r/</td>
<td>takadr</td>
<td>takar</td>
<td>‘container made of bamboo’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘stand’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/w/</td>
<td>iradr</td>
<td>iraw</td>
<td>‘sound made by clearing one’s throat’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘to glorify’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/k/ vs /l/</td>
<td>atek</td>
<td>atel</td>
<td>‘to hack’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘to drop’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/r/</td>
<td>basak</td>
<td>basalr</td>
<td>‘to carry on the shoulder’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘farm’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/’/</td>
<td>tukudr</td>
<td>tu’udr</td>
<td>‘to withstand’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘bottom of a tree trunk’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/g/</td>
<td>kiskis</td>
<td>gisgis</td>
<td>‘to scrape’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘to shave’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/g/ vs /p/</td>
<td>salretra</td>
<td>salretrap</td>
<td>‘to pour out’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘to bump’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/’/ vs /tr/</td>
<td>’erab</td>
<td>trerab</td>
<td>‘to burp’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘to fall’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Phonetics and phonology**
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Phoneme</th>
<th>Example 1</th>
<th>Example 2</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>/m/</td>
<td>mesmes</td>
<td>lesles</td>
<td>‘to knead’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/n/</td>
<td>drekan</td>
<td>drekal</td>
<td>‘to be wide’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/s/</td>
<td>lralriyun</td>
<td>lralriyas</td>
<td>‘to revolve the handle’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/y/</td>
<td>bulran</td>
<td>bulray</td>
<td>‘to be beautiful’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/ng/</td>
<td>ngitra’</td>
<td>lrita’</td>
<td>‘groin’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/s/</td>
<td>iring</td>
<td>iris</td>
<td>‘to slant’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/y/</td>
<td>ilrang</td>
<td>ilray</td>
<td>‘to grind with a grindstone’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/l/</td>
<td>trukul</td>
<td>trukulr</td>
<td>‘to carry on the back’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/r/</td>
<td>dremiyal</td>
<td>dremiyar</td>
<td>‘to cough’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/s/</td>
<td>takil</td>
<td>takis</td>
<td>‘to slant’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/y/</td>
<td>dawal</td>
<td>daway</td>
<td>‘to inform’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/lr/</td>
<td>tu lr udr</td>
<td>tu k udr</td>
<td>‘to support’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/l/</td>
<td>bulru’</td>
<td>bulu’</td>
<td>‘a kind of bamboo’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/s/</td>
<td>pabeka lr</td>
<td>pabekas</td>
<td>‘to make new’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/r/</td>
<td>dudur</td>
<td>dudu’</td>
<td>‘bone of lower leg’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/y/</td>
<td>ba’ar</td>
<td>ba’ay</td>
<td>‘roundworm’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/s/</td>
<td>beras</td>
<td>beray</td>
<td>‘rice’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>/y/</td>
<td>kubay</td>
<td>kubaw</td>
<td>‘legumes’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The glottal stop does not play a role in differentiating meaning (because there is no minimal pair contrasting /ʔ/ and zero), and it is sometimes missing from the speech of some speakers in younger generations. However, for older speakers there are subminimal pairs in which sequences with and without a glottal stop are in contrast. Thus ‘erab ‘to burp’ has initial /ʔ/, but ekan ‘to eat’ does not. Intervocally bu’aw ‘beans’ has medial /ʔ/ but no consonant intervenes between /u/ and /a/ in puasel ‘grapefruit’ (but like vowels are always separated by a glottal stop, e.g. ba’ar ‘roundworm’). The word lrita ‘mud’ has a final glottal stop, but ama ‘father’ does not. I consider the glottal stop a phoneme for morphophonemic reasons.

In Puyuma, there are five intransitive/actor voice affixes, and three of them <em>, me-, and m- are allomorphs (§2.6.1). The contexts for their distribution can be stated as follows:

\[
\begin{align*}
<em> & \rightarrow m-/\_ [-\text{consonantal}] \\
<em> & \rightarrow me-/\_ [+\text{sonorant}] \\
<em> & \rightarrow <em>/ \text{elsewhere}^5
\end{align*}
\]

Thus, if a verb begins with a glottal stop but we do not consider it a phoneme, we will have an incorrect derivation. Take ‘etim ‘to stew’ as an example. We will derive its intransitive/actor voice form wrongly as *m-etim instead of the correct form <em>etim. Also, if the verb ends with a glottal stop and we ignore it, we will pronounce its transitive/undergoer voice form wrongly. For instance, retra'-aw would be pronounced wrongly as *retra-aw because of the glide insertion rule (§2.5.3.1). More examples are given in Table 2.2.

**Table 2.2: The interaction of the glottal stop and affixation**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Intransitive/actor voice affixation</th>
<th>Transitive/undergoer voice affixation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>‘erab ‘to burp’ \rightarrow 'em&gt;erab</td>
<td>retra ‘to give up’ \rightarrow retra'-aw [rəʈajaw]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(*m-erab)</td>
<td>(*retra-aw) [rəʈajaw]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘etim ‘to stew’ \rightarrow ’em&gt;etim</td>
<td>padelru ‘lower the price’ \rightarrow padelru'-aw [pəɖəɭuʔaw]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(*m-etim)</td>
<td>(*padelru-aw) [pəɖəɭujaw]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Compare:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ekan ‘to eat’ \rightarrow m-ekan</th>
<th>Tama ‘to spit’ \rightarrow tama-ay [tamaˈʔaj]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Alrak ‘to take’ \rightarrow m-alrak</td>
<td>Trepa ‘to focus’ \rightarrow trepa-aw [trepaj]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

There is also circumstantial evidence for the glottal stop phoneme as the glottal stop in Nanwang dialect systematically corresponds to /h/ or /ɾ/ in cognates in other dialects (Li 1991; Ting 1978). For instance:

3 In Nanwang dialect, most speakers are not aware of its existence. In their transcriptions, it is ignored.
4 The terminologies of transitivity and voice are used in parallel until §4.2, where the equivalence between them is explained.
5 In the corpus, I have found no m-initial and glide-initial stems that take an actor voice/intransitive marker (<em>, me- or m-) or a perfective marker (<in>, ni-, or in-).
Table 2.3: Vowel phonemes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>front</th>
<th>central</th>
<th>back</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>high</td>
<td>i</td>
<td></td>
<td>u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mid</td>
<td></td>
<td>ι (e)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>low</td>
<td></td>
<td>a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

As mentioned in §2.1, any of the four vowels can occur as a nucleus, and each vowel forms a separate syllable nucleus, so that vowels in a series always belong to different syllables. Lin (1984:119) mentions that distribution of /ι/ is restricted. It cannot form a syllable by itself without being accompanied by an onset or a coda and it does not occur in word-initial or word-final position. A glottal stop is inserted automatically before or after the schwa when the schwa occurs in word-initial or word-final position. For instance:

puenay [puənaj] ‘put water’
enay [ʔənaj] ‘water’

In my own fieldnotes, the insertion of glottal stop before schwa in the word-initial position (or after schwa in the word-final position) is optional and varies from informant to informant.

The high back rounded vowel /u/ is realised as a mid rounded vowel [o] when the following consonant is a velar nasal:

/u/ → [o] /___ [+velar, +nasal]

Thus, gung ‘ox’ is pronounced as [goŋ], and lrutaŋ ‘monkey’ as [lutoŋ].

Minimal pairs for vowel phonemes are as follows:

/a/ vs /i/  

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ama</td>
<td>‘father’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ami</td>
<td>‘year’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

/e/  

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>dalrkap</td>
<td>‘bottom surface of the foot’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dalrukep</td>
<td>‘vulture’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

/u/  

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ba’aw</td>
<td>‘alive’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bu’aw</td>
<td>‘a kind of bean’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

/i/ vs /e/  

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>dinun</td>
<td>‘vat’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>denun</td>
<td>‘summer’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

/u/  

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>pilang</td>
<td>‘to lead’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pulang</td>
<td>‘to help’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
2.2.3 Phonotactics

This section shows the surface phonotactic combinations in Nanwang Puyuma. Table 2.4 and Table 2.5 are created by looking at Lin’s (1984) material and my own fieldnotes. Combinations marked in grey (both light and dark shades)\(^6\) are combinations not found in Lin (1984). Lin (1984) reports that the gaps such as /gi/, /etr/, /id/, /ig/, /ag/, and /eg/ might just be an accident. From my field notes, these gaps can indeed be filled in. Examples showing these combinations are *tigir* ‘erect’, *etr* ‘compress, jostle’, *inulrid* ‘be placed into the coffin’, *trigtrig* ‘shake off’, *tragtrag* ‘pour out’, and *tregtreg* ‘stake’.

As shown in Tables 2.4 and 2.5, most gaps are related to the combinations of the schwa and the glides, or the combinations of the glides with their homorganic high vowels.

Combinations /wu/, /yi/, /uw/, and /iy/ are difficult to detect due to the similar quality of glides and their homorganic high vowels. Examples of /yi/ and /wu/ are clearly attested in those instances where a stem ending with a glide is suffixed with -i or -u; for example *pu-enay* ‘to water’ < *puenay-i* ‘to water it’ and *trakaw* ‘to steal’ < *trakaw-u* ‘to steal it’.

### Table 2.4: Combination of onset consonant and vowel

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>p</th>
<th>t</th>
<th>tr</th>
<th>k</th>
<th>b</th>
<th>d</th>
<th>dr</th>
<th>g</th>
<th>m</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>ng</th>
<th>s</th>
<th>l</th>
<th>lr</th>
<th>r</th>
<th>w</th>
<th>y</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Table 2.5: Combination of vowel and coda consonant

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>p</th>
<th>t</th>
<th>tr</th>
<th>k</th>
<th>b</th>
<th>d</th>
<th>dr</th>
<th>g</th>
<th>m</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>ng</th>
<th>s</th>
<th>l</th>
<th>lr</th>
<th>r</th>
<th>w</th>
<th>y</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.3 The syllable

2.3.1 More on syllable structure

Monosyllabic words are mostly grammatical words, which have V, CV, VC, and CVC forms. Monosyllabic words that represent major lexical categories are very rare, and most of

---

\(^6\) Combinations that can be filled in from my own fieldnotes are marked in light grey whereas combinations that are still missing from my own notes are marked in dark grey.
them seem to have CVC structure. The possible consonant and vowel arrangements for monosyllabic words are illustrated below.

(1) Monosyllabic words

(C) V (C)

i  ‘topic marker’ V
n a ‘nominative noun phrase marker’ CV
a w ‘coordinator’ VC
k a n ‘oblique noun phrase marker’ CVC
b u t ‘squirrel’ CVC

Polysyllabic words occur with a maximum of two consonants appearing together medially across a syllable boundary. Such clusters always syllabify so that the initial consonant occurs as the coda of one syllable, and the second consonant occurs as the onset of the next. A consonant between two vowels is always analysed as the onset of the second syllable. The possible consonant and vowel arrangements of disyllabic words are illustrated below.

(2) Disyllabic words:

(C) V (C) (C) V (C)

tr a u ‘person’ CVV
i a b ‘shoulder’ VVC
i n a ‘mother; aunt’ VCV
a p u y ‘fire’ VCVC
s u a n ‘dog’ CVVC
k a w i ‘tree’ CVCV
d r e n a n ‘mountain’ CVCVC
s a n g l i ‘snail’ CVCCV
p a k p a k ‘wing’ CVCCVC

No examples of VV and VCCV are found in the corpus. Words of more than two syllables are quite common in Puyuma. Due to the space limitation, I will only present the C and V arrangement of trisyllabic words.

(3) Trisyllabic words

(C) V (C) (C) V (C) (C) V (C)

a m u n a ‘but’ VCVCV
a p a n g a n ‘place name’ VCVCVC
w a w a ‘i ‘willing to’ CVCVCV
m u a s l ‘move’ CVVCVC
k a m a w a n ‘similar to’ CVCVCVC
p e n u k p u k ‘beat (intransitive)’ CVCCVCVC
i t k i k y ‘hammer (transitive)’ CVCCVCVC

The first syllable in a trisyllabic word is rarely a closed syllable; only reduplications of monosyllabic words have a coda in the first syllable (i.e. tikikay ‘hammer’).
In the corpus, the maximum number of syllables a word has is eight (ma.ra.mi.la.ma.la.ma.nan ‘the most merciful’). Words that are of more than four syllables are always made up of a stem plus one or more affixes or reduplicants. So the word maramilamalamanan is analysed as:

\[
\text{mara-mi-lama-laman-an} \\
\text{SUP-have-RED-mercy-NMZ} \\
\text{‘the most merciful’}
\]

### 2.3.2 Medial consonant clusters

Most medial consonant clusters arise through reduplication of monosyllables, e.g. gerger ‘bee’; pakpak ‘wing’. Although consonant clusters are allowed across a syllable boundary, the two consonants may not be the same. Furthermore, two adjacent oral stops may not be homorganic. Thus, clusters like -kk-, -drdr-, -mm-, -ss-, -rr-, -pb-, -tdr-, or -gk- are not found. The possible consonant clusters across syllable boundaries are given in Table 2.6. This table was created by looking at the Puyuma words in my own fieldnotes, and also in Cauquelin’s (1991b), Ting’s (1978), Li’s (1991), and Lin’s (1984) materials. The checks in Table 2.6 indicate that the examples with such consonant clusters are found in the corpus. No examples of consonant clusters with two identical phonemes or two homorganic oral stops are found. These unattested combinations are marked in grey.

**Table 2.6: Possible consonant clusters across syllable boundaries**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>The onset of the following syllable</th>
<th>p</th>
<th>t</th>
<th>tr</th>
<th>k</th>
<th>b</th>
<th>d</th>
<th>dr</th>
<th>g</th>
<th>m</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>ng</th>
<th>s</th>
<th>l</th>
<th>lr</th>
<th>r</th>
<th>w</th>
<th>y</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>p</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tr</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dr</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ng</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lr</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>r</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>y</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
2.3.3 Schwa apicalisation and reduction

When it appears after the sibilant /s/ in an open syllable, the schwa is apicalised.7

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>apicalisation</th>
<th>non-apicalisation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>senay</td>
<td>[snaj]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>semipsip</td>
<td>[snipsip]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>selrap</td>
<td>[spa]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>asepan</td>
<td>[aspan]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>masemek</td>
<td>[masmak]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>benabase</td>
<td>[banbasaj]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Schwa deletion optionally occurs in the penultimate syllable of items with three or more syllables.8

\[
\begin{align*}
inapetran & \rightarrow inaptran \\
penabekas & \rightarrow penabkas \\
tremepa & \rightarrow trempa \\
kameli & \rightarrow kamli \\
temebul & \rightarrow tembul \\
tremekeklr & \rightarrow tremkeklr \\
drikedran & \rightarrow drikdran \\
liketri & \rightarrow liktri \\
\end{align*}
\]

However, if the penultimate syllable is a closed syllable, schwa deletion is prohibited (because it will result in a forbidden CCC consonant cluster).

\[
\text{kasalengseng} \rightarrow *\text{kasalngseng}
\]

2.4 Word stress

2.4.1 General rule for stress assignment

Word stress in Puyuma falls on the last syllable, and is thus non-phonemic. Puyuma word stress is mainly marked by greater intensity, a higher pitch level, and longer duration. The pitch contour of drikedran ‘sticky stuff’ is shown in Figure 2.2 and the intensity is shown in Figure 2.3. Figure 2.4 illustrates the pitch and intensity of the phrase inaba=ku ‘I am fine’, and it shows that the syllable with the highest pitch level is not the last syllable of inaba; on the contrary, the last syllable (ba) has the lowest pitch level. In terms of intensity, the last syllable still carries greater intensity than the first two syllables (i and na). Thus, stress is not equated solely with pitch. In addition to pitch and intensity, duration is another correlate of stress. In Figures 2.2 through 2.4, the duration of the stressed syllable is longer than that of the other syllables.

---

7 Sometimes the schwa becomes an apical vowel after /r/. For instance, marengay [marŋaj], arebu [arbu].
8 From my notes, schwa deletion occurs most often (but not always) when the schwa is preceded by a bilabial sound (p, b or m) or a velar stop.
Figure 2.2: Pitch of *drikedran* ‘sticky stuff’

Figure 2.3: Intensity of *drikedran* ‘sticky stuff’

Figure 2.4: Pitch and intensity of *inaba=ku* ‘I am fine’
An affix counts as part of the word in stress assignment, but a clitic does not. Because stress is word-final, stress is diagnostic only for suffixes and enclitics. For example, the stress of *beray* ‘give’ falls on the last syllable; when a suffix is attached to it, the stress shifts to the last syllable of the newly formed word.\(^9\)

\[
\text{beray } [\text{bərəj}] \rightarrow t\text{u}=\text{beray}-\text{ay } [\text{tu\textbarəj\textbarj}]
\]

\[
\text{tiktik } [\text{tik\textbarik}] \rightarrow t\text{u}=\text{pa-tiktik}-\text{anay } [\text{tu\textbarpa\textbarik\textbaran\textbarj}]
\]

When an enclitic element is attached to a host, the default is that stress falls on the host, as shown in Figure 2.4.

\[
inaba [\text{inab\á}] \rightarrow \text{inaba}=\text{ku } [\text{inab\á\ku}]
\]

### 2.4.2 Stress shift in interrogative sentences

The stress of the final word in an interrogative sentence is shifted from the last syllable to the penultimate syllable. More discussion is given in §12.3.1.2.

### 2.5 Morphophonemic rules

Morphophonemic rules concern situations where a morpheme appears in different forms in different phonological environments. The following discussion concerns processes of assimilation, dissimilation and insertion.

#### 2.5.1 Assimilation

There are two types of assimilation and both are concerned with schwa.

##### 2.5.1.1 Vowel harmony

Vowel harmony is a phonological phenomenon where neighbouring vowels assimilate to each other. There are two subtypes: rightward assimilation and leftward assimilation. The first type occurs when the actor voice/intransitive marker `<em>` is infixed. The schwa /ə/ assimilates to the following vowel. This rule is optional.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Underlying derived form</th>
<th>Vowel assimilation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>dirus</em> ‘to swim’</td>
<td><code>&lt;em&gt;dirus</code> /dəmirus/</td>
<td>[dəmirus]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>kirim</em> ‘to economise’</td>
<td><code>&lt;em&gt;irim</code> /kəmirim/</td>
<td>[kəmirim]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*tua-‘to make’</td>
<td><code>&lt;em&gt;ua-</code> /təmua/</td>
<td>[təmua]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*puwar ‘to escape’</td>
<td><code>&lt;em&gt;uwar</code> /pənuwar/</td>
<td>[pənuwar]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*talam ‘to try’</td>
<td><code>&lt;em&gt;alam</code> /təmalam/</td>
<td>[təmalam]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The second type occurs when the schwa in the root is assimilated to the vowel in the prefix. This is also optional.

---

\(^9\) The word *drikedran* ‘sticky stuff’ is derived from *drikedr* ‘sticky’ by suffixing `-an`, and as shown in Figures 2.2 and 2.3, the stress of *drikedran* falls on the last syllable, another example of stress shift after suffixation.
2.5.1.2  **Rounding assimilation**

Unlike vowel harmony, this type of assimilation is triggered by a labial consonant in the neighbouring syllable and forces a schwa vowel to become a rounded vowel. It is also an optional process. The neighbouring labial sound that triggers the assimilation is underlined.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Underlying derived form</th>
<th>Assimilation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ekan ‘to eat’</td>
<td>m-ekan /makan/</td>
<td>mukan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trepa ‘to aim at’</td>
<td>tr&lt;em&gt;epa /tampa/</td>
<td>tampa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>belrias ‘to turn’</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;elrias /ban[i]as/</td>
<td>ban[u]jas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wadi ‘younger sibling’</td>
<td>mare-wadi /mar[wadi/</td>
<td>ma[wadi]10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.5.2   **Dissimilation**

There is only one instance of dissimilation found in my corpus, which is concerned with the infixation of the actor voice/intransitive `<em>`. The bilabial nasal sound /m/ becomes /n/ when the infix is affixed to a bilabial stop. For instance:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Dissimilation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ba’aw ‘alive, to save’</td>
<td>b&lt;em&gt;a’aw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pakan ‘to feed’</td>
<td>p&lt;en&gt;akan</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Unlike the assimilation described earlier, this rule is obligatory. As described in §2.6.1, there are three allomorphs of `<em>`, namely `<em>`, me- and m-. Which one occurs is determined phonologically. Among them, `<em>` occurs when the initial sound is an obstruent.

2.5.3   **Insertion**

2.5.3.1  **Glide insertion**

In many cases a homorganic glide is inserted when a high vowel is followed by an unlike vowel. For example:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Underlying derived form</th>
<th>Glide insertion</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mi-anger /miŋər/</td>
<td>[miŋər]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki-umal /kiurnal/</td>
<td>[kiurnal]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na’u-aw /na?uaw/</td>
<td>[na?uaw]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A glide [j] is also inserted when a stem which ends with /a/ acquires a suffix beginning with /a/. However, this process does not apply in prefixation.

---

10 It is not clear why [r] becomes [l] in this example.
Chapter 2

2.5.2 Underlying derived form Glide insertion

- \( tr<em>epa-a /\text{/əməpaa/} \)
- \( ka-aw /\text{kaaw/} \)
- \( muka-an /\text{ankaan/} \)

Compare:
- \( m-a-abak /\text{maabak/} \)
- \( m-a-alrak /\text{maa|ak/} \)

2.5.3 Schwa insertion

If a prefix has a coda and is prefixed to a consonant initial stem, a schwa is optionally inserted to avoid creating a consonant cluster. For example:

- Underlying derived form: \( mar-kataguin /\text{markataguin/} \)
- Schwa insertion: \( marokataguin \)

2.5.4 Resyllabification

Resyllabification happens due to schwa insertion. In schwa insertion, one syllable is added, as in (4).

(4) Schwa insertion

- \( mar-tigir \) → \( mare-tigir \)

2.6 Allomorphs of <em> and <in>

Allomorphs of <em> and <in> are presented in separate sections because they cannot be accounted for by a single morphophonemic rule.

2.6.1 Allomorphs of <em>

The actor voice/intransitive marker <em> has three allomorphs: <em>, me-, or m-. The choice of allomorph depends on the initial phoneme of the stem.

(i) For stems beginning with a vowel, m- is prefixed.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Intransitive form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ekan ‘to eat’</td>
<td>m-ekan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alrak ‘to take’</td>
<td>m-alrak</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(ii) For stems beginning with a nasal sound or a liquid (l, lr, n, ng, or r), me- is prefixed.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Intransitive form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>na’u ‘to see’</td>
<td>me-na’u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>languy ‘to swim’</td>
<td>me-languy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ngernger ‘be angry’</td>
<td>me-ngernger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lradam ‘to learn’</td>
<td>me-lradam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>retra’ ‘to give up’</td>
<td>me-retra’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(iii) For stems beginning with an obstruent, <em> is infixed. Note that dissimilation occurs when the initial consonant is a bilabial stop (§2.5.2).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Intransitive form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>tulrudr ‘to pass to’</td>
<td>t&lt;em&gt;ulrudr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sanan ‘to stray’</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;anan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>deru ‘to cook’</td>
<td>d&lt;em&gt;eru</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bias ‘hot’</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;ias</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pukpuk ‘to beat’</td>
<td>p&lt;en&gt;ukpuk</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2.6.2 Allomorphs of <in>

The perfective marker <in> has three allomorphs: <in>, in- or ni-. The choice depends on the initial phoneme of the stem.

(i) Stems beginning with a vowel are prefixed with in-.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Perfective form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>abak ‘to pack’</td>
<td>in-abak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>urak ‘to dance’</td>
<td>in-urak</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(ii) Stems beginning with a nasal sound or a liquid (l, lr, n, ng, or r) are prefixed with ni-.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Perfective form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ruma’ ‘house’</td>
<td>ni-ruma’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lasedr ‘to hide’</td>
<td>ni-lasedr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lriputr ‘to wrap’</td>
<td>ni-lriputr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rames ‘to make salty’</td>
<td>ni-rames</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(iii) Stems beginning with an obstruent are infixed with <in>.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Perfective form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>trekelr ‘to drink’</td>
<td>tr&lt;in&gt;ekelr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>balri ‘wind’</td>
<td>b&lt;in&gt;alri</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3  

Morphology

3.1  Introduction

This chapter describes the morphological units and word-formation processes of Puyuma. Morphological units are discussed in §3.2. Clitic classes and reduplication are dealt with in §3.3 and §3.4 respectively.

3.2  Morphological units

The morphological units of Puyuma are affixes, roots, stems, clitics and words. A morphological word is made up of one stem and zero or more affixes. A stem is made up of one root and zero or more affixes. Thus roots, stems and morphological words form a hierarchy.

3.2.1  Affixes

An affix is a morpheme that is morphologically and phonologically dependent on its host. Affixes attach to stems (which may themselves be simple, i.e. a root, or complex, i.e. a root-plus-affix combination) to form morphologically complex words.

Puyuma affixes are classified on formal grounds into prefixes, suffixes, infixes and circumfixes. Examples are shown below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Prefix</th>
<th>paisu ‘money’</th>
<th>mi-paisu ‘have money’</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Suffix</td>
<td>asatr ‘high’</td>
<td>asatr-an ‘height’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Infix</td>
<td>beray ‘give’</td>
<td>b&lt;in&gt;eray ‘things given’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Circumfix</td>
<td>ruma ‘house’</td>
<td>sa-ruma-enan ‘family, relatives’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A list of affixes found in the corpus is given in Appendix II.

3.2.2  Roots

A root consists of a single morpheme, ‘an unanalysable form that expresses the basic lexical content of the word’ (Payne 1997:24). In other words, when all affixes have been removed from a word, what is left is the root.

Puyuma roots can be either free or bound, as shown in Table 3.1.
Table 3.1: Bound and free roots

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bound roots</th>
<th>Free roots</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ma-trina ‘big’ (*trina)</td>
<td>kiping ‘clothes’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-keser ‘be strong’ (*keser)</td>
<td>suan ‘dog’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma-rayas ‘often’ (*rayas)</td>
<td>enay ‘water’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Free roots are roots which may occur as simple words in discourse, whereas bound roots do not exist in discourse without an affix. The majority of roots in Puyuma are free.

3.2.3 Stems

A stem can be simple or complex. It consists minimally of a root, but may also consist of a reduplicated root or a root plus one or more affixes. It is the morphological unit that an affix attaches to. Thus, in pa-ladram ‘to teach’, the stem the affix pa- attaches to is -ladram. In ki-pa-ladram ‘to acquire as knowledge’, the stem the affix ki- attaches to is pa-ladram.

3.2.4 Clitics

Like roots and affixes, clitics are simple morphological units. A number of scholars have sought to define criteria for distinguishing clitics from independent words and affixes (Aikhenvald 2002; Klavans 1985; Nevis 2000; Zwicky 1977, 1985; Kroeger 2005; Haspelmath 2002; Anderson 2005; Chang 1999). However, the characteristics of clitics vary to some extent in different languages and even within a single language, and it is difficult to provide a clear crosslinguistic definition. Probably all linguists agree that clitics are linguistic units that have a status intermediate between independent words and affixes, and definitions often say that clitics are morphosyntactically independent (constituents of phrases, not of words) but phonologically bound. The problem is that they are often phonologically less bound than affixes.

The boundedness of a Puyuma clitic is seen only in the fact that it does not normally receive stress, but forms a phonological unit with an item that does, i.e. a phonological word (§2.4.1). However, if focus falls on an enclitic, it may have its own stress. In this instance one could say that it forms a separate phonological word and is therefore not functioning as a clitic.

3.2.5 Words

A morphological word consists of a stem (which may be simple or complex, see above) plus zero or more affixes.

Phonological and morphological words do not necessarily correspond. A phonological word in Puyuma can be defined on two levels. A basic phonological word corresponds with a morphological word. It is the domain for stress assignment (§2.4.1) and of a variety of phonological rules, such as the glide insertion rule (§2.5.3.1) and the vowel harmony rule (§2.5.1.1). An extended phonological word is a basic phonological word plus one or more (unstressed) clitics. A pause never occurs between a basic phonological word and a clitic.
3.3 Clitic classes

There are two classes of clitics in terms of the position in which they occur: proclitics (the
genitive bound pronouns) and enclitics (which consist of the nominative bound pronouns,
the vocative marker =a, and the aspeot marker =la, =driya, and =dar). Examples are
given below:

(1) \( tu=\)alrak-aw na barasa’
    3.GEN=take-PV DF.NOM stone
    ‘They took the stone.’

(2) s<em>alretrag=ku dra enay
    <AV>pour.out=1S.NOM ID.OBL water
    ‘I poured out some water.’

(3) sa-sungalr=mi kanu, ama=a
    RED-worship=1P.NOM 2S.OBL father=VCT
    ‘We will worship you, Father.’

(4) an ma’idrang=la a trau ...
    when old=PERF ID.NOM person
    ‘When a person got old ...’

(5) a lalak=mi=driya
    ID.NOM child=1P.ECL.NOM=IMPF
    ‘We were still children.’

3.3.1 Genitive bound pronouns

A genitive proclitic pronoun is syntactically more dependent on its host than clitics of
other classes. It appears obligatorily and functions either as the actor agreement marker in a
transitive clause, appearing before the verb, as in (6), or as possessor of a possessed subject
NP, as in (7). In (6), the genitive bound pronoun \( tu=\) agrees with the NP kan senayan, and
while the full NP is omissible, the clitic \( tu=\) is obligatory.

(6) \( tu=\)pa-karu
    3.GEN=CAUS-work-LV SG.OBL Senayan
    ‘She (/Senayan) made them work.’

(7) salraw inaba \( tu=\)tranguru
    very good 3.PSR=head
    ‘He is very smart.’ (lit. ‘His head is very good.’)

Genitive bound pronouns show less mobility than nominative bound pronouns as they are
not attached to elements other than the predicate or the subject NP.

As Givón (1976) has pointed out, clitic pronouns often develop into agreement affixes as
languages change over time. As a result, we sometimes encounter intermediate forms with
mixed properties. This is the case with Puyuma genitive bound pronouns. Here, they are
analysed as clitics based on two properties which make them distinct from affixes.

First, a number of phonological rules, e.g. vowel harmony (§2.5.1.1) and glide insertion
(§2.5.3.1), apply to affixation but not to cliticisation. Compare the pairs of examples below:
Glide insertion

**Affixation**  
\[ m-u-a-sabak \]  
\[ AV-go-a-inside \]  
‘going inside’  
\[ tr<em>e-pa-a \]  
\[ <AV>aim.at-PJ \]  
‘aiming at’

**Cliticisation**  
\[ ku=alrak-aw \]  
\[ 1S.GEN=take-PV \]  
‘I took it.’  
\[ ama=a \]  
‘Father’

Vowel harmony

**Affixation**  
\[ mu-pesik \]  
\[ ACAUS-leave \]  
‘come off’

**Cliticisation**  
\[ ku=senay-aw \]  
\[ 1S.GEN=sing-PV \]  
‘I sang it.’

Second, the infixation of \(<em>\) and \(<in>\) only occurs at the leftmost syllable of a word. That is, \(<em>\) or \(<in>\) is the last affix added in the word-formation process, as shown in (i) and (ii) below:

(i) **stem**  
\[ trakaw \] ‘steal’  
\[ tra-tra-trakaw \] ‘will steal’  
\[ *tra-tra-trakaw \] ‘steal (again and again)’

(ii) **stem**  
\[ k-isatr-an \] ‘place above’  
\[ u-k-isatr-an \] ‘go up’  
\[ *u-k<in>-isatr-an \] ‘place one has gone up to before’

However, the infixation never applies to the genitive bound pronouns, and this shows that the genitive bound pronouns are different from affixes.

\[ tu=s<in>anga \] ‘his product’  
\[ *t<in>usanga \]
\[ tu=s<in>a-sanga \] ‘product he is making’  
\[ *tu=sa-s<in>anga \]
\[ tu=s<in>a-sa-sanga \] ‘product he often made’  
\[ *tu=sa-sa-s<in>anga \]

3.3.2 Nominative bound pronouns

A nominative bound pronoun generally attaches to the predicate (verbal or nominal) in a clause, as shown in (8) and (10). When the clause is negated, with one exception (described below), the bound pronoun is attached to the negator, as in (9) and (11).

(8)  
\[ s<em>alretrag=ku \quad dra \quad enay \]  
\[ <AV>pour.out=1S.NOM \quad ID.OBL \quad water \]  
‘I poured out water.’
In undergoer voice/transitive clauses, a nominative enclitic does not have the freedom to change its position. For instance, in (14) it cannot move to the position after the negator.

(12) 
\[\text{padrek-u}=\text{ku}\]
\[\text{carry.on.back-PV:IMP}=\text{1S.NOM}\]
‘Carry me on the back.’

(13) 
\[\text{adri}=\text{padrek-u}=\text{ku}\]
\[\text{NEG}=\text{carry.on.back-PV:IMP}=\text{1S.NOM}\]
‘Don’t carry me on the back.’

In undergoer voice/transitive clauses, a nominative enclitic does not have the freedom to change its position. For instance, in (14) it cannot move to the position after the negator.

(14) 
\[\text{*adri}=\text{ku}\]
\[\text{padrek-u}\]

3.3.3 Aspect-marking clitics

There are three aspect-marking enclitics in Puyuma: =la denotes a perfective meaning, =driya an imperfective meaning, and =dar a frequentative meaning (§6.4.2). The aspectual markers usually appear after the predicate or the negator (if there is one) in a clause.

(15) a. 
\[\text{payas}=\text{la}\]
\[\text{mar-belrias}\]
\[\text{right.away=PERF}\]
\[\text{PR-turn}\]
‘She returned right away.’

b. 
\[\text{adri}=\text{la}\]
\[\text{makeser mar-belrias m-uka i uma’}\]
\[\text{NEG=PERF}\]
\[\text{strong}\]
\[\text{PR-turn}\]
\[\text{AV-go}\]
\[\text{LOC}\]
\[\text{farm}\]
‘She was not strong enough to return to the farm.’

(16) a. 
\[\text{ma-ulrep}=\text{driya}\]
\[\text{k}<\text{em}>\text{anger dratu ka-san-an}\]
\[\text{AV-tired=IMPF}\]
\[<\text{AV}>\text{get-thought}\]
\[\text{ID.OBL/3.PSR}\]
\[\text{ka-get.lost-NMZ}\]
‘She’s still worrying that he might get lost.’

b. 
\[\text{adri}=\text{driya}\]
\[\text{t}<\text{em}>\text{alam me-ranak dra trau}\]
\[\text{NEG=IMPF}\]
\[<\text{AV}>\text{try}\]
\[\text{AV-attack}\]
\[\text{ID.OBL}\]
\[\text{person}\]
‘It has never tried to attack people.’

When there is both a nominative pronoun and an aspectual marker in a clause, the nominative pronoun is closer to the host. For example:

\[\text{See}\ §6.6\ \text{concerning the morpheme ka-}^1\]
(17)  \textit{adri}=\textit{ku=driya}\ t<em>alam\ m-u-isatr\ dra\ sasudang}\ \\
NEG=1S.NOM=IMPF <AV>try\ AV-go-up\ ID.OBL\ boat\ \\
‘I have never got on a boat.’

(18)  \textit{an\ adru}=\textit{la\ i, ka-ra-ruwa}=\textit{mu=la}\ \textit{uringet}\ \\
when then=PERF\ TOP\ ka=RED-can=2P.NOM=PERF\ brave\ \\
‘By that time, you would then be brave.’

However, in negative undergoer voice/transitive clauses, where nominative pronouns are 
ever attached to the negator, as shown in (12) to (14), the aspectual marker can encliticise to 
the negator. The two sentences given below are both acceptable, but the first one is 
preferred.

(19)  \textit{adri}=\textit{la\ tu}=\textit{pa-drua-i}=\textit{ku}\ \textit{kantu\ ruma’}\ \\
NEG=PERF\ 3.GEN=CAUS-come-LV=1S.NOM\ DF.OBL/3.PSR\ house\ \\
‘He didn’t cause me to come to his house.’

(20)  \textit{adri\ tu}=\textit{pa-drua-i}=\textit{ku}=\textit{la}\ \textit{kantu\ ruma’}\ \\
NEG\ 3.GEN=CAUS-come-LV=1S.NOM=PERF\ DF.OBL/3.PSR\ house\ \\
‘He didn’t cause me to come to his house.’

In addition to the position after the predicate or the negator, the aspectual markers may 
appear to the right of a phrase (NP or VP) or a clause. Of the various categories of clitics in 
Puyuma, only aspectual markers have the ability to move around. For instance, in (21a) the 
host of the perfective marker is the whole clause, and in (22a) and (23a), the host is the SVC. 
Note that the aspectual markers can move forward to the position after the first predicate, as 
in (21b), (22b) and (23b).\footnote{The informants are unable to tell if there is a meaning difference between the (a) and (b) lines.}

(21) a.  \textit{an\ [m-ekan=ta\ dra\ binariyaw]=la\ i, ...}\ \\
when\ [AV-eat=1P.ICL.NOM\ ID.OBL\ sticky.rice.cake]=PERF\ TOP\ \\
‘When we eat sticky rice cakes, …’

b.  \textit{an\ m-ekan=ta=la\ dra\ binariyaw\ i}\ 

(22) a.  \textit{[sa<’eru<’eru\ misasa\ ]}=\textit{la}\ \textit{taytaw}\ \\
[<RED>laugh\ one]=PERF\ 3.NEU\ \\
‘She laughed and laughed by herself.’

b.  \textit{sa<’eru<’eru=la\ misasa\ taytaw}\ 

(23) a.  \textit{[m-uka\ tr<em>akaw-a]=dar\ ma-rengay}\ \\
[AV-go\ <AV>steal-PJ]=FREQ\ AV-tell\ \\
‘He often went to tell people secretly.’

b.  \textit{m-uka=dar\ tr<em>akaw-a\ ma-rengay}\ 

In an NP that contains more than one small NP (§5.1.1), \textit{=la} may occur after whichever 
small NP, as in (24a) to (24c). If the NP contains a demonstrative and another small NP, the 
aspectual marker must not appear after the demonstrative, as shown in (25a) and (25b).

(24) a.  \textit{na\ sama}=\textit{la\ na\ sayma\ na\ dare’\ i,}\ \\
DF.NOM\ left=PERF\ DF.NOM\ little\ DF.NOM\ dirt\ TOP\ 

(25) a.  \textit{na\ [m-sayma=la\ na=]sayma\ na\ dare’\ i,}\ \\
DF.NOM\ left=PERF\ DF.NOM\ little\ DF.NOM\ dirt\ TOP\ 

b.  \textit{na\ [m-sayma=la\ na=]sayma\ na\ dare’\ i,}\ 

The informants are unable to tell if there is a meaning difference between the (a) and (b) lines.
3. GEN = sprinkle-CV face-south
‘The little dirt left, he sprinkled it to the south.’

b. na sama na sayma = la na dare’ i

c. na sama na sayma na dare’ = la i

(25) a. idru na walak = la i, ...
that.NOM DF.NOM child = PERF TOP
‘that child, ...’

b. * idru = la na walak i

Sometimes, we may encounter more than one aspectual marker in a clause. In (26a) and (26b), =la and =driya occur after the predicate as well as after the clause. In (27), =la appears twice in an SVC.

(26) a. ma-ruwa = ku = la m-ekan dra sadru = la
AV-can=1S.NOM=PERF AV-eat ID.OBL many=PERF
‘I could already eat a lot.’

b. k<em>a</em>drini=mi = driya dra ka-kualreng-an = driya
<AV>here=1P.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL ka-sick-NMZ=IMPF
‘But we still have some difficulties.’

(27) mu-kalu-kalu’ = ku = la silramu matrina = la
ACAUS-RED-?=1S.NOM=PERF speedy big=PERF
‘As a result, I grew up very fast.’

3.3.4 Vocative marker =a

The vocative marker =a appears after a personal noun (§4.3.1.2.3), which is either a personal name or a kin term. It is used when calling someone or to get someone’s attention. The noun marked by the vocative marker =a must appear either before or after the main proposition. For instance:

(28) ulaya a ma-trina niam = bangabang-an ama = a
exist ID.NOM AV-big 1P.PSR = busy-NMZ father = VCT
‘We have a big event (now) Father.’

(29) ama = a, pulang-i = mi
father = VCT help - LV:IMP=1P.NOM
‘Father, help us.’

3.4 Reduplication

Reduplication can be seen as a special kind of affixation. Normally, there is no correlation between the form of an affix and the meaning or function it denotes, but reduplication seems to be more iconic. It is often used to signal plural, distributive, durative, intensive, iterative, or progressive meaning.
In Puyuma, only roots can undergo reduplication, and almost all content words are allowed to take some form of reduplication. As well as the verbs, nouns and numerals discussed in this chapter, interrogative words and some demonstratives can undergo reduplication. Examples of interrogatives are: \textit{manay} ‘who; what’ \textit{mana-manay} ‘which one’; \textit{kana isuwa} ‘from where/when’, \textit{kana isuwasuwa} ‘from some generation’. Examples of demonstratives are: \textit{kandrunu} ‘that one (OBL)’, \textit{kandrunudrunu} ‘that kind of (OBL)’.

The distinction between lexicalised reduplication and grammatical reduplication is not always clear. While some reduplication patterns are typically lexicalised (for example, the fossilised reduplication described in §3.4.1 is an instance of lexicalised reduplication), some function to create a new lexical item as well as to serve grammatical functions. For example \textit{Ca-} reduplication (§3.4.2) can form instrumental nouns and indicate progressive aspect and irrealis mood. In the following discussion, I will mostly adopt Adelaar’s (2000) terminology, as used in his description of Siraya.

3.4.1 Fossilised reduplication

Fossilised reduplication refers to those cases where a stem consists of two identical elements (C\textsubscript{1}V\textsubscript{1}C\textsubscript{2}-C\textsubscript{1}V\textsubscript{1}C\textsubscript{2} or C\textsubscript{1}V\textsubscript{1}C\textsubscript{2}V\textsubscript{2}-C\textsubscript{1}V\textsubscript{1}C\textsubscript{2}V\textsubscript{2}(C\textsubscript{3})). The roots in this category no longer exist as independently meaningful forms, so a single element may never occur alone. There are two patterns of fossilised reduplication: monosyllabic root and disyllabic root.

3.4.1.1 Monosyllabic root reduplication

This type of reduplication is formed by reduplicating a monosyllabic CVC root. Three subtypes can be distinguished according to whether the reduplication process involves infixation.

(i) Simple monosyllabic root reduplication: C\textsubscript{1}V\textsubscript{1}C\textsubscript{2}-C\textsubscript{1}V\textsubscript{1}C\textsubscript{2}

Words belonging to this type can be nominal or verbal. The nominal examples include:

- \textit{maymay} ‘duck’
- \textit{’ak’ak} ‘crow’
- \textit{’ap’ap} ‘cobra’
- \textit{dindin} ‘snails’
- \textit{trabtrab} ‘dandruff’
- \textit{ngisngis} ‘beard’
- \textit{birbir} ‘lips’
- \textit{mudmud} ‘the front teeth’

\cite{Zeitoun2006} mention that in several Formosan languages reduplication of affixes is allowed.
\footnote{Zeitoun and Wu (2006) mention that in several Formosan languages reduplication of affixes is allowed.}

\footnote{Lexicalised reduplication derives a new lexical item while grammatical reduplication functions to mark grammatical categories (i.e. aspect and mood).}

\footnote{Adelaar (2000) distinguishes five major reduplication types: monosyllabic root reduplication, disyllabic root reduplication, rightward reduplication, first syllable reduplication, and \textit{Ca-} reduplication. Among the five, monosyllabic reduplication is also called lexicalised reduplication. In this grammar, disyllabic root reduplication is defined as a subtype of fossilised reduplication, while Adelaar’s disyllabic root reduplication corresponds to my disyllabic (CVCV-) reduplication.}
From the above examples, it is clear that simple monosyllabic root reduplication yields three semantic classes of noun stems: animate nouns, body parts, and residual nouns. In the case of animate nouns, some seem to imitate the sound of the named animal (e.g. ‘ak’ak ‘crow’); they are onomatopoetic words. With body part nouns, they denote those items that are inherently plural (e.g. ngisngis ‘beard’). However, nouns that do not belong to the former categories do not always denote entities that are inherently plural in nature (e.g. belbel ‘banana’; lawlaw ‘lamp’).

Almost all the verbs found in this category have iterative meaning. The event the verb denotes typically consists of repeated subevents. Verbal examples include:

- sipsip ‘to lick’
- betbet ‘to tie’
- pespes ‘to massage’
- pukpuk ‘to beat’
- sabsab ‘to wash hands’
- saksak ‘to seek’
- gutrgut ‘to scratch itchy skin’
- ngting ‘to bite slowly with the front teeth’
- rawraw ‘to stir’
- bikbik ‘to shake off’
- langlang ‘to bake’
- tiktik ‘to hammer at’
- taktak ‘to carve’

Adelaar (2000:35) notes that in Siraya, ‘except for Ca- reduplication, there are no instances of further (morphological) reduplication on the basis of reduplicated monosyllables’. However, I have found some examples in Puyuma showing that further CVC- reduplication based on the reduplicated stem is possible.

(30) \[tu=pes-pespes-ay kan ma’idrang kakuwan\]
3.GEN=RED-massage-LV SG.OBL old Kakuwalan
‘The elder Kakuwalan kept massaging him.’

(31) \[tu=tak-taktak-aw i m-utu-asulred=la\]
3.GEN=RED-carve-PV TOP AV-become-whipping.top=PERF
‘He kept on carving it, and it became a whipping top.’

(ii) \(<aC>\) infixation: C1<aC>VC2C1VC2

This type adds an \(<aC>\) infix to the reduplicated monosyllabic stem, where \(<aC>\) consists of the low vowel /a/ and a consonant. According to Adelaar (2000:36), in Siraya the consonant is always either /r/ or /l/. In Puyuma, I have found four variants, three of them liquids: they are /l/, /lr/, /r/, and /g/. There seems to be no rule governing their distribution. The examples are listed below:
Most examples (except the last one) found in this category denote a property or an object with a certain property.

(iii) *<a>* infixation

Two different patterns are found with *<a>* infixation: CVC*<a>*CVC or CV*<a>*CCVC. Examples in this category include nominal or verbal expressions. Nominal expressions are given below.

- **bak*<a>*bak**  ‘vegetable garden’
- **katr*<a>*katr**  ‘pants’
- **kay*<a>*kay**  ‘bridge’
- **ki*<a>*kip**  ‘eyelashes’
- **ku*<a>*kus**  ‘collarbone’

Like simple monosyllabic root reduplication, most, but not all, of the nominal examples here denote objects that are usually plural in nature.

Most examples of verbal expressions show iterative meaning. Unlike the nominal examples given above, the verbal pattern is always CVC*<a>*CVC.

- **gis*<a>*gis**  ‘to shave’
- **ging*<a>*ging**  ‘to quake’
- **bik*<a>*bik**  ‘to shake’
- **lritr*<a>*lritr**  ‘to roll on the ground’
- **bang*<a>*bang**  ‘to be busy’

There are several examples showing that the insertion can be schwa /ə/ instead of /a/. It is not clear whether schwa can be deleted in those cases. It is possible that the schwa is inserted to avoid cross-syllable consonant clusters. However, those examples that have /ə/ instead of /a/ do not show iterative meaning.

- **sal*<e>*sal**  ‘thin’
- **sak*<e>*sak**  ‘to take s.th. out in order to search’
- **sap*<e>*sap**  ‘to unfold’
3.4.1.2 Disyllabic root reduplication: $C_1V_1C_2V_2$-$C_1V_1C_2V_2(C_3)$

This type of reduplication is formed by reduplicating the last two syllables of a root. In most cases the coda of the last syllable is dropped from the reduplicant, but sometimes it is kept. This type of reduplication formally resembles the $CVCV$-reduplication discussed in §3.4.3. The difference is that the examples presented here are lexicalised and the unreduplicated roots can never stand alone. Examples in this category are rare and most of them refer to body parts, insects or plants.

- kelrekelrengan (*kelreng) 'small intestines'
- kidruidrui (*kidru) ‘armpits’
- kelrekkelrekk (*kelrek) ‘to tickle at the armpit’
- drungadrungalan (*drungalr) ‘Lima bean’
- kamangkamang (*kamang) ‘big spider’
- tipatipayan (*tipay) ‘wild amaranth’

There is a pair of examples in which the stem and the reduplicated form refer to different plants: kamungul ‘chilli’, kamangumangan ‘a kind of grass’.

Many family names and place names are also formed by $CVCV$-reduplication.

- sigasigaw ‘personal name’
- barubaru ‘family name’

While the place/personal names discussed in §3.4.3 are easily traced back to their original meanings, the meaning of the roots listed here is lost.

3.4.2 Ca-reduplication

Ca-reduplication is an important word formation process in Puyuma and in other Formosan languages. It has at least five unrelated functions. Ca-reduplication is also the only type that can cooccur with another reduplication process. In such cases, Ca-reduplication always occupies the leftmost position. For example, wari ‘day’, wa-wari-wari ‘every day’.

3.4.2.1 Formal subtypes of Ca-reduplication

In Puyuma, Ca-reduplication has two subpatterns. First, when the root is disyllabic and begins with a consonant, the initial consonant followed by -a- is prefixed to the root; when the root is trisyllabic or quadrisyllabic, the consonant of the penultimate syllable is reduplicated. Examples include: dukur ‘to pound’, da-dukur ‘will pound’; tilru’ ‘to tie’, ta-tilru’ ‘rope’; ulrane ‘fat’, u-lra-lrane ‘will be fat’; dalrekeng ‘wet’, da-lra-lrekeng ‘will be wet’. When there is no onset in the first syllable of a disyllabic root (or in the penultimate

---

6 The term Ca-reduplication was coined and the associated processes first extensively discussed by Blust (1998). Ca-reduplication is very productive in many Austronesian languages, and differs from other types of reduplication processes to be discussed in the following sections, which usually relate to only one function or related functions.

7 Although most roots follow the reduplication process described, some exceptions are also found in the corpus. For example: the expected irrealis form for kurenang ‘follow’ *ku-ra-renang does not exist; instead, the irrealis form is ku<a>renang. Also, b<en>a-belrias is used rather than the expected *b<en>elrias.
syllable of a tri- or quadrisyllabic root), a- is affixed. If the root is disyllabic, a- is prefixed to the root; if the root is trisyllabic or quadrisyllabic, <a> is inserted before the penultimate syllable. Examples: paetrenge ‘long’, pa<a>etrenge ‘will be long’; atel ‘to drop’, a-atel ‘will drop’.

Second, for fossilised stems consisting of a reduplicated monosyllabic root with ambisyllabic consonant clusters, the first syllable coda plus -a is infixed into the root. Examples: bak.bak ‘to unpack’, ba.k.a.ka.ke.bak ‘will pack’; pes.pes ‘to massage’, pe.sa.se.pes ‘massaging’. As these examples show, resyllabification occurs during this morphological process. To prevent the reduplicate <Ca> from forming a CVC syllable with the original coda (*ba.kak.bak), a schwa is inserted (ba.k.a.ka.ke.bak). Not all fossilised reduplicated monosyllable stems follow this pattern. Those stems in which the copies of the monosyllable are separated by <a> do not take Ca- reduplication; instead they are infixed with another <a> in the prepenultimate position. For example: ma-lritralritr ‘roll’, ma-<a>-lri<a>-tralritr ‘rolling’ (*ma-<a>-lri-tra-tralritr); bikabik ‘shake off’, b<en>i<i-a>kabik ‘shaking off’ (*b<en>i-ka-kabik); sikasik ‘set off’, si<i-a>kasik ‘will set off’ (*si<i>ka-<a>-kasik). There are exceptions to the generalisations, for example: pukpuk ‘beat’, p<en>u<i-a>puk ‘beating’, but *p<en>u<i-kak-kepuk; putput ‘hack’, p<en>u<i-a>tput ‘hacking’, but *penutatepuk.

### 3.4.2.2 Semantic subtypes of Ca- reduplication

(i) Forming instrumental nouns

Ca- reduplication is one of the morphological processes that derives an instrumental noun (§7.3.2.4) from a verb. Examples are:

- tukudr ‘to support’
- deru ‘to cook’
- lriyus ‘to drill’
- supay ‘to whet’
- lrangetri ‘use a stick to beat a child’
- salpit ‘use a tree branch to beat’
- ta-tukudr ‘pillar’
- da-deru-an ‘cooker’
- lra-lriyus ‘drill’
- sa-supay-an ‘whetstone’
- lra-ng<em>a>-ngetri ‘stick used to beat children’
- sa-la-lepit ‘the branch used to beat’

(ii) Indicating progressive aspect or irrealis mood

Progressive aspect (§6.4.1.2) and future/irrealis mood (§6.3.1.) are marked by Ca-reduplication. Progressive aspect is indicated by Ca- reduplication together with a voice marker; future/irrealis mood is marked by Ca- reduplication of the verb stem. Some examples are listed below, but for more detailed discussion see §6.3 and §6.4.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Progressive</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kasu ‘to bring’</td>
<td>k&lt;em&gt;a&gt;-kasu</td>
<td>ka-kasu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sanga ‘to produce’</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;a&gt;-sanga</td>
<td>sa-sanga</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na’u ‘to see’</td>
<td>me-na-na’u</td>
<td>na’u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>parekep ‘to constitute’</td>
<td>p&lt;en&gt;a-ra-rekep</td>
<td>pa-ra-rekep</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>re’ani ‘to reap’</td>
<td>ma-re’-a’-ani</td>
<td>re’-a’-ani</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
With stative verbs, the notion of inchoativeness is added when the verbs are marked by \textit{Ca}-reduplication.

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{ma-’idrang} ‘old’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{ma-’a-’idrang} ‘become older’
  \item \textit{litek} ‘cold’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{la-litek} ‘become colder’
  \item \textit{inaba} ‘good’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{i-na-na} ‘become better’
  \item \textit{aremeng} ‘dark’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{a-ra-remeng} ‘become darker’
  \item \textit{ilemes} ‘angry’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{i-la-lemes} ‘become angry’
\end{itemize}

(iii) Marking reciprocity

Although \textit{Ca}-reduplication alone cannot indicate the reciprocal relation, it is one of the elements in the formation. More discussion is provided in §9.3. A few examples follow.

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{ma-drulrun} ‘replace’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{ma-dra-drulrun} ‘exchange’
  \item \textit{ma-sa-sulud} ‘to push each other’
  \item \textit{ma-pa-pingitr} ‘to grab each other’
  \item \textit{ma-ka-kuang} ‘to shoot each other’
  \item \textit{ma-da-da’ul} ‘to inform each other’
  \item \textit{ma-da-dikes} ‘to hold together’
\end{itemize}

(iv) Marking collectivity or plurality

Grammatical number is unmarked in Puyuma, but semantic plurality or collectivity can be signalled by (i) suffixation of \textit{-an}, or (ii) \textit{Ca-} or \textit{CVCV-} (§3.4.3.1) reduplication, or (iii) both \textit{-an} and \textit{Ca-} (or \textit{CVCV-}) reduplication.\footnote{There seems to be a tendency for human nouns to be formed by \textit{Ca-} plus \textit{-an} and non-human nouns by either \textit{-an} alone or by \textit{CVCV-} reduplication (but \textit{lalakan} ‘children’ is an exception). I assume \textit{Ca-} plus \textit{-an} is a circumfix, which denotes a collective meaning.}

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{lalak} ‘child/children’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{lalak-an} ‘children’
  \item \textit{wari} ‘day(s)’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{wari-an} ‘days’
  \item \textit{basikaw} ‘bamboo(s)’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{basikaw-an} ‘bamboos’
  \item \textit{suan} ‘dog(s)’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{sua-suan} ‘dogs’
  \item \textit{trau} ‘person(s)’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{tra-trau} ‘everybody’
  \item \textit{trau} ‘person(s)’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{trau-an} ‘human being’
  \item \textit{wadi} ‘younger sibling(s)’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{wa-wadi-an} ‘brothers and sisters’
  \item \textit{’alri} ‘male friend(s)’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{’alri-an} ‘male friends’
\end{itemize}

(v) Forming ordinal numbers

Ordinal numerals (§4.5.4.3) are mainly derived by prefixing \textit{puka-} to a numeral base. \textit{Ca-} reduplication optionally appears in the derived forms and causes no meaning difference.

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{drua} ‘two’ \hspace{1cm} \textit{puka-drua} ‘the second’
  \item \textit{puka-drua} ‘the second’
\end{itemize}
Although five functions are listed, some of them are productive (marking progressive/irrealis and instrumental nouns) and some are very restrictive and their occurrence is optional (i.e. ordinal numerals). Historically these semantic subtypes of Ca- may (or may not) have been the same morpheme, but synchronically they are homophonous but separate morphemes. This raises a related question regarding the glossing. Because its occurrence is often idiosyncratic, and it often accompanies other morphemes to denote a meaning/function together, in this grammar I gloss according to the form but not the meaning/function.

3.4.2.3 A comparison of the a- morphemes

In Puyuma, there exist three distinct a- (or <a>) morphs; the first one is the allomorph of Ca- (§3.4.2.1), the second one occurs in complex stems (which consist of at least a root and an affix) and the third one occurs only in fossilised stems (§3.4.1.1). For the sake of presentation, they are called a-<sub>1</sub>, a-<sub>2</sub> and a-<sub>3</sub> for the moment. Their distributions and functions are summarised in Table 3.2.

When we examine these morphs closely, we find that a-<sub>2</sub> and Ca- are in complementary distribution and can be treated as allomorphs. We find that a-<sub>2</sub> occurs in stems consisting of u-, ki-<sup>9</sup>, or mi-, and in fossilised reduplicated-monosyllable stems with <a>, and that Ca- appears elsewhere. Unlike a-<sub>1</sub>, which is determined as an allomorph of Ca- by the phonological environment, Ca- and a-<sub>2</sub> are morphologically determined allomorphs. So there are two layers: first, Ca- (marking progressive and irrealis) and a-<sub>2</sub> attach to different verbal stems as determined by morphology; then within those verbal stems that take Ca-, a-<sub>1</sub> appears in certain phonological environments.

In this grammar, a-<sub>1</sub> is glossed as ‘RED’, a-<sub>3</sub> is not treated as a morpheme but part of the root (although in the past it may have been a separate morpheme), and a-<sub>2</sub> is glossed as <a> or a-. Although a-<sub>1</sub> and a-<sub>2</sub> are in complementary distribution and they are functionally alike, I choose not to gloss a-<sub>2</sub> as ‘RED’ but to keep it as <a> because, like Ca-, a-<sub>2</sub>’s occurrence is often idiosyncratic, and its function varies depending on what morphemes it accompanies. It is thus not realistic to gloss this morpheme on the basis of its function. Furthermore, although a-<sub>2</sub> is an allomorph of Ca-, to gloss a-<sub>2</sub> as ‘RED’ is misleading since the onset (if there is one) is never reduplicated, as in the case of pi-a-kiping (*pi-ka-kiping).

---

<sup>9</sup> This is more complicated in the case of verbs derived from ki- (§9.6). When ki- affixes to a nominal root and denotes the meaning of ‘get something’, a-<sub>2</sub> occurs in its irrealis or progressive form as expected; but when ki- affixes to a verbal root and has passive meaning, either a-<sub>2</sub> or Ca- reduplication (or a-<sub>1</sub>) is acceptable (although a-<sub>2</sub> is preferred). For instance, when beray ‘give’ forms a complex stem with ki- to derive a new verb ki-beray ‘ask, beg’, the irrealis form may be ki-a-beray or ki-ba-beray.
### Table 3.2: A comparison of the three $a$- morphemes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>$a_1$</th>
<th>$a_2$</th>
<th>$a_3$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Distribution</strong></td>
<td>It is the allomorph of Ca-which occurs in the pre-penultimate position when the penultimate syllable does not have an onset</td>
<td>It occurs (i) in a fossilised reduplicated-monosyllable stem with $&lt;a&gt;$ ($§3.4.1.1$) and (ii) in a complex stem which consists of a verbalising affix and a root. The verbalising affixes it cooccurs with include $u$- ‘go’, $ki$- ‘get’, and $mi$- ‘have’.</td>
<td>It occurs as part of a fossilised root.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Examples</strong></td>
<td>$a$-araw ‘will rob’ $lr&lt;u&gt;a$-alru ‘will imitate’ $m-a$-uka ‘going’ $m-a$-elaw ‘fortune-tell’ $pa&lt;u&gt;a$-etreng ‘will be long’</td>
<td>$si&lt;u&gt;k&lt;a&gt;$sik ‘will set off’ ($sik&lt;u&gt;a&gt;$sik) $ma&lt;lri&lt;u&lt;tr&lt;a&gt;$litr ‘rolling’ ($ma$litr$_{&lt;a&gt;}litr$) $m-u$-a-sabak ‘going inside’ $m-u$-a-patraran ‘going outside’ $ki$-a-lengaw ‘listening’ $ki$-a-$rami$ ‘beginning’ $mi$-a-$kriuwan$ ‘wearing clothes’</td>
<td>$gis&lt;u&gt;a&gt;$gis ‘to shave’ $ging&lt;u&gt;a&gt;$ging ‘to quake’ $bak&lt;u&gt;a$-bak ‘vegetable garden’ $kay&lt;u&gt;a&gt;kay$ ‘bridge’ $ki&lt;u&gt;a$-kip ‘eyelashes’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Functions</strong></td>
<td>Marking progressive, irrealis, reciprocal, plurality/collectivity, and forming instrumental nouns and numerals.</td>
<td>Marking progressive, irrealis.</td>
<td>It cannot be separated from the stem and has no synchronic function.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### 3.4.3 Disyllabic ($CVCV^-$) reduplication

**3.4.3.1 Form**

In disyllabic reduplication the last two syllables of the stem are reduplicated, and the coda is dropped. For instance:

- drenan ‘mountain(s)’ → drena-drenan ‘mountains’
- ragumul ‘fur’ → ra-gumu-gumul ‘fluffy’

Adelaar (2000) and L.M. Chang (1998), in their analyses of Siraya and Thao, distinguish two different categories (treated as identical here) according to whether the stem has two syllables or more than two syllables. For those stems with more than two syllables, they

---

10 See $§6.5.1$, $§6.5.6$ and $§6.5.7$. 
suggest that there is rightward reduplication. Blust (2001:326) also mentions that ‘full reduplication and rightward reduplication are in complementary distribution, because each is restricted to a different segmental template’. Here I argue that the reduplication processes which Adelaar and Chang call rightward reduplication and full reduplication respectively can actually be considered as the same process, for the three reasons given below.

First, the reduplication described here is structurally similar to Ca-reduplication, which is clearly not rightward. Both processes reduplicate the penultimate syllable (and the syllable after it). Second, if there is a coda in the last syllable, it does not participate in the reduplication. Third, the same rule accounts for CVCV- reduplication in both disyllables and longer words, and there is no need to postulate two reduplication processes to account for stems with two syllables and those with more than two syllables.

The term ‘rightward reduplication’, discussed in §3.4.5, is reserved in the present study for the reduplicative process where the last syllable is reduplicated without dropping the coda.

3.4.3.2 Meaning

Reduplication of this type usually adds the notion of plurality or collectivity to nouns and the notion of repetition or distributedness to active verbs. In most cases of stative verbs, it denotes a more extreme degree of the property denoted by the verb.

Examples of nouns:

- drenan ‘mountain’
- tralrun ‘grass’
- sa-turik ‘a row’
- uma ‘farm’
- suan ‘dog’
- bati ‘story; say’
- lrima ‘hand’
- ma-’idrang-an ‘old person’
- ragumul ‘fur’
- trakuban ‘boy’s meeting house’
- lrikudran ‘behind’

Examples of dynamic verbs:

- turus ‘to follow’
- kirim ‘to be frugal’
- kurut ‘to count’
- ma-rutung ‘to gather’
- me-na’u ‘to see’
- m-iway ‘to go on hunger strike’
- m-araw ‘to rob’
- mu-asal ‘to change’
- m-alrup ‘to hunt’

Examples of nouns:

- drenan ‘mountain’
- tralrun ‘grass’
- sa-turik ‘a row’
- uma ‘farm’
- suan ‘dog’
- bati ‘story; say’
- lrima ‘hand’
- ma-’idrang-an ‘old person’
- ragumul ‘fur’
- trakuban ‘boy’s meeting house’
- lrikudran ‘behind’

Examples of dynamic verbs:

- turus ‘to follow’
- kirim ‘to be frugal’
- kurut ‘to count’
- ma-rutung ‘to gather’
- me-na’u ‘to see’
- m-iway ‘to go on hunger strike’
- m-araw ‘to rob’
- mu-asal ‘to change’
- m-alrup ‘to hunt’
Examples of stative verbs:

- ma-ruwa ‘can’
- ma-ruwa-ruwa ‘can’
- ma-risan ‘same’
- ma-risan-risan ‘pretty much the same’
- dawil ‘far’
- dawi-dawil ‘very far’
- asatr ‘tall’
- asa-asatr ‘very tall’
- mukasa ‘together’
- mu-kasa-kasa ‘staying together’
- mi-sasa ‘there is one’
- mi-sasa-sasa ‘there is only one’
- kadruwan ‘many’
- ka-druwa-druwan ‘many’

CVCV- reduplication is also used to derive locative nouns from verbs, usually in company with the suffix -an (§7.3.2.5). In those cases, the derived noun refers to the location where the named activity is carried out.

- dirus ‘to bathe, to swim’
  - diru-dirus-an ‘swimming pool’
- trima’ ‘to buy’
  - trima-trima’-an ‘market’
- trekelr ‘to drink’
  - treke-trekelr-an ‘place for drinking water’
- daway ‘to produce’
  - dawa-daway-an ‘factory’

CVCV- reduplication can replace Ca- reduplication to form reciprocal verbs expressing intensity (§9.3). For example:

- ma-pa-pingitr ‘to scratch each other’
- ma-pingi-pingitr ‘to fight against each other’
- ma-sa-salraw ‘to pass by each other’
- ma-salra-salraw ‘to chase each other’

CVCV- reduplication is often used to form place names or personal names. For example kalikali (personal name) is from kali ‘stream, brook’; sanusanum (place name) is from sanum ‘tap’.

### 3.4.4 First syllable reduplication

First syllable reduplication applies mostly to numerals for counting non-human referents (§4.5.4.2), although it is not obligatory. However, not all numerals follow the same reduplication pattern. The number ‘six’ takes Ca- reduplication, and ‘seven’ and ‘nine’ take CVCV- reduplication. The numbers ‘one’, ‘four’, and ‘eight’ are indeterminate, because the reduplication may be analysed as either Ca- or CV-. A list of the numerals from one to nine is given for reference.

---

11 There is only one example not related to counting words in which CV- reduplication plus suffix -an indicates the meaning of collectivity. In the sentence below the stem for grandparent is temu-, which is a bound root, as it never occurs by itself without affixation. The evidence that the form temumuan involves reduplication (not <em>infixation with vowel assimilation</em>) is the forms temuu ‘your grandparent’ and temutaw ‘his grandparent’. See also Table 5.1 in §5.3.2.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>mi-trungul</th>
<th>dra</th>
<th>te&lt;em&gt;mu&lt;/em&gt;-mu-an</th>
<th>dra</th>
<th>saygu</th>
<th>m-alup</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>have-lineage</td>
<td>ID.OBL</td>
<td>&lt;RED&gt;-grandparent-COL</td>
<td>ID.OBL</td>
<td>be.good.at</td>
<td>AV-hunt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

‘It (the dog) had ancestors that were good at hunting.’
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>cardinal number</th>
<th>non-human referent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1: sa</td>
<td>sa-sa-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2: dru</td>
<td>dru-drua-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3: telru</td>
<td>te-telru-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4: pat</td>
<td>pa-pat-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5: lrima</td>
<td>lu-luwatr-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6: nem</td>
<td>na-nem-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7: pitu</td>
<td>pitu-pitu-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8: walru</td>
<td>wa-walru-a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9: iwa</td>
<td>iwa-iwa-a</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3.4.5 Rightward reduplication

The term ‘rightward reduplication’ is used to refer to cases where the last syllable is reduplicated without dropping the coda. Examples of this type are very rare in the corpus. Semantically, rightward reduplication indicates intensity. For example:

(32) **talrugang-gang**

sturdy-RED

‘He is very sturdy.’

3.4.6 Serial reduplication

The term ‘serial reduplication’ was coined by Blust (2001:332) to refer to a reduplicated segment being further reduplicated. There are two subtypes.

3.4.6.1 Ca-Ca-

In the first subtype, Ca-reduplication is applied twice. In most cases in this category, the derived form is also marked with <in> or a voice marker. When the derived form is marked by <in> (§7.3.1) and thus a nominal derivation, it denotes a frequentative aspect; when the derived form is verbal, it indicates durative aspect (§6.4.1.3).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>verb</th>
<th>transitive form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bati</td>
<td>‘to say; word’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kawang</td>
<td>‘to walk’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>senay</td>
<td>‘to sing’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trakaw</td>
<td>‘to steal’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>senay</td>
<td>‘to sing’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>salrem</td>
<td>‘to plant’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;a-ba-bati</td>
<td>‘tale; rumour’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k&lt;em&gt;a-ka-kawang</td>
<td>‘walking’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;a-sa-senay</td>
<td>‘singing’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tr&lt;em&gt;a-tra-trakaw</td>
<td>‘stealing’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s&lt;in&gt;a-sa-senay</td>
<td>‘songs often sung’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s&lt;in&gt;a-sa-salrem</td>
<td>‘something habitually planted’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

12 The word lrima ‘five’ is only used to refer to the number five. In counting objects, or in any derivations, the base for five is always luwatr.
3.4.6.2  Ca-CVCV-

In the second subtype, the last two syllables of the stem are reduplicated and then the new form further undergoes Ca- reduplication. It seems only nouns are allowed to undergo this reduplicative process, and examples are rare. It is generally used to mark 'every one (of a class), all’ or ‘whole’. Examples are:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
<th>Examples</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>wari</td>
<td>‘day’</td>
<td>wa-wari-wari ‘every day’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trau</td>
<td>‘person’</td>
<td>tra-trau-trau ‘everyone’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ruma</td>
<td>‘house’</td>
<td>ra-ruma-ruma ‘every house’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dare</td>
<td>‘earth; soil’</td>
<td>da-dare-dare ‘the whole land’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trungul</td>
<td>‘lineage descent’</td>
<td>tra-trungu-trungul ‘connections’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
4 Lexical categories

4.1 Introduction

This chapter deals with the lexical categories of Puyuma. In Puyuma, there is a basic distinction between two open classes: nouns and verbs. The distinction is defined by various morphological and syntactic features.

A short overview of clause structure is given in §4.2. Section §4.3 discusses the distinction between noun and verb and gives an overview of the subclasses of nouns and verbs. The fact that there is no distinct adjective category is dealt with in §4.4. The closed categories are discussed in §4.5.

In the linguistic literature, several criteria are suggested for identifying different word classes: meaning, distribution, morphological structure, or grammatical function. In Puyuma, morphological and syntactic criteria are used in determining word classes, while semantic criteria are not used to assign individual words to word classes, but to give appropriate labels to word classes that are already defined by morphosyntactic criteria.

4.2 An overview of basic clause structure

In this section I give a very brief overview of Puyuma basic clause structure to provide a context for the discussion of lexical categories in this chapter and to orient the reader until these matters are dealt with in greater detail in Chapter 8.

Puyuma clauses are predicate-initial. A distinction between actor voice (with actor subject) and undergoer voice (with undergoer subject) is made among verbal clauses with both actor and undergoer arguments, as shown in (1)-(4). The undergoer voice has three variants, known as Patient Voice (PV), Locative Voice (LV), Conveyance (Instrumental/Beneficiary) Voice (CV) in conventional Philippinist terminology.

(1) \( tr<em>akaw dra paisu i isaw \)
    <AV>steal ID.OBL money SG.NOM Isaw
    ‘Isaw stole money.’

(2) \( tu=trakaw-aw na paisu kan isaw \)
    3.GEN=steal-PV DF.NOM money SG.OBL Isaw
    ‘Isaw stole the money.’
Chapter 4

(3) \[ tu=trakaw-ay=ku \quad dra \quad paisu \quad kan \quad isaw \]
3.GEN=steal-LV=1S.NOM ID.OBL money SG.OBL Isaw

‘Isaw stole money from me.’

(4) \[ tu=trakaw-anay \quad i \quad tinataw \quad dra \quad paisu \]
3.GEN=steal-CV SG.NOM his.mother ID.OBL money

‘He stole money for his mother.’

Actor voice clauses are intransitive and are marked no differently from other intransitives (these markers are glossed as ‘ITR’ from this point on), but they have a patient in oblique case. Undergoer voice clauses are always transitive, and the actor is obligatorily marked on the verb as a genitive pronominal proclitic (§3.3.1), but the actor NP with which it agrees (if any) is marked as oblique (\( kan \ isaw \) in (2) and (3)). Thus Puyuma can be said to have an ergative syntactic organisation. Undergoer voice has three variants, transitive 1, transitive 2, transitive 3, reflecting the affectedness of the undergoer by the event encoded by the verb. These correspond to the conventional Patient, Locative, and Conveyance Voices respectively. Their affixes will be glossed as ‘TR1’, ‘TR2’ and ‘TR3’ from this point on, and I will call the distinction among them ‘undergoer choice’ rather than ‘voice’. I will call voice and undergoer choice together ‘subject choice’. A more detailed description of subject choice is given in §6.2. Issues such as why the conventional terms are inadequate, and the mapping between transitivity and voice, are treated in §8.4.4.

Puyuma has three cases. While pronominal clitics (§4.5.1.1.) make a distinction between nominative (subject and possessor of subject) and genitive (non-subject actor and possessor), free pronouns (§4.5.1.2.) and noun phrase markers (§4.3.1.2.2) distinguish between nominative (subject) and oblique (non-subject actor, possessor, non-subject patient, adjuncts). A summary is given in Table 4.1.

It could be argued that because Genitive and Oblique are in complementary distribution (pronominal clitics are Genitive but noun phrases are Oblique), they should be given the same label. I have chosen not to do this, however, because Oblique NPs have functions that are not shared by Genitive clitics.

Table 4.1: A summary of case marking

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Pronominal clitics</th>
<th>Free pronouns</th>
<th>NP markers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nominative</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genitive</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✗</td>
<td>✗</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oblique</td>
<td>✗</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

4.3 Distinctions between nouns and verbs

In discussing lexical categories, it is necessary to look at distinctions at the word level (terminal syntactic categories), and at the root level (morphological categories). The first issue is addressed in §4.3.1 and the second is elaborated in §4.3.2.
4.3.1 Word level

4.3.1.1 Two syntactic tests

Since word classes are terminal syntactic categories, syntactic features provide the basic criteria for determining them. Two syntactic tests are utilised in determining whether a word is verbal or nominal. First, while a verbal element is negated by *adri*, a nominal element is negated by *ameli*, as shown below:

(5) \[ \text{*adri saygu} \]
\[ \text{NEG able} \]
\[ \text{‘She’s not able to.’} \]

(6) \[ \text{*ameli a suan} \]
\[ \text{NEG ID.NOM dog} \]
\[ \text{‘It is not a dog.’} \]

Second, while both nouns and verbs can be preceded by genitive proclitics, only nouns can cooccur with free possessive pronouns. For example, in (9), *kasu-aw* and *padrek-an* are both procliticised by the genitive clitic *tu=. While the clitic before *padrek-an* can be replaced by a free form *nantu*, the same replacement before *kasu-aw* is prohibited.

(9) \[ \text{tu=kasu-aw} \text{ tu=padrek-an} \]
\[ \text{3.GEN=take-TR1 3.PSR=back-NMZ} \]
\[ \text{‘She took her backpack.’} \]

(10) \[ \text{tu=kasu-aw nantu padrek-an} \]
\[ \text{3.GEN=take-TR1 NOM/3.PSR back-NMZ} \]
\[ \text{‘She took her backpack.’} \]

(11) \[ \text{*nantu kasu-aw tu=padrek-an} \]
\[ \text{NOM/3.PSR take-TR1 3.PSR=back-NMZ} \]

4.3.1.2 Nouns

4.3.1.2.1 Syntactic functions and features of nouns

In addition to the cooccurrence restrictions demonstrated by the two syntactic tests, Puyuma nouns have the following syntactic functions and features:

(i) A noun can be the ‘primary information bearing unit’ (PIBU, after Croft 2001: 257–259), of a noun phrase.

---

1 The proclitic pronouns can either denote a non-subject actor when preceding a verb, or encode the nominative possessor when appearing before a noun. Different categories of personal pronouns and the strategies for glossing are dealt with in §4.5.1.

2 A PIBU is ‘the most contentful item that most closely profiles the same kind of thing that the whole constituent profiles’ (Croft 2001:257).
Chapter 4

(12) \textit{sadru na asi tu=tr<in>eke=li\textsubscript{r}}
many DF.NOM milk 3.PSR=<PERF>drink
‘The milk she drank was a lot.’

(ii) A noun can appear in a possessive construction denoting the possessum.

(13) \textit{ta=tilri\textsubscript{l} kana yawan}
1P.PSR=book DF.OBL chief
‘our writing records about chiefs’

Nouns fall into several subclasses in terms of semantic as well as syntactic features. While common nouns, personal nouns and locative nouns are open classes, the other subclasses, such as personal pronouns, temporal nouns, and demonstrative pronouns have limited membership. An open-class noun is always preceded by a noun phrase marker, a personal pronoun or a demonstrative (these elements serving to mark case and definiteness/number); on the other hand, a closed-class noun is never preceded by a noun phrase marker. Because open-class nouns are preceded by a noun phrase marker, I will first give an overview of the noun phrase markers in §4.3.1.2.2. Subcategories of open-class nouns are described in §4.3.1.2.3. Closed classes are treated in §4.5.

4.3.1.2.2 Noun phrase markers

The major function of noun phrase markers is to indicate the case of a given noun, together with case membership (common, personal, locative) and definiteness or number. Table 4.2 is an inventory of the noun phrase markers of Puyuma. The nominative case marks the grammatical subject, while the oblique case marks non-subject arguments. The non-subject arguments include the non-subject actor (which has a genitive bound pronoun cross-reference with the full noun), and the oblique arguments. More discussion about grammatical functions and noun phrase markers is provided in §8.2.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Common nouns</th>
<th>Personal nouns</th>
<th>Locations</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>indefinite</td>
<td>definite</td>
<td>singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nominative</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>na</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oblique</td>
<td>dra</td>
<td>kana</td>
<td>kan</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

4.3.1.2.3 A subcategorisation of open-class nouns

On the basis of their syntactic features, open-class nouns are subcategorised into three classes: personal nouns, locative nouns, and common nouns. Besides being marked by different classes of noun phrase markers (as shown in Table 4.2), these three subclasses are also different in terms of their ability to take modifiers and their being able to be preceded by personal pronouns and demonstratives. A comparison of the three classes of nouns is given in Table 4.3.
Table 4.3: A comparison among the three subclasses of nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Personal</th>
<th>Locative</th>
<th>Common</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>may be modified by a non-restrictive</td>
<td>yes</td>
<td>?^3</td>
<td>yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>relative clause</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>may be preceded by a demonstrative/</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>yes</td>
<td>yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>deictic expression</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>may be modified by a restrictive relative</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clause</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>may be preceded by a personal pronoun</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>may be modified by a numeral</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>no</td>
<td>yes</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Because noun phrase structures will be dealt with in detail in Chapter 5, this section only gives an overview.

Personal nouns consist of personal names and some nouns denoting older-generation kin. Contrary to common nouns and locative nouns, the number of a personal noun is obligatorily marked by the noun phrase marker.

(14)  
\[tu=padrek-aw \text{i temutaw}\]  
3.GEN=carry.on.back-TR1 SG.NOM his.grandparent  
‘He carried his grandmother on back.’

(15)  
\[tu=pes-pesbes-ay \text{kan ma’idrang kakawalan}\]  
3.GEN=RED-massage-TR2 SG.OBL old Kakawalan  
‘The old man Kakawalan kept massaging him.’

(16)  
\[tu=pu-kiping-ay \text{na namali kay baeli}\]  
3.GEN=CAUS-clothes-TR2 PL.NOM my.father COM my.brother  
‘They have my father and brother wear the traditional clothes.’

While most older-generation kin terms are treated as personal nouns, younger-generation kin terms, e.g. \textit{wadi} ‘younger sibling’ in (17a), behave differently; they are treated as common nouns.

(17) a.  
\[nanku \text{ wadi i pilay}\]  
DF.NOM/1S.PSR younger.sibling SG.NOM Pilay  
‘Pilay is my younger sister.’

b.  
\[i \text{ baeli i senayan}\]  
SG.NOM my.elder.sibling SG.NOM Senayan  
‘Senayan is my elder sister.’

^3 I have found no example in the corpus showing whether a locative noun can be modified by a non-restrictive relative clause.

Older-generation kin that are treated as personal nouns are those marked by inalienable possessive pronouns, discussed in §5.3.2. Note that first person plural kin terms, such as ‘our father’, ‘our grandparents’, are treated as common nouns.
Personal nouns are never preceded by pronouns or demonstratives, as in (18). They cannot be modified by a numeral, as in (19). They can take a relative clause but only the non-restrictive reading is acceptable, as in (20). Relative clauses are described in §5.6.

(18) a. *nanku senayan
   NOM/1S.PSR Senayan
   ‘my Senayan’

   b. *idru i senayan
      that.NOM SG.NOM Senayan
      ‘that Senayan’

(19) a. *na mia-drua i senayan
      DF.NOM PRS-two SG.NOM Senayan
      ‘two Senayan’

   b. *na mia-drua i baeli
      DF.NOM PRS-two SG.NOM my.sibling
      ‘my two siblings’

(20) tu=padrek-aw=ku kan isaw na bangsar
    3.GEN=carry.on.back-TR1=1S.NOM SG.OBL Isaw LK handsome
    ‘Isaw, the handsome one, he carried me on his back.’
    ‘The handsome Isaw carried me on his back.’

Locative nouns consist of nouns denoting place names (21), directions (22), and relational referents (23). Being subject or not, they are always preceded by the noun phrase marker *i, and they may be a stative location, a goal or a source. For example, in (21) and (23), *i taihok and *i nguwayan are not the subject, and in (22) *i timulr is the subject, but the noun phrase marker *i in these examples cannot be replaced with na (marking nominative) or kana (marking oblique). In (21) and (22) the noun is a stative location, and in (23) it is a goal.

(21) m-uka=ku i/*kana taihok
    ITR-go=1S.NOM LOC/DF.OBL Taipei
    ‘I went to Taipei.’

(22) ma-kiteng i/*na timulr
    ITR-small LOC/DF.NOM south
    ‘The south is small.’

(23) ku=atel-anay na paisu i/*kana nguwayan kantaw
    1S.GEN=throw-TR3 DF.NOM money LOC/DF.OBL front 3.OBL
    ‘I threw the money in front of him.’ (lit. ‘in his front’)

Like personal nouns, locative nouns cannot be followed by a numeral, as in (24) or a relative clause, as in (25), but they can be preceded by a spatial deictic, as in (26).

---

5 This sentence will be grammatical if it is interpreted as an equational sentence, meaning ‘Senayan is that one’.

6 Locative nouns expressing sources are always preceded by kemay ‘from’, with or without i, but never *kemay kana.
(24)  *ma-kiteng i timulr na dru-a
     ITR-small LOC south LK two-NPRS
     ‘The two souths are small.’

(25)  *m-uka=ku i balrangaw na bulray
     ITR-go=1S.NOM LOC Taitung LK beautiful
     ‘I went to beautiful Taitung.’

(26)  m-uka kadri i balrangaw
     ITR-go here LOC Taitung
     ‘They came here to Taitung.’

Locative nouns cannot be preceded by a personal pronoun, as shown in (27a-c). Directional and space-relational nouns (but not place names: cf. (28b)) may be followed by an oblique-marked NP encoding a possessive relation, as in (23) and (28a).

(27)  a.  *nanku nguayan
     NOM/1S.PSR front
     ‘my front’

     a’.  i nguayan kanku
     LOC front 1S.OBL
     ‘in front of me’

     b.  *nanku timulr
     NOM/1S.PSR south
     ‘my south’

     b’. maka-timulr kanku
     along-south 1S.OBL
     ‘south to me’

     c.  *nanku taihok
     NOM/1S.PSR Taipei
     ‘my Taipei’

(28)  a.  ulaya i isatr kana etu’ na paisu
     exist LOC above DF.OBL table DF.NOM money
     ‘The money is on (the surface of) the table.’

     b.  *ulaya i puyuma kana kanatalr i baeli
     exist LOC Puyuma DF.NOM island SG.NOM my.elder.sibling
     ‘*My elder brother is the island’s Puyuma.’

Common nouns are nouns other than locative or personal nouns. They may be modified by a numeral (29) or a relative clause (30), and they can be preceded by a demonstrative (31) or a possessor pronoun (32).

(29)  dru-a me-nau-a a mia-drua a trau i, ...
     come ITR-see-PJ ID.NOM PRS-two ID.NOM person TOP
     ‘Two people came to see, …’
54 Chapter 4

(30)  *tu=alrak-aw na kiping na bulray*
3.GEN=take-TR1 DF.NOM clothes DF.NOM beautiful
‘They took the beautiful clothes.’

(31)  *salraw=ku sagar kandri kana suan*
very=1S.NOM like this.OBL DF.OBL dog
‘I like this dog very much.’

(32)  *bulray nanu kabung*
beautiful NOM/2S.PSR hat
‘Your hat is beautiful’

There is a group of nouns which may be used as either common or locative nouns. These nouns all encode familiar locations, like *ruma’* ‘house’, *kalri* ‘river’, *lrangitr* ‘sky’, *ine’* ‘sea’, *drekal* ‘village’. For instance, in (33), *lrangitr* ‘sky’ is the subject and is used as a common noun, but in (34), it is used as a locative noun.

(33)  *mi-riwanes na lrangitr*
have-rainbow DF.NOM sky
‘The sky has a rainbow.’

(34)  *ulaya a ariwanes i lrangitr*
exist ID.NOM rainbow LOC sky
‘There is a rainbow in the sky.’

When such nouns are marked by *i*, they cannot be modified by a numeral or a personal pronoun, nor can they take a relative clause. Take *ruma’* ‘house’ as an example. In (35) it is used as a common noun, and in (36) it is used as a locative noun.

(35)  a.  *ma-trina na ruma’*
ITR-big DF.NOM house
‘The house is big.’

     b.  *ma-trina na ruma’ na telru-a*
ITR-big DF.NOM house DF.NOM three-NPRS
‘The three houses are big.’

     c.  *ma-trina idri na ruma’ na bulray*
ITR-big this.NOM DF.NOM house DF.NOM beautiful
‘This beautiful house is big.’

(36)  a.  *tr<em>ekelr=ku i ruma’*
ITR-drink=1S.NOM LOC house
‘I drink (wine) at home.’

     b.  *tr<em>ekelr=ku i ruma’ na telru-a*
ITR-drink=1S.NOM LOC house DF.NOM three-NPRS

     c.  *tr<em>ekelr=ku i ruma’ na bulray*
ITR-drink=1S.NOM LOC house DF.NOM beautiful

When such nouns are preceded by a personal pronoun, although they encode locations, they are never preceded by *i*. For example:
(37) a. \( \text{tr}<em>ekelr}=\text{ta kantu ruma'} \)  
\(<\text{ITR}>\text{drink}=1\text{P.ICL.NOM DF.OBL/3.PSR house} \)  
‘We drank in his house.’

a’. \( \ast \text{tr}<em>ekelr}=\text{ta i kantu ruma'} \)  
\(<\text{ITR}>\text{drink}=1\text{P.ICL.NOM LOC DF.OBL/3.PSR house} \)  
’

b. \( \text{ta}=\text{pa-drua-aw kanta ruma'} \)  
\(1\text{P.GEN}=\text{CAUS-come-TR1 DF.OBL/3.PSR house} \)  
‘We made them come to our house.’

b’. \( \ast \text{ta}=\text{pa-drua-aw i kanta ruma'} \)  
\(1\text{P.GEN}=\text{CAUS-come-TR1 LOC DF.OBL/1P.PSR house} \)  
‘We made them come to our house.’

Sentences (33) to (36) all illustrate examples with nouns expressing stative locations. When such nouns encode goals, they can be preceded either by \( i \) or \( \text{kana} \) (oblique noun phrase marker), as in (38a) and (38b).

(38) a. \( \text{adri } \text{ua-dalep i/kana ine’} \)  
\( \text{NEG go-close LOC/DF.OBL sea} \)  
‘Don’t go close to the sea.’

b. \( \text{mu-atel}=\text{ku i/kana kali} \)  
\( \text{ACAUS-fall}=1\text{S.NOM LOC/DF.OBL brook} \)  
‘I fell into the brook.’

However, when such nouns encode goals after \( \text{muka} \) ‘go’ and \( \text{drua} \) ‘come’, they are always preceded by \( i \), as in (39).\(^7\)

(39) \( \text{m-uka i/*kana drekal} \)  
\( \text{ITR-go LOC/*DF.OBL village} \)  
‘He went to the village.’

When such nouns denote a source (which is always introduced by \( \text{kemay} \) ‘from’), they can be preceded by a personal pronoun.

(40) a. \( \text{p-u-patraran}=\text{ku kemay i/*kana ruma’} \)  
\( \text{CAUS-go-out=1S.NOM from LOC/DF.OBL house} \)  
‘I made it go out from the house.’

b. \( \text{p-u-patraran}=\text{ku kemay kanta ruma’} \)  
\( \text{CAUS-go-out=1S.NOM from DF.OBL/1P.PSR house} \)  
‘I made it go out from our house.’

\(^7\) However, when goals are denoted by common nouns not encoding familiar locations, these nouns are preceded by \( \text{kana} \) instead of \( i \). For instance:

\( \text{m-uka kana mar-asatr kana tu’utr} \)  
\( \text{ITR-go DF.OBL more-high DF.OBL pillar} \)  
‘They went to the higher pillar.’
4.3.1.3 Verbs

Verbs can be subdivided into several classes in terms of their argument structure, which is to a certain extent signalled by their morphological derivations. It is necessary to distinguish between roots, verbs (i.e. verbal stems), and verb forms. Thus bias ‘be hot’ and b<en>ias ‘make hot’ are respectively monovalent and bivalent verbs derived from the root bias, while bias-aw and b<en>ias are respectively transitive (patient subject) and intransitive (actor voice) forms of the same verb.

Verbs are classified here on the basis of valency, but a more detailed discussion is given in §10.2.

(i) **Zero-valency or ‘ambient’ verbs** do not take any arguments.

(41) a<ra>remeng=la  
<RED>dark=PERF  
‘It is getting dark.’

(ii) **Monovalent verbs** are always intransitive. Thus they are marked by intransitive affixes and they have only one obligatory argument, the nominative subject. Two classes can be distinguished in terms of the stativity/dynamicity of monovalent verbs. Dynamic verbs fall into several subtypes in terms of different morphological derivations. More discussion of morphological classes of monovalent verbs is provided in §6.5.

(42) ma-rimek na ruma’  
ITR-dirty DF.NOM house  
‘The house is dirty.’ (Stative)

(43) s<em>a-senay i baeli  
<ITR>RED-sing SG.NOM my.elder.sibling  
‘My elder sister is/was singing.’ (Dynamic)

(iii) **Bivalent verbs** usually have both transitive (undergoer voice) and intransitive (actor voice) forms. Transitive forms are marked by one of the transitive suffixes, and they take a genitive agent pronoun proclitic, and a nominative pronoun enclitic or nominative NP.

(44) tu=adras-aw idru na barasa  
3.GEN=lift.up-TR1 that.NOM DF.NOM stone  
‘They lifted up that stone.’

The example above is transitive 1 (patient subject). When such a verb appears in actor voice, as in (45), it is intransitive and has the same marking as a monovalent verb. The patient NP, if any, is in oblique case and is not coreferenced by a verbal clitic.

(45) m-adras=mi dra lriung  
ITR-lift.up=1P.NOM ID.OBL pig  
‘We lifted up a pig.’

Within the bivalent category, there are two subclasses of derived verbs: anticausative (46) and passive (47), described in §9.5 and §9.6 respectively. Here the patient NP is in nominative case and the actor (if any) is in the oblique case, as in (47).
Lexical categories

(46)  mu-trukulr  na  sa’adr
       ACAUS-pick  DF.NOM  branch
   ‘The branch was picked up by (someone).’

(47)  ki-sulu-sulud=ku  dra  trau
       PASS-RED-push=1S.NOM  ID.OBL  person
   ‘I get pushed by others. (I need others to push me.)’

(iv) **Trivalent verbs** take three arguments: an actor, a patient-like (PL) argument and a less-patient-like (LPL) argument. A typical trivalent verb, such as ‘give’ or ‘lend’, takes an actor, a beneficiary and a theme. Because there is no patient in a ‘give’ or a ‘lend’ construction, I assume that the theme is the patient-like (PL) argument and the beneficiary the less-patient-like (LPL) argument. Trivalent verbs are always transitive and have more than one undergoer voice form. Which form occurs depends on undergoer (subject) choice, which depends on the definiteness of the PL (theme). When the PL (theme) is indefinite, as in (48), the verb is in TR2 (LV) form and the LPL (beneficiary) is subject; when the PL (theme) is definite, as in (49), the verb is in TR3 (CV) form and the PL is subject. Sentences in (50) are elicited examples which again show that the definiteness of the PL (theme) determines the undergoer (subject) choice.

(48)  an  tu=beray-ay=mu=la  dra  la’ub  ...
       if   3.GEN=give-TR2=2P.NOM=PERF  ID.OBL  ladle
   ‘If she gives you ladles …’

(49)  tu=beray-anay  na  la’ub  
       3.GEN=give-TR3  DF.NOM  ladle
   ‘She gave them the ladle.’

(50) a.  ku=pabulras-ay  dra  kabung  i  lrugi
       1S.GEN=lend-TR2  ID.OBL  hat  SG.NOM  Lrugi
   ‘I lent Lrugi a hat.’

   b.  ku=pabulras-anay  kan  lrugi  na  kabung
       1S.GEN=lend-TR3  SG.OBL  Lrugi  DF.NOM  hat
   ‘I lent the hat to Lrugi.’

4.3.2 **Root level**

In Puyuma, as in many Austronesian languages, it is not unusual for the same form to be used in both nominal and verbal frames. For instance, in (51), the same form *senay* ‘to sing; song’ appears twice; the first time it is used as the content word of a verb phrase, and the second time as the content word of a noun phrase. In (52a) and (52b), the same form *temakakesi* ‘studying; student’ is used as the content word of a verb phrase and a noun phrase respectively.

---

8 I have found no example of *beray* ‘give’ or *pabulras* ‘lend’ in the corpus appearing in their intransitive forms. For them to appear in intransitive constructions, they must have an indefinite PL and LPL. However, the circumstances in which one might say ‘I’ve lent a hat to someone’, or ‘I’ve given someone a hat’ are rare.
Example (52) shows that there exists a mismatch between nouns and verbs, defined morphologically, and the terminal syntactic categories of noun phrases and verb phrases.9

The overlap displayed in (51) to (52) is shown in the table below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>Verb (imperative)</th>
<th>Verb (progressive)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>senay</td>
<td>senay ‘song’</td>
<td>senay ‘to sing’</td>
<td>semasenay ‘singing’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>takesi</td>
<td>temakakesi ‘student’</td>
<td>takesi ‘to study’</td>
<td>temakakesi ‘studying’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The above table shows that the two roots *senay* and *takesi* can have nominal and verbal derivations. The paradigm raises one issue. Except for roots denoting kinship terms and proper names, open-class roots may have both nominal and verbal derivations. Are these roots pre-categorial as some Austronesian linguists, e.g. Foley (1998), have suggested? The answer for most roots is ‘no’.

As was mentioned above, although almost all open-class roots can have both nominal and verbal derivations, we can still categorise these roots. Roots are categorised in terms of morphological markedness in the syntactic slot where they appear. I employ Croft’s (2001:84–92) framework of markedness and prototypes to determine the category a root belongs to. If a root can be used in a grammatical slot without any further affixation, it is the prototype of that grammatical category. Take *takesi* as an example. Although *t<em>a<ka>kesi* can be used as content word in both a verb phrase as in (52a) and a noun phrase as in (52b), the root is basically verbal because it cannot be used in a nominal frame without further marking. However it can be used in an imperative verbal construction without any further affixation.

(53) *takesi i sabak!*
    study.IMP LOC inside
    ‘Study inside!’

Likewise, the root *ngalrad* is analysed as nominal, because the root itself can be used in a nominal frame as in (54), but not in a verbal frame without morphological derivation as in (55).

(54) *tu=ngalrad kan temuu i, amau i kalikali*
    3.PSR=name SG.OBL your.grandparent TOP COP SG.NOM Kalikali
    ‘Your grandmother’s name is Kalikali.’

---

9 Himmelmann (forthcoming) describes a parallel mismatch in Tagalog.
59

Similarly, the root *salrem* is analysed as verbal because it appears in the imperative construction without affixation as in (56), but has to take an affix before it can be used in a nominal slot, as in (57).

(56) *salrem* *dra* *bini*  
plant ID.OBL seed  
‘Plant a seed!’

(57) *sadru* *tu=s<in>alrem-an*  
many 3.PSR=<PERF>plant-NMZ  
‘Her plants are many.’

In addition to morphologically free roots, which can be used as a noun or as a verb without derivation, there are a number of bound roots (see also §3.2.2). All bound roots in Puyuma cooccur with either *ma*- or *ka*- when they are used in discourse. That is, they form verbal stems which have to be further affixed before they can be used in nominal frames. For example:

(58) *ma-’idrang=k*  
ITR-old=1S.NOM  
‘I am old.’

(59) *s<em>a-senay* *na* *ma-’idrang-an*  
<ITR>RED-sing DF.NOM ITR-old-NMZ  
‘The old people are singing.’

There are some roots whose category cannot be decided. The difficulty lies in the fact that these roots are used in both nominal and verbal frames without any morphological derivation, as exemplified by the root *senay* in (51). The number of such roots is not large (less than 10 percent of the total) and they are restricted to certain categories. The following are examples of roots that can be used both as nouns and as imperative verbs.

(i) verbs and their related instrument nouns (or, nouns and the events typically related to them)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>V</th>
<th>N</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>tawasi</em></td>
<td>to brush</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>tabukul</em></td>
<td>to catch s.th. with a net</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>elaw</em></td>
<td>to practice divination</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>kuang</em></td>
<td>to shoot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>abak</em></td>
<td>to contain</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>kutang</em></td>
<td>to spear</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>dawak</em></td>
<td>to poison</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(ii) verbs and their related undergoer nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>V</th>
<th>N</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>sama</em></td>
<td>to leave s.th.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>sabung</em></td>
<td>to compensate</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(iii) verbs and their related result nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>V to rain</th>
<th>N rain</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'udal</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>V to sing</th>
<th>N song</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>senay</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>V to tell</th>
<th>N tale</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bati</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>V to make a hole</th>
<th>N hole</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>buang</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>V to sound</th>
<th>N sound</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>runi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>V to have a skin ulcer</th>
<th>N a skin ulcer</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>palaw</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>V to quake</th>
<th>N earthquake</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>gingaging</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>V to step</th>
<th>N a step</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>depa'</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(iv) others (mostly nouns and their related properties, or a body part and the action typically related to it)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>V young</th>
<th>N child</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lalak</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>V ill</th>
<th>N illness</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kualreng</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>V to carry on back</th>
<th>N back</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>padrek</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Roots that can be freely used in nominal and verbal frames are therefore pre-categorial. Roots can be categorised as nominal: (i) if they are never used as verbs, or (ii) if they have to take affixes before being used in a verbal frame. Verbal roots are those that can appear in an imperative construction without any affixation or roots that take more affixes in a nominal frame than when they are used in a verbal slot.

4.4 The absence of adjectives

Adjectives typically denote properties. Unlike verbs or nouns, which seem to be universal, not all languages have an adjectival category. In this grammar, I do not distinguish a class of adjectives, although there is a subclass of verbs which often have the meanings that are associated with adjectives in other languages, such as ‘old’, ‘big’, ‘cold’, and so on. There is no syntactic or morphological evidence for treating these stative verbs as a category distinct from verbs. For instance, there is no morphological difference between ma-‘idrang ‘old’ in (60) and ma-ragan ‘get up’ in (61). The two verbs are both marked by the same intransitive marker. Syntactically, both ma-‘idrang and maragan function as a predicate, and both of them take a pronominal and an aspectual clitic.

(60)  
\textbf{ma-‘idrang}=ku=la  
ITR-old=1S.NOM=PERF  
‘I’m old.’

(61)  
\textbf{ma-ragan}=ku=la  
ITR-get.up=1S.NOM=PERF  
‘I’ve got up.’

Like dynamic verbs, a stative verb also has progressive and irrealis forms (cf. §6.5), as shown below.
Both stative verbs and dynamic verbs can be used to modify a noun. In many languages of the world, such as English, there is a structural difference between modification by a verb and modification by an adjective, e.g. ‘the old man’ vs. ‘the man who is running’. In Puyuma, there is no such a distinction, as shown in (62) and (63).

(62) \( k<a> \text{adru} = \text{driya} \text{ nantu} \text{ lang} \ [a \text{ pa-pulang}] \)
\(<a> \text{there=} \text{IMPF} \text{ DF.NOM/3.PSR} \text{ company} \text{ DF.NOM RED-help} \)
‘His friends who can help have to be there.’

(63) \( \text{ulaya} \ a \text{ lalak} \ [a \text{ ma-keser}] \)
\( \text{exist} \text{ ID.NOM} \text{ child} \text{ ID.NOM ITR-strong} \)
‘There is a strong child.’

However, there is a comparative/superlative prefix mara- which can prefix to stative verbs but not to dynamic verbs. For instance, mara-ma-‘idrang ‘older’, mara-ma-keser ‘stronger’, but not *mara-ma-ragan and *mara-pulang. However, the presence of a comparative strategy does not distinguish stative verbs as a separate word class, since it is conditioned by the semantic feature of gradability, not stativity (Ross and Teng 2003).

4.5 Closed word classes

Unlike words in open classes, where various kinds of derivational processes are productive, most words in closed classes never undergo derivation and thus have constant forms. The closed classes of Puyuma are personal pronouns, temporal nouns, deictic expressions, numerals, adverbs, tags, topic markers, aspectual markers, conjunctions, and interjections. I deal in detail with deictic expressions and numerals here, as, unlike other closed classes, they are not discussed elsewhere in the grammar.

4.5.1 Personal pronouns

4.5.1.1 Bound pronouns

Bound pronouns are clitics. They make a distinction only between nominative and genitive cases, as shown in Table 4.4. Their morphological status is dealt with in §3.3.

**Table 4.4:** Puyuma pronominal clitics

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number/person Case</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1(^{st})</td>
<td>2(^{nd})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOM</td>
<td>=ku</td>
<td>=yu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss of subj.</td>
<td>ku=</td>
<td>nu=</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GEN</td>
<td>ku=</td>
<td>nu=</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
In the nominative row, there are two categories of bound pronouns: one is enclitic, and denotes the grammatical subject; the other is proclitic, and indicates the possessor of the subject.

From the table we also see that the possessor of subject and the genitive pronouns have the same forms, except for the first person exclusive plural pronouns. However, their distributions are different and thus they are glossed differently. While the possessors, glossed as PSR, procliticise to possessed nominals and indicate that the NP as a whole is the subject, the genitive pronouns procliticise to verbal elements and refer to the non-subject actor. Compare the two proclitic pronouns in (64).

\[(64) \quad ku=\text{rungas-aw} \quad ku=\text{kiruan} \]
\[1S.GEN=\text{take.off-TR1} \quad 1S.PSR=\text{clothes} \]
\[\text{‘I took off my clothes.’} \]

The first \( ku= (1S.GEN) \) attaches to the verb and denotes the non-subject actor, while the second \( ku= (1S.PSR) \) attaches to a nominal indicating that the NP is the subject.

Nominative enclitics denote the grammatical subject and are usually encliticised to the first element in a sentence. This first element may be either a nominal predicate, as in (65), or a verb, as in (66).

\[(65) \quad a \quad lalak=ku=\text{driya} \]
\[\text{ID.NOM child=}1S.NOM=\text{IMPF} \]
\[\text{‘I was still a child.’} \]

\[(66) \quad mu-\text{atel}=ku \quad dra \quad \text{enay} \]
\[\text{ACAUS-fall=}1S.NOM \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{water} \]
\[\text{‘I fell into the water.’} \]

### 4.5.1.2 Free pronouns

Free pronouns are phonologically unbound. Three categories are distinguished: neutral, nominative, and oblique. Nominative and oblique forms are portmanteau words; they consist of noun phrase markers and bound pronouns. The portmanteau forms which are used to indicate the possessor of a noun and simultaneously the case of the whole NP are glossed according to the following strategies: the form \( nanku \) consists of the nominative noun phrase marker \( na \) and first person singular pronoun \( ku \), and is glossed as \( \text{NOM/1S.PSR} \); the form \( kanku \) consists of \( kan \) and \( ku \), and is glossed as \( \text{DF.OBL/1S.PSR} \); the form \( draku \) consists of \( dra \) and \( ku \), and is glossed as \( \text{ID.OBL/1S.PSR} \). The longer forms in the oblique category, i.e. \( kananku \) or \( drananku \), consist of a noun phrase marker and a nominative possessor pronoun \( (kan + nanku; dra + nanku) \), and are glossed in the same way (i.e. \( kananku \) \text{DF.OBL/1S.PSR}; \( drananku \) \text{ID.OBL/1S.PSR}).
Table 4.5: Puyuma free pronouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th></th>
<th>Plural</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>NOM</td>
<td></td>
<td>NOM</td>
<td></td>
<td>NOM</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Poss of subj)</td>
<td>1st</td>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>1st</td>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>1st</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nanku</td>
<td>nantu</td>
<td>nantu</td>
<td>nanta</td>
<td>naniam</td>
<td>nanamu</td>
<td>nantu</td>
<td>nantu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kantu</td>
<td>kantu</td>
<td>kantu</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kantaw</td>
<td>kantaw</td>
<td>kantaw</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OBL</td>
<td></td>
<td>DF</td>
<td></td>
<td>ID</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss of non-subj.</td>
<td>1st</td>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>1st</td>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>1st</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kanku</td>
<td>kanu</td>
<td>kantu</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kananu</td>
<td>kanu</td>
<td>kantu</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kantu</td>
<td>kantu</td>
<td>kantu</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Non-subj.</td>
<td>kanku</td>
<td>kanu</td>
<td>kantu</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
<td>kanta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NEU</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kuiku</td>
<td>yuyu</td>
<td>taytaw</td>
<td>taita</td>
<td>mimi</td>
<td>muimu</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The nominative category indicates the possessor of the subject while the oblique category can either mark the non-subject or the possessor of a non-subject. Neutral pronouns are not used to mark the grammatical status of the participant they refer to in a sentence.

The neutral pronouns usually appear in the topic position, as in (67) or in a copular construction, as in (68).

(67) **taita i, k<a>adru=ta i taihok**
1.ICL.NEU TOP <RED>there=1.ICL.NOM LOC Taipei
‘As for us, we are living in Taipei.’

(68) **amau taytaw na s<em>a-senay**
COP 3S.NEU DF.NOM <ITR>RED-sing
‘It is he who was singing.’

The neutral pronouns are also used as a reply to an interrogative sentence starting with *i manay* ‘who’.

(69) Q: **i manay na s<em>a-senay**
SG.NOM who DF.NOM <ITR>RED-sing
‘Who’s singing?’

A: **kuiku**
1S.NEU
‘Me.’

In (70) and (71), two readings can be obtained; in the two sentences neutral pronouns may be used in a reflexive context or they may coreference the genitive pronouns and assume an emphatic meaning.

(70) **ku=na’u-ay kuiku**
1S.GEN=look-TR2 1S.NEU
‘I looked at/looked after myself.’
‘I myself looked after it.’

(71) **tu=tusuk-aw taytaw**
3GEN=spear-TR1 3S.NEU
‘He speared himself.’
‘He himself speared it.’
Neutral pronouns optionally appear in a verbal construction to denote a third person nominative argument. For instance:

(72)  
\[ ku=pabulras-ay \ dra \ kabung \ taytaw \]  
1S.GEN=lend-TR2  ID.OBL  hat  3S.NEU  
‘I lent him a hat.’

(73)  
\[ sa<\text{’}eru>\text{’}eru \ misasa=la \ taytaw \]  
<RED>laugh one=PERF  3S.NEU  
‘She kept laughing alone.’

Recall that there are no third person nominative enclitics (cf. Table 4.4). When there is no nominative pronoun, a verb is interpreted as having a third person nominative argument. Hence, a neutral pronoun serves as a nominative argument in (72) and (73); the neutral pronoun in both sentences can be deleted without changing the meaning.

The reader may suspect from the above examples that neutral pronouns are actually nominative. However, the third person pronoun \textit{taytaw} in (74) coreferences the genitive bound pronoun \textit{tu=} refuting this hypothesis.

(74)  
\[ tu=pa-‘a-‘arum-ay \ nu=kiruan \ taytaw \]  
3.GEN=CAUS-RED-dry-TR2  2S.PSR=clothes  3S.NEU  
‘He himself is drying your clothes.’

In short, neutral pronouns have three major functions: to affirm identities, to assume an emphatic meaning, or to indicate a reflexive meaning. They are not used to mark the grammatical status of the participant they refer to in a sentence.

The possessor of the subject is represented by a nominative free pronoun.

(75)  
\[ tu=retra-anay \ nantu \ basak \ kana \ ma‘idrang-an \]  
3.GEN=put.down-TR3  DF.NOM/3.PSR  bag  DF.OBL  old-NMZ  
‘The elders put down their bags.’

The nominative free pronouns can be replaced by bound pronouns, and thus in the above sentence, \textit{nantu} can be replaced by \textit{tu=}.

The oblique category is the most complex one among the free pronouns; two uses are distinguished. Oblique pronouns denote non-subjects and possessors of non-subjects. Examples showing oblique pronouns denoting non-subjects are given below:

(76)  
\[ m-uai=yu \ mi-kataguin \ kanku \]  
ITR-willing.to=2S.NOM  have-spouse  1S.OBL  
‘Are you willing to marry me?’

(77)  
\[ k<\text{’}em>a-a=ku=driya \ pa-ka-ladram \ kanmu \]  
<ITR>say-PJ=1S.NOM=IMPF  CAUS-ka-know  2P.OBL  
‘I am speaking to inform you.’

The possessors of non-subjects are further subcategorised into two classes in terms of definiteness of the possessed nouns. For example:

(78)  
\[ sagar \ ku<\text{’}rena>renang \ kantu \ wadi \]  
like  <RED>follow  DF.OBL/3.PSR  younger.sibling  
‘She likes following her brothers.’
There are longer forms and shorter forms in this oblique category of pronouns. According to the informants, there is no semantic or pragmatic distinction between the longer and shorter forms, and they are interchangeable.

### 4.5.2 Temporal nouns

There are only a few temporal nominals in Puyuma, listed below.

- **adru/adrunu** ‘then’
- **andaman** ‘tomorrow; days later’
- **adaman** ‘yesterday; days before’
- **garem** ‘now; today’
- **garemay** ‘later’

Temporal nouns are not preceded by noun phrase markers, but are analysed as nouns instead of adverbs because they may occupy the subject position in a nominal clause (§10.3). For example:

(80)  
\[
\text{nantu } ka-<a>\text{kasik-an andaman} \\
\text{DF.NOM/3.PSR ka-<a>set.out-NMZ tomorrow} \\
\text{‘Tomorrow is (the day of) their setting out.’}
\]

They may also function as the argument of the verb **palu** ‘demarcate’. Compare the following two sentences. The temporal expression **garem** ‘now’ can replace the case-marked nominal element **dra ma’idrang**:

(81)  
\[
\text{palu } dra \text{ ma’idrang, adri ma-ladram} \\
\text{demarcate ID.OBL ITR-old NEG ITR-know} \\
\text{‘(Even) Until they were old, they didn’t understand.’}
\]

(82)  
\[
\text{palu } garem, \text{ adri=ku ma-ladram} \\
\text{demarcate now NEG=1S.NOM ITR-know} \\
\text{‘Until now, I still don’t understand.’}
\]

However, in some cases, these words do not function as arguments but as adjuncts. Unlike common nouns, a temporal noun does not require a preposition in order to form an adjunct. For instance:

(83)  
\[
\text{ka-kuda=mi garem?} \\
\text{RED-how=1P.ECL.NOM now} \\
\text{‘What should we do now?’}
\]

### 4.5.3 Deictic expressions

#### 4.5.3.1 An overview

The major functions of deictic expressions are to focus the addressee’s attention on objects, persons, or locations in the speech situation, and to refer to linguistic entities in discourse.
In Puyuma, deictic expressions can be subcategorised into four categories in terms of morphosyntactic properties. They are demonstratives (as in (84)), spatial deictics (as in (85)), temporal deictics (as in (86)), and verbal deictics (as in (87)). Of the four, the first three are subclasses of nominals.

(84) \textit{adri=driya me-redek idru na paisu}  
\text{NEG=IMPF ITR-arrive that.NOM DF.NOM money}  
‘That money has not arrived yet.’ (Pronominal demonstrative)

(85) \textit{me-redek=ta=la kadri i puyuma}  
\text{ITR-arrive=1P.ICL.NOM=PERF here LOC Puyuma}  
‘We’ve arrived at Puyuma.’ (Locational demonstrative)

(86) \textit{kemay kadru=la, m-utu-yawan=la}  
\text{from then=PERF ITR-become-chief=PERF}  
‘From then on, he became a chief.’ (Temporal demonstrative)

(87) \textit{k<em>adrini=mi=driya dra ka-kualreng-an}  
\text{<ITR>here=1P.ECL.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL ka-sick-NMZ}  
‘We still have difficulties.’ (Verbal demonstrative)

The above sentences show that all deictic expressions have a retroflex stop /dr/ followed by a high vowel /i/ or /u/, with /i/ encoding proximal and /u/ distal.

4.5.3.2 Demonstratives

Demonstratives are distinguished in terms of case, number, and degree of distance. Table 4.6 is a summary of demonstratives.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nominative</th>
<th>Proximal</th>
<th>Medial</th>
<th>Distal</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>\textit{idri, idrini}</td>
<td>\textit{idru, idrunu}</td>
<td>\textit{idriyu}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>\textit{nadr, nadrini}</td>
<td>\textit{nadr, nadrnu}</td>
<td>\textit{nadrnyu}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oblique</td>
<td>\textit{kandri, kandrini}</td>
<td>\textit{kandru, kandrnu}</td>
<td>\textit{kandriyu}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>\textit{kanadr, kanadrini}</td>
<td>\textit{kanadr, kanadrnu}</td>
<td>\textit{kanadriyu}</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A demonstrative may either stand alone as the only small NP within an NP, as in (88) and (89), or it may occur as one of the small NPs within an NP (cf. §5.1.1 and §5.5), as in (90).

(88) \textit{ba-bati=driya kandru}  
\text{RED-say=IMPF that.OBL}  
‘Say something about that.’

(89) \textit{amau idru tu=suan}  
\text{COP that.NOM 3.PSR=dog}  
‘His dog is that one.’

(90) \textit{tu=tubang-aw nadru na trau i, ...}  
\text{3.GEN=answer-TR1 those.NOM DF.NOM person TOP}  
‘He answered those people, …’
4.5.3.2.1 Case and number

As shown in Table 4.6, the case role of a demonstrative is shown by its form. When a demonstrative is one of several small NPs inside a noun phrase, the demonstrative and the other small NPs are in the same case, as in (91) and (92).

(91) *idri* na *barasa* i, *kemay isuwa* aw *muama* kadrini
this.NOM DF.NOM stone TOP from where and why here
‘This stone, where is it from and why is it here?’

(92) *igelra=ku* kandri *suan* dra *adri=ku*
embarrassed=1S.NOM this.OBL DF.OBL dog ID.OBL NEG=1S.NOM
*maruwa* b=en>a’aw
can <ITR>save
‘I felt embarrassed about this dog that I couldn’t save it.’

Demonstratives are also subcategorised in terms of number. Huang (2000b:103) indicates that only those demonstratives that modify personal noun phrases or denote persons make a distinction in number. Thus, if the NP refers to a person or persons, as in (93) and (94), different demonstratives are used to indicate singular in (93) and plural in (94).

(93) *idru* na *walak* i, *tu=padrek-aw* i *temutaw*
that.NOM DF.NOM child TOP 3.GEN=carry-TR1 SG.NOM his.grandparent
‘The child, he carried his grandmother on back.’

(94) *adri* m-ua’i pa-ku*renang* nadru na *lalak*
NEG ITR-willing CAUS-follow those.NOM DF.NOM child
‘Those children were not willing to make her follow.’

On the other hand, for non-personal nouns, the demonstratives in the singular category are used regardless of whether the noun is singular or plural, as shown in (95) and (96). From the context, the nouns in these two sentences *tidrul* ‘wasp’ and *kiaumalan* ‘question’ are plural.

(95) *idru* na *tidrul*=la i, *tr<em>epa* m-ubii kana
that.NOM DF.NOM wasp=PERF TOP <ITR>aim.at ITR-fly DF.OBL
*idenan*
brightness
‘These wasps, they flew to the brightness.’

(96) *saygu* t<em>ubang* kandri *kana* telru-a *ki<a>umal-an*
able <ITR>answer this.OBL ID.OBL three-NPRS <RED>ask-NMZ
‘He was able to answer these three questions.’

However, there are exceptional examples that do not follow the pattern. In (97), *walak* ‘child’ is plural from the context, but a singular demonstrative is used; in (98), where the non-personal noun *suan* ‘dog’ is expected to be modified by a demonstrative in the singular category, a plural demonstrative is used instead.

---

10 Example (95) is extracted from Text 1 (40)-(44) in Appendix III. Some wasps were put into a drum before the drum was sealed with paper.
Those children of hers, they didn’t have food.

Our dog, from behind, it attacked those dogs.

4.5.3.2.2 Proximal, medial and distal

Three sets of demonstrative pronouns can be distinguished in terms of degree of distance. Those pronouns ending with the high front vowel /i/ indicate proximity to the speaker, and those ending with a high back vowel /u/ indicate distance from the speaker. The demonstratives that end with -(y)u indicate even greater distance from the speaker. According to Huang (2000b:103) and Tan (1997:37) the three-way distinction in Table 4.6 encodes location in relation to person. They assert that the second category (the medial category) is used when the named object is away from the speaker but close to the addressee. But the texts do not support their view. In one of the texts collected, in which both the speaker and the addressee were inside a traditional building and the speaker was explaining the structure and components of this building, the speaker used the medial demonstratives idru or idrunu to refer to object away from him (he pointed to the object at the same time), regardless of the addressee’s position. For instance:

That one that faces here, that one, a baluyabuy as we said.

That one, it is its beam as we said, and that one that faces there, it is its frame.

In these two sentences, idriyu or nadriyu would be expected in accordance with Huang’s and Tan’s analysis, because the named objects are away from both the speaker and the addressee (the speaker and the addressee were standing side by side), but the usage of the demonstratives is based solely on the distance from the speaker.

In each category there are both long and short forms. Huang (2000b:103) reports that the long forms are used when the object the demonstrative refers to is one among a group of the same kind, but does not give examples to show how this works. There are in fact examples showing that this analysis is not correct. For instance, in sentence (99), both the short form

11 In fact the addressee was standing by the informant all the time during the recording.
*idru* and long form *idrunu* are used to refer to the same object. Also, in (101), the long demonstrative pronoun is not used because the noun is one of a group; from context, it refers to the story that the informant has just told.

(101)  
\[
\text{driyama } idri\text{ni } i,\text{ }\text{t}_<\text{em}>\text{aturu } kana \text{ trau } kana \text{ adri} \\
\text{so }\text{this.NOM }\text{TOP }<\text{ITR}>\text{advice }\text{DF.OBL }\text{person }\text{DF.OBL }\text{NEG} \\
laman \text{ kantu }\text{ walak} \\
\text{compassionate }\text{DF.OBL/3.PSR }\text{child} \\
\text{‘So, this story, it is advice to those who are not compassionate to their children.’}
\]

From the data collected, it seems that a long form tends to be used when the demonstrative is the only small NP of the NP and a short form tends to be used when there are other small NPs. There are only two examples out of twenty tokens taken from texts in which the long form has another NP following it. On the other hand, most short forms have an NP following them. For example:

(102)  
\[
idrunu \text{ i, }\text{nanku } \text{ruma’} \\
\text{that.NOM }\text{TOP }\text{DF.NOM/1S.PSR }\text{house} \\
\text{‘That one, it is my house.’}
\]

(103)  
\[
idru \text{ na }\text{ bati } i,\ldots \\
\text{that.NOM }\text{DF.NOM }\text{tale }\text{TOP} \\
\text{‘That tale, …’}
\]

Puyuma speakers lengthen the high front medial vowel of a demonstrative (e.g. *idri:yu*) in the distal category to emphasize a long distance. The longer the vowel, the longer the distance.

### 4.5.3.3 Spatial deictics

Like demonstrative pronouns, three classes of spatial deictics are distinguished in terms of the distance of the location they denote. They are *kadri* and *kadrini* ‘here’, *kadru* and *kadrunu* ‘there’, and *kadriyu* ‘further away’.

Spatial deictics do not distinguish case and number. They may be used independently or with another locative NP following them. For example:

(104)  
\[
palu \text{ kadri } i,\ldots \\
\text{until }\text{here }\text{TOP} \\
\text{‘When he arrived here, …’}
\]

(105)  
\[
m-inatray \text{ kadru } tu=k<in>i\text{edreng-an} \\
\text{ITR-die there }\text{3.PSR=<PERF>lie-NMZ} \\
\text{‘It died there on its bed.’}
\]

If there is a locative NP following it, the locative noun phrase marker is sometimes missing. For example:

(106)  
\[
m-u-asal=mi \text{ drua kadri } i\text{ }\text{pabulu} \\
\text{ITR-go-move=1P.NOM }\text{come here }\text{LOC Pabulu} \\
\text{‘We moved here to Pabulu.’}
\]
4.5.3.4 Temporal deictics

I do not find many temporal deictics in the corpus. From the data I have it seems there are two members of this class: one has the form adru/adrunu, the other kadru/kadrunu. The second shares the form of the spatial deictics discussed in §4.5.3.3. Both temporal deictics denote a phase of time in the past.

(108) adrunu=driya kadri i drekal i, ...
    then=IMPF here LOC village TOP
    ‘At that time, in the village, …’

(109) kemay kadru=la, ...
    from then=PERF
    ‘From then on, …’

4.5.3.5 Verbal deictics

There are several verbal deictics, and they are derived from spatial deictics. One of them, kadru, which can be translated as ‘be there’, is very productive in expressing existential/possessive/locative meaning (§10.4.). For instance:

(110) adru i, kadru=la na palrakuan na ne-nem-a?
    then TOP be.there= PERF DF.NOM men’s.house DF.NOM RED-six-NPRS
    ‘At that time, were the six men’s houses already there?’

The other verbal deictics found in the corpus all have the intransitive marker <em> infixed, e.g. k<em>adri, k<em>adrini, k<em>adru, and k<em>adrunu. These forms are seldom used as a predicate. Only one example was found.

(111) k<em>adrini=mi=driya dra kakualrengan
    <ITR>be.here=1P.ECL.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL difficulty
    ‘We still have difficulties.’

More often, verbal deictics with <em> appear in a modifying construction. It is difficult to give them a clear meaning; they mean vaguely ‘a kind of’. For example:

(112) tu=sareteb-aw na k<em>adru na rami
    3.GEN=cut.off-TR1 DF.NOM <ITR>there DF.NOM root
    ‘He cut off such a kind of root.’

(113) uliya a k<em>adru a lringatra’
    exist ID.NOM <ITR>there ID.NOM gourd
    ‘There was such a kind of gourd.’
Verbal deictics may also be used to refer to properties (as in (114) and (115)) or to connect two events (116), or to modify an event (117).12

(114) pana’an i, adri=la k<em>adr<em>i dra asatr-an
in.fact TOP NEG=PERF <ITR>here ID.OBL high-NMZ
‘In fact, it is not this high.’

(115) asuwa=driyan i, a trakuban i, adri=la
when=IMPF TOP ID.NOM boys’.house TOP NEG=PERF
k<em>adr<em>n<em>i dra bulray
<ITR>here ID.OBL beautiful
‘Long ago, a boys’ house, it was not this beautiful.’

(116) an k<em>adr<em>u i, ta=sabung-ay=mu
if <ITR>there TOP 1P.ICL.GEN=compensate-TR2=2P.NOM
‘If that is the case, we would compensate you.’

(117) an k<em>adr<em>n<em>i pa-ra-ragan=ta=driyan i,
if <ITR>here CAUS-RED-erect=1P.ICL.NOM=IMPF TOP
puari=ta i, ka-ra-ruwa dra sa-bulran maku
slow=1P.ICL.NOM TOP ka-RED-can ID.OBL one-moon tag
‘If we build like this, we are slow, maybe it takes a month.’

4.5.3.6 Deictic expressions in discourse

When deictic expressions are used to refer to linguistic entities in discourse, two types may be distinguished: anaphoric demonstratives and discourse deictics. Diessel (1999:19) observes that anaphoric demonstratives are ‘coreferential with a noun phrase in the preceding discourse; they keep track of prior participants.’ Discourse deictics, on the other hand, are ‘used to link two discourse units: the one in which they are embedded and the one to which they refer’.

Let us first look at Puyuma anaphoric demonstratives. In (118) the anaphoric demonstrative idrunu ‘that’ is coreferential with the noun phrase tu=ruma’ ‘her house’, and in (119) kandru ‘that’ is coreferential with the noun kana lalak ‘child’.

(118) maumau tu=ruma’ a mi-a-puran i payuma,
only 3.PSR-house ID.OBL have-a-betelnut LOC Puyuma
na druma=driya i, unian dra mi-a-puran.
DF.NOM other=IMPF TOP not.exist ID.OBL have-a-betelnut
idrunu i, nanku ruma’
that.NOM TOP DF.NOM/1S.PSR house
‘Only her (my mother’s) house has betelnut trees in Puyuma. The others do not have betelnut trees. That one is my house.’13

12 Example (117) looks like a serial verb construction, but this is an unusual example where the nominative clitic attaches to the second verb instead of the first verb.
13 The context of this utterance is that the mother, after leaving Puyuma for a while, was telling her two sons how to identify their grandmother’s house when they went back to Puyuma.
‘That old woman’s box dropped, and when she was looking for it, the children escaped from her. She tried to chase them but couldn’t get them.’

Discourse deictics are verbs, and are used to connect two propositions. In (120) \textit{k\textasciitilde adru} ‘be there’ is freely translated as ‘this being so’.

(120) \textit{k\textasciitilde adru} la a ngai “\textit{t\textasciitilde engedr=ta dra unan i}', be.there=PERF ID.NOM word \textit{< ITR>kill=1P.NOM ID.OBL snake TOP ma-legi m-u-drekal” kema. \textit{k\textasciitilde adru} aw, me-redek=la ITR-taboo ITR-go-village say \textit{< ITR>there and ITR-reach=PERF na ngai i drekal} DF.NOM word LOC village

‘There was a rumour saying “We killed a snake, and it is a taboo to go into the village”. This being so, the rumour has reached the village.’

4.5.4 Numerals

4.5.4.1 An overview

The numeral system of Puyuma is complex in terms of its syntactic construction as well as its semantic distribution. Basically the system is decimal. Numerals used in serial counting from one to ten are bases for the derivation of numbers above ten. A list of numerals used in serial counting from one to ten is given below. Some numerals used to count numbers above ten are given for reference.

One to ten

\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{sa} ‘one’
\item \textit{drua} ‘two’
\item \textit{telru} ‘three’
\item \textit{pat} ‘four’
\item \textit{lrima} ‘five’\textsuperscript{14}
\end{itemize}

\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{nem} ‘six’
\item \textit{pitu} ‘seven’
\item \textit{walru} ‘eight’
\item \textit{iwa} ‘nine’
\item \textit{pulru} ‘ten’
\end{itemize}

Above ten

\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{pulru-sa} ‘eleven’
\item \textit{pulru-drua} ‘twelve’
\item \textit{pulru-telru} ‘thirteen’
\item \textit{pulru-pat} ‘fourteen’
\item \textit{pulru-luwatr} ‘fifteen’
\end{itemize}

\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{pulru-drua-pulru} ‘twenty’
\item \textit{telru-pulru} ‘thirty’
\item \textit{pat-pulru} ‘forty’
\item \textit{luwatr-pulru} ‘fifty’
\end{itemize}

\textsuperscript{14} It seems that \textit{lrima} ‘five’ is only used to refer to the number five; in counting objects, or in any derivations, the base for five is always \textit{luwatr}. 
4.5.4.2 Cardinal numerals

Different strategies are used when cardinal numerals are used to modify personal nouns and non-personal nouns. For non-personal nouns, the base is always suffixed by a non-personal classifier -a, and then optionally undergoes CV- or CVCV- reduplication. For example:

(121) unian dra pa-pat-a ami dra trakuban

not.exist ID.OBL RED-four-NPRS year ID.OBL boys’.house

‘There is no four-year-old boys’ house.’ (No boys’ house would be older than four years)

(122) kadru=la na palrakuan na ne-nem-a

there=PERF DF.NOM men’s.house DF.NOM RED-six-NPRS

‘There are six men’s houses already.’

(123) t<em>engedr=ku dra piu-pitu-a dra lrutung

<ITR>kill=1S.NOM ID.OBL RED-seven-NPRS ID.OBL monkey

‘I killed seven monkeys.’

(124) p-u-patraran dra telru-a ki<a>umal-an

CAUS-go-out ID.OBL three-NPRS <RED>ask-NMZ

‘He gave out three questions.’

Numerals modifying personal nouns are prefixed with the personal classifier mia-. For example:

(125) mi-walak dra mia-pat dra walak

have-child ID.OBL PRS-four ID.OBL child

‘They have four children.’

(126) na mia-luwatr i, m-inatray a lalak=driyan

DF.NOM PRS-five TOP ITR-die ID.OBL child=IMPF

‘The five (brothers and sisters) died when they were only children.’

Before we discuss the numbers above ten, two points require mention. First, from the above examples, it can be observed that a numeral may or may not cooccur with a further noun phrase. When the numeral coexists with a noun phrase, both the numeral and the noun are marked by the same case. Second, unlike demonstratives (§4.5.3.2), which always precede the noun phrase, the order of the numeral and modified noun is not restricted. Sometimes a numeral can occur after the noun it modifies, as shown in (122).

The expressions for numbers above ten show a number of complexities. First, cardinal numerals are different from the numerals used in serial counting. Special bases are used for some numbers above twenty, but they are all prefixed by the same affix maka-. Numbers in the left hand column use different bases, but numbers in the right hand column use the normal numeral bases.

15 According to Li (2006), most Formosan languages make such a distinction.
16 Except for sa ‘one’, which sometimes precliticises to the noun it modifies without suffixing -a. For example: sa-elung ‘a bundle’, sa-bulran ‘one month’.
Again, some informants make a distinction between personal and non-personal modification. The formula for numerals (above ten) used to modify non-personal nouns can be written as:

\[
\text{TENS} + \text{mi-sama } \text{‘have-remain’} + \text{dra} + (\text{RED-})\text{UNITS-classifier}
\]

For instance:

\begin{align*}
\text{muketrep mi-sama dra sa-a} & \quad \text{‘eleven’} \\
\text{muketrep mi-sama dra dru-a} & \quad \text{‘twelve’} \\
\text{makabetraan mi-sama dra walru-walru-a} & \quad \text{‘twenty-eight’} \\
\text{makatelun mi-sama dra na-nem-a} & \quad \text{‘thirty-six’}
\end{align*}

Some examples are given below:

(127) \[\text{an muketrep mi-sama mi-ka-drua dra dru-a}\] when ten have-remain have-ka-two ID.OBL two-NPRS

\begin{align*}
tu=ami & \quad i, ... \\
3.PSR=year & \quad \text{TOP}
\end{align*}

‘When they are twelve years old, …’

(‘Twelve’ can be literally translated as ‘ten and for the second number that remains two’.)

(128) \[\text{na muketrep mi-sama dra walru-walru-a tu=ami}\] DF.NOM ten have-remain ID.OBL RED-eight-NPRS 3.PSR=year

\begin{align*}
kana & \quad \text{babayan i, ...} \\
\text{ID.OBL} & \quad \text{female} \quad \text{TOP}
\end{align*}

‘The girls that are eighteen years old, …’

When modifying personal nouns, a different strategy is used. The formula can be written as:

\[
\text{TENS} + \text{kara-UNITS} + \text{dra} + \text{sama}
\]

For instance:

\begin{align*}
\text{muketrep kara-sa dra sama} & \quad \text{‘eleven’} \\
\text{muketrep kara-drua dra sama} & \quad \text{‘twelve’} \\
\text{makapitu kara-telru dra sama} & \quad \text{‘seventy-three’}
\end{align*}

For example:

(129) \[\text{ulaya a muketrep kara-sa dra sama a trau-an}\] exist ID.NOM ten kara-one ID.OBL remain ID.NOM person-COL

‘There are eleven people.’ (lit. ‘The persons remained are ten and one.’)

Some informants use the same strategy to modify both personal and non-personal nouns. For example:
When counting how many times an event occurs, par- is prefixed to the base. For example:

(132) *karuwa=mi=la kilengaw dra par-telrun,\textsuperscript{17} par-luwatr*
\text{can=1P.NOM=PERF listen ID.OBL par-three par-five}

‘We could have listened three times, or five times.’

4.5.4.3 Ordinal numerals

To form ordinal numerals, puka- is prefixed to the cardinal numeral, with the exception of *palibak* ‘first’. Sometimes, the stem is Ca- reduplicated (§3.4.2). For example:

(133) *drua=la m-u-sabak-a kana puka-ta-telru wa-dunun-an*
\text{come=PERF ITR-go-inside-PJ DF.OBL ORD-three go-phase-NMZ}

‘They went to the third phase.’

(134) **puka-telru** *i, a babayan*
\text{ORD-three TOP ID.NOM female}

‘The third one is a girl.’

For the ordinal numerals from twelve to nineteen, puka- is prefixed to the numbers two to nine, but not the tens. For example:

(135) *muketrep puka-enem na tilril*
\text{ten ORD-six DF.NOM book}

‘lesson sixteen; the sixteenth lesson’

4.5.5 Adverbs

Adverbs modify the predicate or the whole clause. Only three adverbs appear in my corpus, but they occur frequently in discourse. Unlike other categories, whose members all share certain morphosyntactic features, the adverbs discussed here share no such characteristics. The following list gives an overview of the forms and functions of these words.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>daw</th>
<th>‘why’</th>
<th>Interrogative adverb</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ala</td>
<td>‘maybe’</td>
<td>Epistemic adverb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ela</td>
<td>‘rashly’</td>
<td>Manner adverb</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{17} It is not clear why in this case *telru* ‘three’ becomes *telrun*. 
daw ‘why’ and ala ‘maybe’ appear sentence-initially, like verbs, but there are several features distinguishing them from verbs. First, they do not attract clitics, and they are morphologically invariable.

(136)  
daw ma-ladram=ku dra kemay isuwa
   why  ITR-know=1S.NOM ID.OBL  from  where
   ‘Why would I know where it is from?’

(137)  *
daw=ku ma-ladram dra kemay isuwa

(138)  
ala mar-adalep=ta=driyan kana sanasan
   maybe  RECIP-close=1P.ICL.NOM=IMPF DF.OBL  Green.Island
   ‘Maybe we were still close to Green Island.’

(139)  *
ala=ta mar-adale=driyan kana sanasan

Second, the verb following them can be transitive or intransitive, while a verb following another verb is always intransitive (§13.2.2.1).

(140)  
daw nu=tarama-aw
   why  2S.GEN=bully-TR1
   ‘Why did you bully him?’

(141)  
ala tu=pa-dawak-ay
   maybe  3.GEN=CAUS-poison-TR2
   ‘Maybe he was poisoned.’

The epistemic adverb ala often cooccurs with the tag nay (§4.5.6) in discourse. For example:

(142)  
ala k<em>uda nay i, na mu-sama=la i,
   maybe <ITR>how or TOP DF.NOM ACAUS -leave=PERF TOP
   sasaya=la idru na suan
   one=PERF that.NOM DF.NOM dog
   ‘Maybe something happened, what is left is that dog only.’

The possibility of daw and ala being clitics or prefixes is rejected because (i) they themselves form a phonological unit and they have stress, and (ii) there is often a pause between them and the elements after them.

The manner adverb ela ‘rashly’ has a rising intonation, and unlike most words, whose stress falls on the final position, ela is stressed on the first syllable.

18  The word ela has a rising intonation, and unlike most words, whose stress falls on the final position, ela is stressed on the first syllable.
A major reason why there are so few items in the adverb category is that in Puyuma concepts expressing ‘adverbial meanings’, such as quickly, slowly, seriously, very, often, etc. are typically expressed by verbs. They usually form a serial verb construction with the verb denoting the action (§13.4.3). For example:

(145) \[\text{puraket}=\text{ta s}[^{<\text{em}>}\text{anga} \quad \text{diligently}=\text{1P.ICL.NOM}<\text{ITR>build}\]
\[\text{‘We built diligently.’}\]

4.5.6 Tags

Two tags are found in my corpus. The tag \textit{nay} often cooccurs with the epistemic adverb \textit{ala} ‘maybe’ to mark uncertainty (§4.5.5). It appears clause-finally and has a rising intonation.

(146) \[\text{ala piya-\textit{traudr nay, piya-\textit{timulr, ala piya-ami}} \quad \text{maybe face-east or face-south maybe face-north}\]
\[\text{‘Maybe face the east, face the south, or face the north.’}\]

The tag \textit{maku} also appears in clause-final position and has a rising intonation. Its function is to help the speaker to draw the addressee’s attention and agreement to the proposition, as indicated in the following sentences.

(147) \[\text{ma-\textit{ulrid}=ta d}[^{<\text{em}>}\text{away, maku?} \quad \text{ITR-don’t.know}=\text{1P.NOM}<\text{ITR>make tag}\]
\[\text{ku}[^{<\text{a}>}\text{renang}=\text{ta dra saygu dra ma’idrang} \quad \text{ITR-fol ow}=\text{1P.ICL.NOM ID.OBL can ID.OBL old}\]
\[\text{‘We didn’t know how to build (a boys’ house), did we? We followed those old people who know how to build.’}\]

(148) \[\text{adri=}\text{ku karuwa m-u-isatr, maku? aw, ti=pa-karun-ay} \quad \text{NEG=1S.NOM can ITR-go-up tag and 1S.GEN=CAUS-work-TR2}\]
\[\text{i baeli} \quad \text{SG.NOM my.older.sibling}\]
\[\text{‘I cannot get up, can I? So I’ll ask my brother to do the work (for me).’}\]

(149) \[\text{mara-asatr na pasara’adr, maku? aw tu=altrak-aw} \quad \text{more-high DF.NOM Pasara’adr tag and 3.GEN=take-TR3}\]
\[\text{‘The Pasara’adr family are in a higher position, aren’t they, and so they took it.’}\]

4.5.7 Topic markers

In this grammar, the term ‘topic’ is used in the sense in which Vallduví (1992:47–48) uses ‘link’: it tells the addressee what the new information in the sentence relates to; it usually marks a discourse entity that is not mentioned in the immediately preceding discourse.

There are two topic markers, \textit{i} and \textit{mu}. They are always followed by a pause, as demonstrated below.

(150) \[\text{na sasaya tu=}\text{pa’uayan i, ta=ketreng-aw} \quad \text{DF.NOM one 3.PSR=custom TOP 1P.ICL.GEN=bring-TR1}\]
\[\text{‘Another custom, we bring them out.’}\]
idri na barasa mu, a re dean

this.NOM DF.NOM stone TOP ID.NOM foundation
‘The stone, it is a foundation.’

It is not clear what the difference is between these two markers. Another interesting fact about these two markers is that in the recently edited Puyuma textbooks, i appears only in Nanwang dialect, while mu is used in other dialects.

There are many structural units that can be topicalised, including a temporal adjunct, a locative adjunct, or an adverbial clause. However, with regard to arguments, only core arguments can be topicalised. Examples (152) and (153) show temporal and locative adjuncts being topicalised. Topicalisation of arguments is described in §8.4.1.3, and topicalisation of adverbial clauses is dealt with in Chapter 15.

asuwa=driyan i, ulaya a saya a dre kal
when=IMPF TOP exist ID.OBL one ID.OBL village
‘Long ago, there was a village.’

i sabak kana patrung trungan i, puka-i dra tidrul
LOC inside DF.OBL drum TOP put-TR2.IMP ID.OBL wasp
‘Inside the drum, put some wasps.’

4.5.8 Aspectual markers
There are three aspectual markers in Puyuma: the perfective marker =la, the imperfective marker =driya, and the frequentative marker =dar. Examples are given below:

tu=al rak-aw=la mi katagu in kana yawan
3GEN=take-TR1=PERF have-spouse DF.OBL chieftain
‘She was taken to marry to the chieftain.’

ma-ulrep=driya k<em>i-anger dratu ka-sanan-an
ITR-tired=IMPF < ITR>get-thought ID.OBL/3.PSR ka-stray-NMZ
‘She’s still worrying that he might get lost.’

drua=dar i takesi-an m-aya-a kanku
come=FREQ LOC study-NMZ ITR- seek-PJ 1S.OBL
‘It often came to the school to look for me.’

The morphological status of these aspectual markers is discussed in §3.3.3. Their syntactic function of marking aspect is described in §6.4.2.

4.5.9 Conjunctions
Conjunctions conjoin elements of the same grammatical type. Conjunctions found in Puyuma are:

aw ‘and/then’ conjoins noun phrases and clauses
kan/an/ane19 ‘when/if’ conjoins clauses
amuna ‘but’ conjoins clauses

19 These three forms are free variations.
Lexical categories

*driyama*  ‘so’  conjoins clauses
*laba*  ‘so that’  conjoins clauses

The conjunctions *aw*, *amuna*, and *driyama* are placed between the elements they conjoin, while the *kan/an/ane* is usually placed within the first of the elements it conjoins.

(157)  *mara-asatr na pasara’adr aw tu=alrak-aw na barasa*
more-high  Pl.NOM Pasara’adr and 3.GEN=take-TR1  DF.NOM stone
‘The Pasara’dr family were higher (in terms of social status), so they took the stone.’

(158)  *karuwa=ta=driyan s<em>anga dra abak-an dra tinalek aw dra irupan*
can=1P.NOM=IMPF  <ITR>produce  ID.OBL contain-NMZ  ID.OBL
rice and  ID.OBL dish
‘We can also produce containers for rice and food.’

(159)  *ane adalep=ta=la dra basibasi*
when near=1P.NOM=PERF  ID.OBL monkey.hunting.festival
*adri m-uai m-ekan na lrutung*
NEG  ITR-willing.to  ITR-eat  DF.NOM monkey
‘When the monkey-hunting festival is coming, the monkeys are not willing to eat.’

(160)  *salraw unian dra akan-an, driyama=la na sa-drekal-an i, k<em>iri-kirim dra akan-an*
very not.exist  ID.OBL eat-NMZ  so=PERF  DF.NOM
whole-village  TOP  <ITR>RED-economise  ID.OBL eat-NMZ
‘They were very short of food, so the whole village economised on food.’

Conjunctions can be further subcategorised as coordinators and subordinators. Of the four conjunctions listed above, only *aw* ‘and’ is used in coordination. More discussion of subordination/coordination and the use of these conjunctions is provided in Chapter 15 and Chapter 16.

4.5.10  Interjections

Interjections are uninflectable words that function as equivalents of entire sentences, especially of exclamatory sentences. They express an attitude toward a proposition or an event. In Puyuma they are prosodically distinctive. They always have a rising intonation and are always followed by a pause. Some examples are given below.

*ta!*  exclamation expressing the speaker’s not knowing the event in the earlier proposition
*iwua!*  exclamation showing the speaker’s surprise
*i!*  exclamation expressing the speaker’s doubt
*ah!*  exclamation showing the speaker’s sudden realisation of something
5 Noun phrase structure

5.1 An outline of noun phrase structure

This chapter describes noun phrase (NP) structures. An NP typically functions as an argument of a verb or as a nonverbal predicate. Because Puyuma NP structures are unusual and are somewhat different from other Philippine-type languages, I first use rewrite rules and tree diagrams to present them.

5.1.1 Common NPs

The rewrite rules of Puyuma common NPs are given together here for the reader’s reference. In these rules and in the following discussion, ‘NP’ is used to refer to the whole NP construction, which may consist of a number of structures for which I have coined the term ‘small NPs’. A small NP is referred to as ‘np’: it consists of a demonstrative (Dem) or of a noun phrase marker (Nmkr) encoding case plus an XP (content expression).

(i) \[ NP \rightarrow np, (np)^2 \]

(ii) \[ np \rightarrow \begin{cases} Nmkr + XP \\ Dem \end{cases} \]

(iii) \[ XP \rightarrow \begin{cases} N + \\ Num + \begin{cases} NP_{OBL} \\ NP_{LOC} \end{cases} \\ VP_{ITR} \end{cases} \]

1 Kroeger’s (1993) work on Tagalog and Tang’s (2006) on Paiwan and Atayal are the only pieces of work known to me which use tree diagrams to present the NP structure of the Philippine-type languages. Puyuma NP structure is different from Tagalog, Paiwan and Atayal, so I do not adopt Kroeger’s and Tang’s analyses in my study.

2 The asterisk in Rule (i) indicates that a (large) NP consists of one or more small NPs, labelled ‘np’. There is logically no restriction on the number of small NPs within one NP, but in the corpus I have found no NP that consists of more than three small NPs. Other abbreviations are: Nmkr ‘(case-marking) noun phrase marker’, Dem ‘demonstrative’, and Num ‘numeral’.
(iv) \[ NP_{OBL} \rightarrow \begin{cases} \text{Nmkr}_{OBL} + \text{XP} \\ \text{Dem}_{OBL} \end{cases} \]

(v) \[ VP_{ITR} \rightarrow (\text{NEG} +) \text{VITR}^* (+ NP_{OBL}) \]

In the remainder of this section I will present the rewrite rules with a commentary and examples.

**Rule (i): NP \rightarrow np, (np)***

An NP consists of one or more than one small NPs, as shown in (1) and (2).

(1) a. \[
\begin{array}{c}
\text{NP} \\
\text{np} \\
\text{Nmkr} \\
\quad \text{XP} \\
\quad \quad \text{N} \\
\text{na} \\
\text{DF.NOM} \\
\text{‘the dog’}
\end{array}
\]

(1) b. \[
\begin{array}{c}
\text{NP} \\
\text{np} \\
\text{Nmkr} \\
\quad \text{XP} \\
\quad \quad \text{N} \\
\text{ku=} \\
\text{1S.PSR} \\
\text{‘my dog’}
\end{array}
\]

(2) \[
\begin{array}{c}
\text{NP} \\
\text{np} \\
\text{Nmkr} \\
\quad \text{XP} \\
\quad \quad \text{VP}^\text{ITR} \\
\quad \quad \quad \text{N} \\
\text{na} \\
\text{DF.NOM} \\
\text{‘the big dog’}
\end{array}
\quad \quad \quad
\begin{array}{c}
\text{NP} \\
\text{np} \\
\text{Nmkr} \\
\quad \text{XP} \\
\quad \quad \text{N} \\
\text{na} \\
\text{DF.NOM} \\
\text{‘the big dog’}
\end{array}
\]

**Rule (ii): np \rightarrow \begin{cases} \text{Nmkr} + \text{XP} \\ \text{Dem} \end{cases}**

A small NP may be a case-marked demonstrative (§4.5.3.2), or it may consist of a (case-marked) Nmkr and an XP. A demonstrative may either stand alone as in (3), or occur with another small NP as in (4).
Chapter 5

Three things need to be explained. First, the order among small NPs is not fixed, with one exception — the demonstrative must occur initially. The order of other small NPs is flexible. Thus possible orders in (2) are na matrina na suan or na suan na matrina, and in (4) are nadrunu na malruwadi na ma’inayan or nadrunu na ma’inayan na malruwadi.

Second, because of the flat structure seen in (2) and (4), there is no morphosyntactic signal of the head. However, a ‘primary information bearing unit’ (PIBU, after Croft 2001:257–259) can often be identified on the basis of meaning. A PIBU is ‘the most contentful item that most closely profiles the same kind of thing that the whole constituent profiles’. It is the noun that denotes the class of the referent of the NP. For instance, in (2), na matrina na suan ‘the big dog’, suan ‘dog’, the PIBU, denotes the kind of referent to which ‘na matrina na suan’ belongs. On the other hand matrina ‘big’ is a modifier, in the functional sense that it more precisely specifies a particular referent of the NP (Croft 2003:187). However, not all NPs have a PIBU. In (5), the NP refers to a group of people, but there is no noun denoting people.

Third, there is case agreement among the small NPs within an NP, as shown by the twofold occurrence of the nominative noun phrase marker na in (2), the threefold occurrence of the nominative noun phrase marker na in (4), the threefold occurrence of the oblique noun phrase marker dra (6a), and the twofold occurrence of the nominative noun phrase marker a in (6b).
Among the Philippine-type languages known to me, this is a unique feature of Puyuma NPs. In other Philippine-type languages, only the first instance has an NP marker and others are introduced by a linker, as showing in the following Paiwan and Tagalog examples.

(7) **Paiwan** (Chang, H.C. 2006:160)
   a. *pu-alak tua macidil a vavayan*
give.birth-child OBL one LK female
   ‘She gave birth to one daughter.’
   b. *manu maran a icu a vavayan*
Intej exactly NOM this LK female
   ‘Then it turned out to be exactly this girl.’

(8) **Tagalog** (Kroeger 1993:182–183)
   a. *Kaya=ng bumili si=Manuel ng=bago=ng kotse*
   able=LK AV.buy NOM=Manuel GEN=new=LK car
   ‘Manuel is able to buy a new car.’
   b. *Hindi kaya=ng bayaran ni=Maria ang=bago=ng kotse*
   not able=LK DV.pay GEN=Maria NOM=new=LK car
   ‘Maria cannot pay for the new car.’

A Nmkr may be either a noun phrase marker, as in (4), or a possessor pronoun, as in (1b) and (9). In addition to marking the possessive relation, the possessor pronoun also marks the case of the element following it (§4.5.1.1). Thus, *tu* is a possessor pronoun functioning as Nmkr in (9).

(9) NP
   NP
      Nmkr
         tu=
            N
               NPOBL
                 walak
                    NmkrOBL
                       XP
                          kan
                             N
                                kalikali

          *tu=walak kan kalikali*

3.PSR=child SG.OBL Kalikali
   ‘Kalikali’s child’
An XP may be either a noun, a numeral, or an intransitive verbal phrase. If it is a noun or a numeral, it is optionally followed by an oblique-marked or a locative-marked NP. In (10) and (11) the XP is a noun and is followed (in bold) by an oblique-marked NP (encoding the possessor) and a locative-marked NP, respectively. In (12), the first XP is a numeral. Note that the possessor may be encoded by an oblique-marked NP alone (dra kawi in (10); this marks the possessor as indefinite), or by a possessor pronoun alone (ku= in (1b)), or by both a possessor pronoun and an oblique-marked NP (tu= and kan kalikali in (9)).

(10)  
\[
\begin{array}{c}
\text{dra} \\
\text{sa’adr} \\
\text{NP} \\
\text{XP} \\
\text{Nmkr} \\
\end{array}
\]

‘tree’s branches’

(11)  
\[
\begin{array}{c}
\text{kaniam} \\
\text{trau} \\
\text{NP} \\
\text{XP} \\
\text{Nmkr} \\
\end{array}
\]

‘our family members’ (lit. ‘our people at home’)
Sentences (13) and (14) are instances where an XP consists of a numeral followed by an oblique-marked NP and a locative NP respectively.

(13)

-na telru-a na kiping nantu d<in>away
DF.NOM three-NPRS DF.NOM clothes DF.NOM/3.PSR <PERF>make

kan nanali
SG.OBL my.mother
‘the three pieces of clothing that my mother made’
(14) **nadru na mia-drua i lrikudran**

those.NOM DF.NOM PRS-two LOC behind

‘those two behind’

A noun in an XP can be a morphologically simple noun or a nominalised verb. For instance, in (12), N in the second XP is a morphologically simple noun *kiping* ‘clothes’, whereas N in the third XP is a nominalised verb *d<in>away* ‘having been made’. The NP<sub>OBL</sub> of a nominalised verb XP (Rule iii) may either express the actor (*kan nanali* in (12)) or the patient (*kana walak* in (15)) of the event denoted by the nominalised verb. Functionally, a nominalisation with an infix *<in>* is used when a transitive (undergoer voice) clause (§4.2 and §8.4.4) serves as a modifier, i.e. as a relative clause (§5.6). The subject (the undergoer) of the clause is relativised, and the actor may be encoded in the same way as a possessor, as in (12), or may remain unexpressed when the actor is third person, as *na in-abak-an kana walak* in (15).

(15)

![Diagram](image)

Instead of a noun or a numeral, an XP can alternatively consist of an actor voice/intransitive VP, as shown in (16) and (17). An intransitive VP occurs when an actor voice/intransitive clause serves as a modifier (relative clause). The actor voice/intransitive VP in (17) is a serial verb construction, described in Chapter 13.
Rule (iv): \[ \text{NP}_{\text{OBL}} \rightarrow \left\{ \text{Nmkr}_{\text{OBL}} + \text{XP} \right\} \]

An oblique-marked NP may consist of an oblique Nmkr plus an XP, as in (18), or it can be an oblique-marked demonstrative, as in (19).
In (18), the XP under NP_{OBL} is an actor voice/intransitive verb mararengay ‘talking’. The same slot could be filled by a numeral, e.g. miadrua ‘two’, and then the clause would become tu=ngalrad kana miadrua ‘the names of the two (persons)’. Or, it could be filled by a noun, e.g. walak ‘child’, and the clause would become tu=ngalrad kana walak ‘the child’s name’.

(19)
Example (20) shows how Rule (iii) and (iv) lead to recursion of XP and NP_{OBL} (expressing the possessive relations).

(20) NP

```
    np
    /   \\
Nmkr     XP
    /     \\
  nantu  N
    |     \\
   XP
    |     \\
   NP_{OBL}
```

```
  kinatrayan  Nmkr_{OBL}
    |         |     \\
  kan  N     \\
    |     \\
   XP
    |     \\
   NP_{OBL}
```

```
inusabakan  Nmkr_{OBL}
    |         |     \\
  kan  N     \\
    |     \\
   XP
    |     \\
   NP_{OBL}
```

```
    kan
    |     \\
   N
    |     \\
semi
```

*nantu k-inatray-an kan tinataw kantu*

DF.NOM/3.PSR  ka-die-NMZ  SG.OBL  their.mother  DF.OBL/3.PSR

*in-u-sabak kan semi*

PERF-go-inside  SG.OBL  Semi

‘the death of the mother of the household which Semi married into’

(v) \[ \text{VP}_{\text{ITR}} \rightarrow (\text{NEG}+) \text{V}_{\text{ITR}}^* (\text{+ NP}_{\text{OBL}}) \]

A VP_{ITR} may consist of one intransitive verb, or more than one intransitive verb (forming a serial verb construction as in (17)). It may have a negator or an NP_{OBL} encoding the undergoer of the VP_{ITR}, as shown in (21).

(21) \{idri {na adri kiberay dra bini} ...\}

this.NOM  DF.NOM  NEG  get  ID.OBL  seed

‘This person, who didn’t get seeds …’

Again, the ordering of the small NPs within one large NP is not fixed.
5.1.2 The functional extension of na as a linker

In §5.1.1 we have seen examples showing case agreement among the small NPs within an NP. However, I have found some examples which contradict this assertion. For instance:

(22) taita na pa-la-ladram kanadri na telru-a-ami...
1P.NEU LK CAUS-RED-teach these.OBL LK three-NPRS-year
‘We, who teach these third graders …’

(23) m-uka ma-rengay-a kanadru na kur-dikes=driya kandru
ITR-go ITR-tell-PJ those.OBL LK get-hold=IMPF that.OBL
kana kiakarunan
DF.OBL job
‘He went to tell those people who got hold of that job.’

In (22) and (23), we would expect kana to occur instead of na. In such NPs, only the first Nmkr (or Dem) marks the case relation, and na no longer serves the function of marking case.

There are two possible analyses to account for the re-occurrence of an identical Nmkr in (2), (4) and (6) on the one hand, and the occurrence of a distinct linker na in (22) and (23) on the other. Does the absence of a distinct linker represent the normal situation, such that a functional extension of na as a linker in some NPs is an innovation, or are Nmkr-like forms occurring in the linker slot in fact linkers which sometimes agree in form with the Nmkr, as in (2), (4) and (6)? In other words, which is the innovation, what happens in (2), (4) and (6), or what happens in (22) and (23)?

There are two reasons for analysing what happened in (22) and (23), i.e. functional extension of na as a linker, as an innovation.

First, the situations where na functions as a linker are restricted. When the NP is indefinite (marked by dra or a), na is not acceptable. Compare (6), repeated here as (24), with (25). If na as a linker is the norm, we would expect the sentences in (25) to be grammatical.

(24) a. me-na’u=ku dra matrina dra utreutrem dra suan
ITR-see=1S.NOM ID.OBL big ID.OBL black ID.OBL dog
‘I saw a big black dog.’

b. amau a drenan a ma-kiteng
COP ID.NOM mountain ID.NOM ITR-small
‘It was a small mountain.’

(25) a. *me-na’u=ku dra matrina na utreutrem na suan
ITR-see=1S.NOM ID.OBL big LK black LK dog
‘I saw a big black dog.’

b. *amau a drenan na ma-kiteng
COP ID.NOM mountain LK ITR-small
‘It was a small mountain.’

Second, as mentioned earlier na functions as a linker in situations where the expected Nmkr of the non-initial small NPs is kana. Recall that in Rewrite Rule (iv) an NPOBL is also marked by an oblique noun phrase marker. For example, in (26), the NP consists of two
parts, both introduced by an oblique Nmkr. At first glance it seems that the NP consists of two small NPs, but from the gloss given kana enay is not a small NP, but an NP_{OBL}, which expresses a possessive relationship, not a modifying relation.

(26) m-uka=la kanantu rami kana enay
ITR-go=PERF DF.OBL/3PSR root DF.OBL water
‘They went to the fountain-head of the river.’

It is likely that in order to avoid possible ambiguity, when the NP is oblique, the non-initial small NPs are marked by na instead of kana, as is the case in (22) and (23).³

5.1.3 Personal NPs

The structure of a personal noun phrase is more restricted than that of a common noun phrase. A personal noun phrase is one which begins with a personal noun phrase marker (§4.3.1.2.2) or is a personal pronoun (§4.5.1). An NP that has a personal noun as its PIBU never takes a modifier other than a non-restrictive relative clause, as (27) and (28) show.

(27) a. t<em>a-takesi i senayan
<ITR>RED-study SG.NOM Senayan
‘Senayan is studying.’

b. *t<em>a-takesi i senayan na bulray
<ITR>RED-study SG.NOM Senayan DF.NOM beautiful
‘The beautiful Senayan is studying.’

(28) taita na t<em>a-ara-puyuma
1P.NEU DF.NOM <ITR>speak-Puyuma
‘we, who speak Puyuma’

³ Note also that among all the NP markers, only kana consists of two syllables. Another possibility is that the first syllable of kana is dropped in those cases where we have a distinct form for the linker.
However, the interrogative word *manay* ‘who’ (29) may take a modifier other than a numeral or a demonstrative. In (29), the interrogative word *manay* is marked by *i* (indicating personal nominative singular), but the modifier is marked by *na*, not *i*. If *manay* is marked by *kan* (personal oblique singular), the modifier is still marked by *na*. This suggests that *na* in these cases functions as a linker, as in (22) and (23) above.

(29) `ala i manay na pa-takesi kandru`

maybe SG.NOM who DF.NOM CAUS-study those.OBL

‘Maybe there is someone who can teach those (students).’

### 5.1.4 Locative NPs

The rewrite rules of locative NPs are given in (vi) to (viii).

(vi) \[ NP_{LOC} \rightarrow np_{LOC} (+np_{LOC}) \]

(vii) \[ np_{LOC} \rightarrow \begin{cases} Nmkr_{LOC} + N'_{LOC} \\ Dem_{LOC} \end{cases} \]

(viii) \[ N'_{LOC} \rightarrow \begin{cases} \text{Nplace name} \\ N + NP_{OBL} \end{cases} \]

---

4 When *manay* means ‘who’, it may be preceded by one of the singular personal NP markers *i* NOM or *kan* OBL. On the other hand, when *manay* means ‘what’, it may be preceded by one of the indefinite common NP markers *a* or *dra*. There is no distinction of number for *manay* ‘who’, and no definite/indefinite distinction for *manay* ‘what’. 
A locative NP other than a spatial deictic is introduced by the locative noun phrase marker \( i \). As in a common NP, there may be more than one small NP, here \( np_{LOC} \), but \( np_{LOC} \) is restricted to a spatial deictic (§4.5.3.3) or a phrase introduced by \( i \), as in (30). As noted in the previous chapter, the noun introduced by \( i \) is a place name (e.g. \( i \) puyuma ‘in Puyuma’), or a noun denoting a familiar location (e.g. \( i \) ruma ‘at home’), a direction (e.g. \( i \) draya ‘in the west’), or relational referent (e.g. \( i \) sabak ‘inside’). A place name introduced by \( i \) can only cooccur with a demonstrative, as in (30). Note that the spatial deictic must again be the first small \( np_{LOC} \) in the \( NP_{LOC} \).

(30)  
\[
\begin{array}{c}
NP_{LOC} \\
\downarrow \\
np_{LOC} \\
\downarrow \\
Dem_{LOC} \\
\downarrow \\
kadri \\
\downarrow \\
i \\
\downarrow \\
N_{place \ name} \\
puyuma
\end{array}
\]

\( kadri \ i \ puyuma \)

‘here in Puyuma’

Only a locative noun with a directional or relational referent may take a possessor (oblique) NP, as in (31) and (32). A place name cannot take a possessor NP. Example (32) shows a locative NP with both a spatial deictic and a possessor.

(31)  
\[
\begin{array}{c}
NP_{LOC} \\
\downarrow \\
np_{LOC} \\
\downarrow \\
Nmkr_{LOC} \\
\downarrow \\
i \\
\downarrow \\
sabak \\
\downarrow \\
N_{NMP} \\
kana \\
\downarrow \\
trabak
\end{array}
\]

\( i \ sabak \ kana \ trabak \)

‘inside of the box’
Chapter 5

The case and definiteness of a noun are signalled either by a possessive pronoun or by a noun phrase marker preceding the noun. Puyuma distinguishes three cases: nominative, genitive, and oblique (§4.2 and §8.2). The noun phrase marker also indicates whether the noun phrase is common or personal. Full paradigms of noun phrase markers and personal pronouns respectively are given and discussed in §4.3.1.2.2 and §4.5.1.

Number is specified by the noun phrase marker only in a personal proper noun phrase. Consider:

(33) \( \text{mu-lrelrep dra kualreng-an i nanali} \)
\[ \text{ACAUS-chase ID.OBL difficult-NMZ SG.NOM my.mother} \]
‘My mother was infected with a disease.’

(34) \( \text{tu=pu-kiping-ay na namali kay baeli} \)
\[ \text{3.GEN=CAUS-clothes-TR2 PL.NOM my.father and my.older.sibling} \]
‘They have my father and my brother wear (traditional) clothes.’

(35) \( \text{tu=karat-aw=ku dra yabereng} \)
\[ \text{3.GEN=bite-TR1=1S.NOM ID.OBL ant} \]
‘I was bitten by an ant/by ants.’

In common noun phrases, grammatical number is unmarked, as in (35), but semantic plurality can be signalled by reduplication (§3.4.3.2), as in (36), by suffixation of \(-an\) (37), or by both (38).

(36) \( \text{tu=lasadr-aw=dar i tralru-tralrun} \)
\[ \text{3.GEN=hide-TR1=FREQ LOC RED-grass} \]
‘She hid it in the field.’
5.3 Possessive constructions

Possessive constructions are constructions in which one referent is marked as possessing another referent. In some instances the semantic relationship between the two referents is not strictly one of possession, and so the discussion is not restricted to the semantic relationship of possession or ownership. Part-whole and kinship relations also fall into the domain of the possessive construction.

A possessive relationship can be signalled within an NP or predicatively within a clause. This section is concerned with possession signalled within an NP. Predicative possession is discussed in §10.4.4.

In possession signalled within an NP, there is a distinction between alienable and inalienable possession. Semantically, alienable possession is the kind of possession which can be terminated; for example, one’s possession of one’s goods is typically transferable to someone else. Inalienable possession is the kind of possession that cannot be terminated. Languages that make a formal distinction between alienable and inalienable possession often include both kinship terms and body part terms within the inalienable class, but in Puyuma the inalienable possession construction is only used for kinship relations.

A possessive construction typically contains two elements: a possessor and a possessed item, referred to here as the possessum. In the following discussion, I will first explore alienable possession, divided according to the coding of the possessor. Inalienable possession and distributive possession are discussed in the succeeding sections.

5.3.1 The coding of the possessor

I divide alienable possession into two types according to the encoding of the possessor. Basically, the possessor can either be coded as a pronoun (Nmkr) or as an NPOBL.

5.3.1.1 The possessor is encoded as a pronoun

If the possessor is a pronoun, it can be manifested as either a bound or a free form (§4.5.1). In addition to indicating the person and number of the possessor, the pronoun also carries the information carried by the noun phrase marker of a common NP, i.e. case and definiteness of the whole phrase. A bound form possessor is always nominative, as in (39b), whereas a free form possessor can be either nominative (39a) or oblique (40).

(39) a. nantu ngalrad
    DF.NOM/3.PSR name
    ‘his/her/their name(s)’

(37) ma-la-lemes nadru na lalak-an
    ITR-RED-disappear those.NOM DF.NOM child-COL
    ‘Those children were going to disappear.’

(38) sadru ku=‘ali-’ali-an
    many 1S.PSR=RED-male.friend-COL
    ‘I have a lot of friends.’ (lit. ‘My friends are many.’)
b. \textit{tu=ngalrad}
\begin{itemize}
\item 3.PSR=name
\end{itemize}
‘his/her/their name(s)’

(40) \textit{kanta ruma’}
\begin{itemize}
\item DF.OBL/1P.PSR house
\end{itemize}
‘our house’

5.3.1.2 The possessor is encoded as a personal or common noun

If the possessor is manifested as an NP\textsubscript{OBL} (cf. Rewrite Rule (iv)), the possessor follows the possessum. Usually, the possessor is manifested twice; as a pronoun in the Nmkr slot, and as an NP\textsubscript{OBL} following the possessum, as in (41) and (42). Sometimes, a third-person possessor only occurs once as an NP\textsubscript{OBL}, as in (43); this is only possible when both the possessum and the possessor are indefinite.

(41) \textit{tu=tiyal kana unan}
\begin{itemize}
\item 3.PSR=belly DF.OBL snake
\end{itemize}
‘the snake’s belly’

(42) \textit{tu=walak kan kalikali}
\begin{itemize}
\item 3.PSR=child SG.OBL Kalikali
\end{itemize}
‘Kalikali’s child’

(43) \textit{dra sa’adr dra kawi}
\begin{itemize}
\item ID.OBL branch ID.OBL tree
\end{itemize}
‘branches of trees’

The pronoun (Nmkr) before the possessum carries the case of the possessum, and the NP\textsubscript{OBL} after the possessum is always oblique.

When the possessum is a location noun, it is not preceded by a pronoun, but by the locative noun phrase marker \textit{i}, as in (44) and (45).

(44) \textit{i sabak kana trabak}
\begin{itemize}
\item LOC inside DF.OBL box
\end{itemize}
‘inside the box; the box’s interior’

(45) \textit{na dalran i nguayan kanmu ruma’}
\begin{itemize}
\item DF.NOM road LOC front DF.OBL/2P.PSR house
\end{itemize}
‘The road in front of your house’

5.3.2 Inalienable possession

Tsuchida (1995:795) reports that Puyuma is the only Formosan language that makes a distinction between alienable and inalienable possession. He finds that in Tamalakaw Puyuma there is a set of genitive pronouns used to designate kinship terms, or a body part word when it is used in a ‘figurative’ or metaphoric sense. For example:

(46) Tamalakaw Puyuma (Tsuchida 1995:797–798)
\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{nangnu zazek a lalak\text{-}u ziya mu},
\item your.NOM body LK young-2S.NOM still TOP
\end{itemize}
Hawlay ziya i matra-li
here.exist still LOC eye-my
‘Your figure in your youth still lies in my eyes.’
(‘I still remember you when you were young.’)

Unlike Tamalakaw Puyuma, which has a full set of pronouns designating inalienable possession, the Nanwang dialect has only a partial set, which only occurs with the few noun roots shown below (pronouns shown in bold face).

### Table 5.1: Inalienable possession in Nanwang Puyuma

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>first singular</th>
<th>second singular/plural</th>
<th>third singular/plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>grandparent</td>
<td>mu langmu</td>
<td>temu taw</td>
<td>temutaw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>father</td>
<td>nama langama</td>
<td>temama taw</td>
<td>temamataw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mother</td>
<td>nana langna</td>
<td>tina taw</td>
<td>tinataw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>older sibling</td>
<td>bae langbae</td>
<td>baeu taw</td>
<td>baetaw</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For the sake of convenience, I will call these special pronouns inalienable possessive pronouns to distinguish them from other sets of possessive pronouns. Inalienable possessive pronouns only co-occur with certain kinship terms (a subcategory of personal noun).

When we compare the inalienable possessive pronouns in Tamalakaw Puyuma with those in Nanwang Puyuma, the paradigm of inalienable possessive pronouns in Nanwang Puyuma is irregular in several ways. First, the bases to which the inalienable possessive pronouns are attached have irregular forms. Take the category ‘mother’ above as an example: the bases for the three persons are different, and the second person form has no inalienable pronoun attached. Second, these inalienable pronouns only co-occur with nouns denoting older-generation kin. Younger-generation kin terms have the possessive pronouns that denote common nouns. Compare:

(47) \( tu=wadi \) na babayan
3.PSR=younger.sibling DF.NOM female
‘their younger sister’

(48) \( tu=ruma’ kan temutaw \)
3.PSR=house SG.OBL their.grandparent
‘their grandmother’s house’

Third, there are no first person plural inalienable pronouns. That is, for expressions such as ‘our father’ or ‘our grandparent’, there is no inalienable pronoun, as shown in (49).

(49) \( ta=te<muwa>muwan \)
1P.PSR=<RED>grandparent
‘our grandparents (ancestors)’

---

5 Tsuchida (1995:799–802) points out that the first person singular genitive form -li in Puyuma is very peculiar. While u and law show some resemblance to the common pronouns mu=/=yu, mu=/=mu, or nantaw, -li looks totally different from ku=/=ku. However, this same form -li also occurs in Rukai (cf. Zeitoun 1997a, 2007), which is spoken to the west and the south of Puyuma. There is no genitive form *-ku observed in any Rukai dialect, and Tsuchida assumes that -li is a borrowing from Rukai. The origin of this set of pronouns, and especially the first person singular pronoun -li, deserves more investigation.
Tan (1997:36) and Huang (2000b:98) both claim that this set of inalienable pronouns only marks singular possessor referents,\(^6\) but from the example in (50) it is clear that for third person plural and singular the same form is used. Furthermore, in (51), from the context, the mother was talking to her two sons, so the pronoun -\(u\) refers to the plural ‘your’.

(50)  
\[
\text{asuwa}=\text{driya }i, \quad \text{uliya }\text{kadru-}a \quad \text{a } \text{malru-wadi.}
\]
\begin{align*}
\text{when} &= \text{IMPF} \quad \text{TOP} \quad \text{exist} \quad \text{live-PJ} \quad \text{ID.NOM} \quad \text{RECIPE-younger.sibling} \\
i &\quad \text{temamataw }i, \quad m-\text{uka }i \quad \text{tralrun} \\
\text{SG.NOM} &\quad \text{their.father} \quad \text{TOP} \quad \text{ITR-go} \quad \text{LOC} \quad \text{grass}
\end{align*}

‘A long time ago, there were two brothers. Their father, he went to the field (hunting).’

(51)  
\[
\text{tu}=\text{ruma’ } \quad \text{kan } \quad \text{temu} \\
3.\text{PSR} &= \text{house} \quad \text{SG.OBL} \quad \text{your.grandparent}
\]

‘your grandmother’s house.’

Like many Austronesian languages, Puyuma uses the same words, \textit{mu} or \textit{temuwan}, to denote both grandparent and grandchild. When one of these words is used to refer to a grandparent an inalienable possessive pronoun is used, but when it is used to indicate a grandchild a common pronoun is used. For instance:

(52)  
\[
\text{amau } \quad \text{tu}=\text{temuwan}=\text{yu} \\
\text{COP} &\quad 3.\text{PSR}=\text{grandchild}=\text{2S.NOM}
\]

‘You are her grandson.’

(53)  
\[
\text{m-uka}=\text{mu} \quad \text{m-utrangi-a } \quad \text{kan } \quad \text{temu} \\
\text{ITR-go}=\text{2P.NOM} \quad \text{ITR-visit-PJ} \quad \text{SG.OBL} \quad \text{your.grandparent} \quad \text{TOP}
\]

‘When you go to visit your grandmother, …’

Unlike the common pronouns, which also carry case and definiteness information, a pronoun of this category does not indicate the case role of the head noun it is attached to. For instance:

(54)  
\[
\text{a-uka}=\text{ku} \quad \text{me-na’u-a } \quad \text{kan } \quad \text{mul} \\
\text{RED-go}=\text{1S.NOM} \quad \text{ITR-see-PJ} \quad \text{SG.OBL} \quad \text{my.grandparent}
\]

‘I am going to visit my grandmother.’

5.3.3 Distributive possession

A special set of pronouns is used to indicate distributive possession. However, there are not many examples in the corpus, so the description here is somewhat preliminary. This set of pronouns only has plural forms. For the second person, there are apparently alternant forms. The distributive possessive pronouns are:

\[
\begin{align*}
karanangtanta &\quad \text{‘each of our own, our respective’} \\
karanangnemu/karanangmuymu &\quad \text{‘each of your (pl.) own, your respective’} \\
karanangtanta &\quad \text{‘each of their own, their respective’}
\end{align*}
\]

---

\(^6\) Some informants also made the same claim when I was eliciting forms.
These pronouns incorporate elements that look similar to common pronouns, such as *ta*, *nemu, muymu, and tav*, but they are treated as single morphemes here because *karanangtan* and *karanang* do not occur independently. Some examples showing their usage are given below:

(55) \(\text{an mulralriaban i, ameli na karanangtantalaw}\)
when sea.worship TOP NEG.COP DF.NOM DIST:their
\(\text{na palrakuan}\)
DF.NOM men’s.house
‘When doing sea worship, don’t their various men’s houses do it separately?’
(lit. ‘When doing sea worship, isn’t it their respective men’s houses?’)

(56) \(\text{an p<en>iya=ta leibaii i, m-uberek=ta}\)
when <ITR>finish=1P.NOM service TOP ITR-return=1P.NOM
\(\text{karananganta ruma’}\)
DIST:our house
‘After we finished the church service, we went back to our respective homes.’

It is not clear whether this set of pronouns can denote the case of the noun phrase in which they occur. In (55), a noun phrase marker precedes the NP, but in (56), there is no noun phrase marker.

5.4 NPs with a numeral or a quantifier

Numerals can either precede or follow the PIBU they modify, and there is also case concord between the numeral and the PIBU. In such cases, the numeral and the PIBU are small NPs within one big NP.

(57) \(\text{mi-walak dra mia-pat dra walak}\)
have-child ID.OBL PRS-four ID.OBL child
‘She has four children.’

(58) \(\text{mi-suan=mi dra suan dra sa-a}\)
have-dog=1P.NOM ID.OBL dog ID.OBL one-NPRS
‘We had a dog.’

As shown in the above sentences, the numeral and the noun it modifies are often marked for the same case. There are instances in which the noun phrase marker between the numeral and the PIBU occurs optionally. For instance, in (59) the second *dra* is optional. When the second *dra* is omitted, the order is fixed: the numeral must precede the PIBU.

(59) \(\text{p-u-patran dra telru-a (dra) ki<a>umal-an}\)
CAUS-go-out ID.OBL three-NPRS ID.OBL <RED>ask-NMZ
‘He gave out three questions.’

The omission of the second noun phrase marker is obligatory when the PIBU is ami ‘year’ or wari-an ‘day’.

---

7 The word *leibai* is a borrowing from Taiwanese and is used as a verb in this sentence.
Wider discussion of numerals is found in §4.5.4. Quantifiers such as ‘some’ and ‘many’ are stative verbs in Puyuma. They can function as a verbal predicate, as in (61), or as a small NP within a big NP, as in (62) and (63).

(61)\[\textit{sayma na paisu}\]  
\textbf{little DF.NOM money}  
\textit{‘The money is little.’}  

(62)\[\textit{sama na sayma na dare’i,}\]  
\textbf{be.left DF.NOM little DF.NOM earth TOP}  
\textit{‘Little land is left.’}  

(63)\[\textit{pabuwa=la dra manay dra sadru}\]  
\textbf{capable=PERF ID.OBL what ID.OBL many}  
\textit{‘She’s capable of a lot of things.’}  

The word \textit{peniya}⁸ ‘all’ is a floating quantifier. Unlike other quantifiers, it is not preceded by a noun phrase marker, as in (64) and (65).

(64)\[\textit{karuwa t<em>ubang na lalak peniya}\]  
\textbf{can <ITR>answer DF.NOM child all}  
\textit{‘All the children can answer.’}  

(65)\[\textit{ta=kan-aw=la peniya na kuraw}\]  
\textbf{1P.GEN=eat-TR1=PERF all DF.NOM fish}  
\textit{‘We have eaten all the fish.’}  

When the utterance consists of only an NP with \textit{peniya} as a reply to a question, \textit{peniya} always follows the PIBU, as in (66).

(66)\[a basikaw peniya\]  
\textbf{ID.NOM bamboo all}  
\textit{‘all bamboos’}  

5.5 NPs with a demonstrative

A demonstrative (§4.5.3.2) can be used independently as the only small NP within an NP or it may occur as one of the small NPs within an NP. When a demonstrative appears as one of the small NPs, it carries the same case as the PIBU, and it is always the first small NP of the NP. For example:

---

⁸ The word \textit{peniya} is also used in serial verb constructions (§13.4.2) denoting the termination of an action. For example:

\[p<en>iya=ku=la ma-rengay\]  
\textbf{<ITR>finish=1S.NOM=PERF ITR-tell}  
\textit{‘I’ve finished my talk.’}
When a PIBU cooccurs with a demonstrative and a numeral, the last element (either the small NP denoting the PIBU or the small NP denoting the numeral) is almost always marked by the nominative marker \textit{na}, regardless of whether the NP is marked for nominative or oblique case. Thus:

(68) \begin{align*}
\text{igelra}=\text{k}=\text{dar} & \quad \text{kandri} \quad \text{kana} \quad \text{dru-drua-a} \\
\text{embarrassed}=\text{1S.NOM}=\text{FREQ} & \quad \text{these.OBL} \quad \text{DF.OBL} \quad \text{RED-two-NPRS}
\end{align*}

{\text{na/*kana}} \quad \text{suan}

\begin{align*}
\text{DF.NOM/*DF.OBL} & \quad \text{dog} \\
\text{‘I often felt embarrassed over these two dogs.’}
\end{align*}

Some informants accept \textit{na} to mark all the lexical elements after the demonstrative. For instance:

(69) \begin{align*}
\text{kandru} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{mia-drua} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{malru-wadi} \\
\text{those.OBL} \quad \text{DF.NOM} \quad \text{PRS-two} \quad \text{DF.NOM} \quad \text{RECIP-sibling}
\end{align*}

‘those two brothers’

In examples such as (68) and (69), \textit{na} is grammaticalised as a linker and it loses its ability to mark case/definiteness. See also §5.1.2.

5.6 Relative clauses

5.6.1 An overview

Recall from §5.1.1 that a common NP consists of one or more small NPs (nps), and each small NP in turn consists of a Nmkr and an XP (Rule ii). An XP may be a noun (which may be morphologically simple or a deverbal noun) or a numeral. An XP is optionally followed by a locative or an oblique NP, or the XP may be an actor voice/intransitive verb phrase. This section discusses the constructions in which the XP is an actor voice/intransitive verb phrase, as in (70), or a deverbal noun, as in (71).

(70) \begin{align*}
\text{tu}=\text{pa-tiuatiu-ay} & \quad \text{ku}=\text{tranguru’} \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{bakis} \\
\text{3.GEN=CAUS-hang-TR2} & \quad \text{1S.PSR=head} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{basket} \\
\{\text{dra mi-abak dra sielras}\} & \quad \text{ID.OBL have-pack ID.OBL sand}
\end{align*}

‘He (the doctor) hung on my head a basket which contained some sand.’
The glosses given in (70) and (71) show that the parallel meaning in English is expressed via a relative clause. I call these Puyuma constructions ‘relative clauses’, but the reader should note that my use of the term ‘relative clause’ (RC) is broader than its English-related use.
In English, attributive constructions and relative clauses are structurally different, but this distinction does not occur in Puyuma. That is, ‘the good person’ and ‘the person who is talking’ are encoded by the same structure in Puyuma, as in (72). In (72a), *inaba* is a stative actor voice/intransitive verb, and (73) is an example of *inaba* used as a verbal predicate.

(72) a. na inaba na trau
   DF.NOM good DF.NOM person
   ‘the good person’

   b. na ma-ra-rengay na trau
   DF.NOM ITR-RED-tell DF.NOM person
   ‘the person who is talking’

(73) inaba na trau
    good DF.NOM person
    ‘The person is good.’

A Puyuma RC is thus a small NP, but has the internal structure of a verb phrase (nominalised or not), and is marked by the same noun phrase marker as the PIBU.

The following sentences show the case agreement between RCs and PIBUs.

(74) na trau na pu<a>raket i, puraket s<em>anga
   DF.NOM person DF.NOM <a>careful TOP careful <ITR>make
   ‘The people who are careful, they make (the spears) carefully.’

(75) amau a drenan a ma-kiteng k<em>a
   COP ID.NOM mountain ID.NOM ITR-small <ITR>say
   ‘It was said that it was a mountain that was small.’

(76) ta=tusuk-aw kana derederan kana mi-a-kutang
   1P.GEN=spear-TR1 DF.OBL spear DF.OBL have-a-spike
   ‘We speared them with the *derederan* spear which has a spike (on top).’

(77) ku<a>renang=ta saygu dra ma’idrang
   <a>follow=1P.ICL.NOM ID.OBL be.good.at ID.OBL old
   ‘We were following those old people who were good at it.’

The deletion of either one of the two case markers in either sentence will cause ungrammaticality, as shown in (78) and (79).

(78) *ta=tusuk-aw kana derederan mi-a-kutang
   1P.ICL=spear-TR1 DF.OBL spear have-a-spike
   ‘We speared them with the *derederan* spear which has a spike (on top).’

(79) *ku<a>renang=ta saygu dra ma’idrang
   <a>follow=1P.ICL.NOM be.good.at ID.OBL old
   ‘We were following those old people who were good at it.’

Sometimes the noun phrase markers preceding the modifier and PIBU may not be identical. In such cases, as noted in §5.1.2, the case role of the NP is indicated by the first small NP (by its noun phrase marker or genitive pronoun), and the rest of the small NPs are marked by *na*.
5.6.2 Types of relative clauses

Crosslinguistically three types of RCs can be distinguished in terms of the relative position of the PIBU and the RC: postnominal external RCs, prenominal external RCs, and internal RCs. Puyuma has postnominal external and prenominal external RCs. In some cases, there is no PIBU. In the following examples, the PIBU is underlined, and the RC is indicated by brackets.

Postnominal external RCs:

(82)  
\[ \text{m-atek dra basikaw \{dra belrakas\}} \]  
ITR-chop ID.OBL bamboo ID.OBL long  
‘He chopped a/some long bamboo/bamboos.’

(83)  
\[ \text{kurenang-la dra trau \{dra mi-ruma’=la\}} \]  
follow=PERF ID.OBL person ID.OBL have-house=PERF  
‘One (can) keep up with those who have families.’

Prenominal external RCs:

(84)  
\[ \text{m-uka \{kana mar-asatr\} kana tu’utr} \]  
ITR-go DF.OBL more-high DF.OBL pillar  
‘They went to the higher pillar.’

(85)  
\[ \{na sama\} \{na sayma\} \text{na dare’} \]  
DF.NOM rest DF.NOM little DF.NOM soil  
i, tu=riap-anay pia-timulr i, mutu-kekeng  
TOP 3.GEN=spray-TR3 face-south TOP become-plain  
The rest of the little soil, it was sprayed to the south, and it became a plain.’

RCs without a PIBU

(86)  
\[ \text{arii \{na mi-trepa s<em>anga\}} \]  
fast DF.NOM have-focus <ITR>make  
‘Those who have professional skill in doing this are fast.’

---

9 Keenan (1985:143–144) notes that there is a tendency across languages to favour postnominal RCs, and postnominal RCs are almost the only type attested in verb-initial languages. However, he also mentions that Tagalog and possibly other Philippine languages have both prenominal and postnominal RCs. Dryer (1992:86) also says that ‘Rel N order is more common among OV languages than it is among VO languages, and conversely for N Rel order’.
(87)  
\[\text{kiumal}=\text{ta} \ \text{\{dra mi-alup\}} \ \text{\{dra mi-a-kelep kadrini\}}\]
\[\text{ask}=\text{1P.NOM} \ \text{ID.OBL have-hunt} \ \text{ID.OBL have-a-nest} \ \text{here}\]
\[\text{‘We asked (some spirits) who live here, who make their rounds here.’}\]

A PIBU may be modified by more than one RC, as in (85). If there is more than one RC, the order of the RCs and the PIBU is free; all possible orders are acceptable.

(88)  
\[\text{na} \ \text{suan} \ \text{na} \ \text{matrina} \ \text{na} \ \text{utreutrem}\]
\[\text{DF.NOM dog} \ \text{DF.NOM big} \ \text{DF.NOM black}\]
\[\text{‘the big black dog(s)’}\]

(89)  
\[\text{na} \ \text{matrina} \ \text{na} \ \text{utreutrem} \ \text{na} \ \text{suan}\]

(90)  
\[\text{na} \ \text{matrina} \ \text{na} \ \text{suan} \ \text{na} \ \text{utreutrem}\]

5.6.3 Formation strategy

Semantically, there are two roles played by the PIBU; one in the matrix clause, and the other in the RC. I will adopt Keenan’s (1985) terminology and use NP\text{rel} to refer to the position in the RC, and to use NP\text{mtx} to refer to the position in the matrix clause. For example, in ‘I beat the man who stole my bike’ NP\text{rel} is in the agent position, and NP\text{mtx} is in the patient position.

Keenan (1985:146-154) noted that four ways of presenting NP\text{rel} occur across languages: as a personal pronoun, a special pronominal form peculiar to RCs, a full NP, or a gap. In Puyuma, NP\text{rel} is always a gap, but two different RC strategies are utilised according to whether the NP\text{rel} is an actor or not. If the NP\text{rel} has the role of actor, then the RC is manifested as a finite clause; if not, then the RC is a nominalised clause.

(91)  
\[\text{Actor}\]
\[\text{ane} \ \text{kirtrebung}=\text{ta} \ \text{dra} \ \text{ma’idrang-an} \ \text{\{dra ma-sangal\}}\]
\[\text{when} \ \text{meet}=\text{1P.ICL.NOM} \ \text{ID.OBL old-NMZ} \ \text{ID.OBL ITR-carry}\]
\[\text{dra} \ \text{basak}\] …
\[\text{ID.OBL sack}\]
\[\text{‘When we meet \textit{old people} who carry packages on their shoulders …’}\]

(92)  
\[\text{Patient}\]
\[\text{ala} \ \text{amuna} \ \text{sadru} \ \text{\{tu=tr<in>eke}l-r-an\}} \ \text{na} \ \text{asi}\]
\[\text{maybe because many} \ \text{3.PSR=<PERF>drink-NMZ} \ \text{DF.NOM milk}\]
\[\text{‘Maybe because the \textit{milk} he drank is a lot.’}\]

(93)  
\[\text{Instrument}\]
\[\text{tu}=\text{lasedr-aw=dar} \ \text{i} \ \text{tralru-tralrun} \ \text{\{nantu}}\]
\[\text{3GEN=hide-TR1=FREQ LOC RED-grass NOM/3.PSR}\]
\[\text{in-abak-an} \ \text{kana} \ \text{walak}\] \ \text{na} \ \text{padrekan}\]
\[\text{PERF-pack-NMZ} \ \text{DF.OBL child} \ \text{DF.NOM backpack}\]
\[\text{‘She often hid the \textit{backpack} in which she packed the child in the field.’}\]
Chapter 5

(94) **Location**

\{nantu p<in>uatel-an kana tangtang\} na
DF.NOM/3.PSR <PERF>drop-NMZ DF.OBL box DF.NOM
dare’ i, mi-ngalrad=la dra matang k<em>a
soil TOP have-name=PERF ID.OBL Matang <ITR>say
‘The soil (place) where the box was dropped, people said it got the name Matang.’

Of the four sentences (91) to (94), only the RC in (91) is manifested as a finite clause. In this sentence, \(NP_{rel}\) is the actor of the RC. In the other three sentences the RCs are all nominalisations.

An argument of the nominalised verb other than the \(NP_{rel}\) is manifested as a possessor, i.e. as a possessor pronoun, cliticised or free, and sometimes as an \(NP_{OBL}\). Thus the actor in (92) is encoded as a possessor clitic (\(tu=\)), the actor in (93) as a free possessor pronoun (nantu) and the theme/patient as an \(NP_{OBL}\) (kana walak), and the patient/theme in (94) as both a free possessor pronoun (nantu) and an \(NP_{OBL}\) (kana tangtang).

5.6.4 **Non-restrictive relative clauses**

The RCs discussed in this chapter so far have been restrictive, i.e. an RC functions to delimit the reference of the PIBU by specifying the role of the referent of that PIBU in the situation described by the RC. While a restrictive relative clause assists the addressee to identify the referent, a non-restrictive RC is parenthetical or foregrounded. The two are syntactically alike in Puyuma, but with four differences. The first is phonological: there is a clear pause after the antecedent in non-restrictive RCs, but not in restrictive RCs. The others are not categorical: in most cases the antecedent of the non-restrictive RC is either a free pronoun, as in (95) and (96), or a demonstrative denoting a human referent, as in (97). Furthermore, a non-restrictive RC has to be marked with \(na\), no matter what case the PIBU carries. Unlike restrictive RCs, the order of the PIBU and the non-restrictive RC is fixed; the PIBU always precedes the non-restrictive RC.

(95) an ma-ruwa=ta ki-ma-drayar taita \{na t<em>a>ara-puyuma
when ITR-can=1P.NOM get-ITR-discuss IP.NEU LK <ITR> speak-Puyuma
na paseket\} i, ala ma-ladram kilengaw
DF.NOM clear TOP maybe ITR-know listen
‘If we, those who speak Puyuma clearly, can converse, maybe they can understand (Puyuma).’

(96) dru=a ku ki-a-edek-a kanmu \{na ulaya kadri trakuban\}
come=1S.NOM get-a-bless-PJ 2P.OBL LK exist here boys’.house
‘I came to ask for blessings from you, who live here in the boys’ house.’

(97) idri \{na adri kiberay kan tayban dra bini\} ...
this,NOM LK NEG get SG.OBL Tayban ID.OBL seed
‘This person, who didn’t get seeds from Tayban …’

Note that in sentence (96), although the antecedent is in oblique case, the relative clause still begins with \(na\) in its use as a linker (cf. §5.1.2).
5.7 Coordinate NPs

A fuller discussion of NP coordination is provided in §16.3.1.

Two strategies are employed in coordinate NPs: the *kay* strategy is used to coordinate two personal nouns, and the *aw* strategy is used to coordinate all kinds of NPs. When *kay* is used, the whole complex NP is marked for plural case and number, but when *aw* is used, each individual noun must be marked separately for case.

(97) \[ \text{ma-ruwa-ruwa}=\text{ta} \quad \text{kire-etreb} \quad \text{kadri kana} \quad \text{babayaan?} \]
ITR-RED-can=1P.NOM get-object.of.courtship here DF.OBL servant
\[ k<em>a \quad \text{nadru} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{sabayan kay} \quad \text{kakubaw} \]
<ITR>say those.NOM PL.NOM Sabayan KAY Kakubaw
“How can we find a spouse here among the servants?” Sabayan and Kakubaw said.’

(98) \[ i \quad \text{namali} \quad \text{aw} \quad i \quad \text{baeli} \]
SG.NOM my.father and SG.NOM my.older.sibling
‘my father and my elder brother’
6 Subject choice, mood and aspect

6.1 Introduction

This chapter discusses the categories of mood and aspect, and how they interact with subject choice in Puyuma. It has been shown by many linguists, for example, Reid (1992), Zeitoun and Huang (1997), Zeitoun et al. (1996), Ross (1995), and Himmelmann (2005), that aspect and mood interact closely with the subject choice (‘voice’) system in Philippine-type languages. Similarly, in Puyuma, the three named categories are closely linked. It is impossible to separate a formative denoting subject choice from one denoting mood/aspect. That is, the formatives discussed in this chapter represent a combination of these categories. Different classes of verbs have different derivational processes to manifest these categories.

Within the domain of tense/aspect/mood, Puyuma is a ‘mood-prominent language’ in Bhat’s (1999) terminology. Puyuma speakers tend to view aspeccual and temporal notions in terms of mood category. There is a basic distinction between indicative (unmarked mood) and non-indicative, and within the indicative category a further distinction between realis and irrealis. There is no separate verbal morphology marking tense distinctions (e.g. the temporal future/non-future distinction is manifested by the irrealis/realis dichotomy), and many aspectual notions are expressed via aspectual clitics, while most mood categories are grammaticalised and expressed by verbal morphology. Table 6.1 gives a brief overview of the verbal morphology of subject choice, mood and aspect.

Table 6.1: Verbal morphology of subject choice, mood, and aspect

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Indicative</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Unmk</th>
<th>TR (AV)</th>
<th>TR1 (PV)</th>
<th>TR2 (LV)</th>
<th>TR3 (CV)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>ITR (AV)</td>
<td>TR1 (PV)</td>
<td>TR2 (LV)</td>
<td>TR3 (CV)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>M-V\textsuperscript{1},V-aw,V-ay,V-anay</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>M-Ca-V,Ca-V-aw,Ca-V-ay,Ca-V-anay</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>M-Ca-Ca-V,Ca-Ca-V-aw,Ca-Ca-V-ay,Ca-Ca-V-anay</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrealis</td>
<td>Ca-V</td>
<td>Ca-V-i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Non-indicative</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imperative</td>
<td>V</td>
<td>V-u,V-i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hortative</td>
<td>M-V-a</td>
<td>—,—</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{1} The capital M here represents various alternants, including <em>, me-, m-, ma- and a zero affix, whose occurrence depends on both phonological environments (§2.6.1) and semantics. The capital V here represents the verb stem.
Subject choice, mood and aspect

Table 6.1 presents only those categories that are manifested by verbal morphology. Other modal/aspectual categories that are not expressed by verbal morphology (e.g. some aspectual notions are manifested by clitics) or do not encode subject choice alternations (e.g. some mood categories are expressed by pronouns or affixes and do not show subject choice alternations) will be discussed in the relevant sections. Aspectual clitics are discussed in §6.4.2; the modal formatives *ti* and *paka-* are discussed in §6.3.2.2 and §6.3.2.3, respectively.

I describe the subject choice system in §6.2. The categories of mood and aspect are described in §6.3 and §6.4 respectively. Intransitive verbs divide into seven classes, in each of which the verbal derivations are manifested differently. An account of these different classes of verbs in terms of their verbal derivations is presented in §6.5, which is followed by a description of the functions of *ka-* in §6.6.

6.2 Subject choice

Like many Philippine-type languages, Puyuma makes what seems to be a four-way distinction in subject choice. For the moment I will again use the terms actor voice (AV), patient voice (PV), locative voice (LV), and conveyance voice (CV), because the semantic role of the subject is important in the discussion. But I will show in §8.4.4 that PV, LV and CV are all transitive, whilst AV is intransitive. The voices are illustrated in the following elicited sentences:

(1) *tr<em>*akaw dra paisu i isaw
   <AV>steal ID.OBL money SG.NOM Isaw
   ‘Isaw stole money.’

(2) *tu=*trakaw-*aw na paisu kan isaw
   3.GEN=steal-PV DF.NOM money SG.OBL Isaw
   ‘Isaw stole the money.’

(3) *tu=*trakaw-*ay=ku dra paisu kan isaw
   3.GEN=steal-LV=1S.NOM ID.OBL money SG.OBL Isaw
   ‘Isaw stole money from me.’

(4) *tu=*trakaw-*anay i tinataw dra paisu
   3.GEN=steal-CV SG.NOM his.mother ID.OBL money
   ‘He stole money for his mother.’

It is often claimed by Austronesianists, e.g. Schachter (1987), French (1988), Zeitoun and Huang (1997), Himmelmann (2002, 2005), among others, that in a Philippine-type voice system, the semantic role of the subject (nominative argument) is indicated by an affix on the verb. Thus, AV signals that the subject is actor, PV indicates that the subject is patient, LV signals that the subject is location, and CV indicates that the subject is the conveyed theme. However, some studies (e.g. Ross and Teng 2005a; Yeh 2004) reveal that there is no one-to-one correspondence between the different undergoer-voice (i.e. PV/LV/CV) affixes\(^2\) and the semantic role of the subject that a given affix marks.

\(^2\) Note that patient voice, locative voice, and conveyance voice are often called non-actor voices or NAV by Formosanists.
The semantic role of the subject with each undergoer-voice affix is variable. For instance, the subject of the verb taking the LV suffix -ay can be a patient (5), a source (6), a goal/location (7), or a causee (8).

(5) \( tu=\text{salpit-ay}=\text{ku} \)
3.GEN=flog-LV=1S.NOM
‘He flogged me.’

(6) \( tu=\text{trakaw-ay}=\text{ku} \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{paisu} \)
3.GEN=steal-LV=1S.NOM ID.OBL money
‘He stole money from me.’

(7) \( tu=\text{u-sabak-ay} \quad \text{nanta} \quad \text{drekal} \)
3.GEN=go-inside-LV DF.NOM/1P.PSR village
‘They invaded our village.’

(8) \( tu=\text{pasisi-ay}=\text{ku} \quad \text{pa-karun} \)
3.GEN=force-LV=1S.NOM CAUS-work
‘She forced me to work.’

Likewise, the subject of the verb taking the CV suffix -anay can be a beneficiary (9), a goal (10), an instrument (11), a conveyed theme (12)–(13), or something whose semantic role is difficult to decide, as in (14) and (15).

(9) \( nu=\text{ba’itr-anay}=\text{ku} \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{tralrun?} \)
2S.GEN=burn-CV=1S.NOM ID.OBL grass
‘Have you burned some grass for me?’

(10) \( tu=\text{tara-payran-anay}=\text{ta} \quad t<em>\text{ubang} \)
3.GEN=speak-Taiwanese-CV=1P.ICL.NOM AV answer
‘They answered us in Taiwanese.’

(11) \( ta=\text{liputr-anay} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{bira’} \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{kuraw} \)
1P.ICL.GEN=wrap-CV DF.NOM leaf ID.OBL fish
‘We wrapped fish with the leaf.’

(12) \( an \quad tu=\text{balri-anay} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{trakuban} \quad i, \quad \text{mu-trereb} \quad \text{when} \quad 3.GEN=\text{wind-CV} \quad \text{DF.NOM} \quad \text{boys’} \quad \text{house} \quad \text{TOP} \quad \text{ACAUSS-fell} \)
‘When the boys’ house was blown by wind, it fell.’

(13) \( tu=\text{atel-anay} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{ma’idrang-an} \quad i \quad \text{drena-drenan} \)
3.GEN=throw-CV DF.NOM old-NMZ LOC RED -mountain
‘They threw the old person out into the mountains.’

(14) \( ku=\text{lukluk-anay} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{kinsas} \)
1S.GEN=wrestle-CV DF.NOM policeman
‘I wrestled with the policeman.’

(15) \( tu=\text{trukul-anay} \quad tu=\text{drakur} \)
3.GEN=carry.on.back-CV 3.PSR=back
‘He hunched his back.’

The above examples show that the voice affix does not correlate strongly with the semantic role of patient, locative, or conveyed theme.
There exist asymmetries between AV clauses on the one hand and PV/LV/CV (undergoer voice) clauses on the other. The asymmetries can be observed in the following facts. First, in the morphology, while the undergoer voice markers are suffixes (i.e. -aw, -ay, -anay), the AV markers are either prefixes or infixes (i.e. <em>, m-, me-, ma-). Second, AV verbs and undergoer voice verbs have different argument structures. While AV verbs have a subject and optionally an oblique argument, there is always a genitive pronoun procliticised to a undergoer voice verb.

Ross (2006) points out that among undergoer voice clauses, there is a need for a further distinction between the two-argument PV clause and the three-argument LV/CV clauses in Philippine-type languages. However, in Puyuma, LV and CV clauses may have two arguments, as in (5), (7), (8), (14) and (15), or three arguments, as in (6), (9) and (11).

The choice among the two-argument PV, LV, and CV is to a great extent related to the degree to which the participant is affected by the action denoted by the verb. For instance, the subject of verbs in a PV clause is generally permanently/severely affected by the action, whereas the subject of verbs in a LV clause is less affected, and the subject of verbs in a CV clause is the least affected. For example, selap ‘to sweep’ has both PV and LV forms, exemplified in (16) and (17). The subject na tilril ‘the book’ is swept away in (16), but is only swept on the surface in (17).

(16) \[ ku=selap-aw=la na tilril \]
\[ 1S.GEN=sweep-PV=PERF DF.NOM book \]
‘I’ve swept the books away.’

(17) \[ ku=selap-ay na tilril \]
\[ 1S.GEN=sweep-LV DF.NOM book \]
‘I swept (dust) off the book.’

The three-argument LV and CV clauses are applicative-like, as they promote an adjunct into undergoer position, which in Puyuma means subject position. The patient of LV or CV typically remains but is oblique. For instance, in a PV sentence like (18), bira’ ‘leaf’ is an instrumental adjunct, but in the CV sentence (19), it is promoted to the subject position and marked nominative. Similarly, in (20), isaw denotes the location and is an adjunct, and in (21) is promoted to the subject position.

(18) \[ ku=lriputr-aw na kuraw dra bira’ \]
\[ 1S.GEN=wrap-PV DF.NOM fish ID.OBL leaf \]
‘I wrapped the fish with leaves.’

(19) \[ ku=lriputr-anay dra kuraw na bira’ \]
\[ 1S.GEN=wrap-CV ID.OBL fish DF.NOM leaf \]
‘I wrapped fish with the leaves.

(20) \[ ku=trakaw-aw na paisu kan isaw \]
\[ 1S.GEN=steal-PV DF.NOM money SG.OBL Isaw \]
‘I stole the money from Isaw.’

(21) \[ ku=trakaw-ay dra paisu i isaw \]
\[ 1S.GEN=steal-LV ID.OBL money SG.OBL Isaw \]
‘I stole money from Isaw.’
The patient, *kuraw* ‘fish’ and *paisu* ‘money’, is marked oblique in (19) and (21) respectively. However, this does not mean they have the same syntactic status as that of the oblique-marked adjuncts *bira* ‘leaf’ in (18) and *isaw* in (20). Oblique-marked patients are required by verbal valency, and their definiteness will affect the choice of subject. A comparison between oblique-marked patients (PL\textsuperscript{OBL}) and other adjuncts is made in §8.4.1.6.

### 6.3 Mood

Table 6.1 shows that there is a distinction between indicative and non-indicative mood in Puyuma. The indicative mood is used to affirm, deny, or inquire about a factual statement. On the other hand, non-indicative mood is used to make a command, a request, or a suggestion.

In §6.3.1, I first investigate the subcategories of indicative mood, and then in §6.3.2, several subcategories of non-indicative mood are explored.

#### 6.3.1 Indicative category

The most important distinction within the indicative mood category is between realis and irrealis. We mentioned earlier that mood and aspect closely interact with subject choice (‘voice’) in many Formosan languages. Take the verb *trakaw* ‘steal’ as an instance:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ITR (AV)</th>
<th>TR1 (PV)</th>
<th>TR2 (LV)</th>
<th>TR3 (CV)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Realis</td>
<td>Unmk</td>
<td>tr&lt;em&gt;akaw</td>
<td>trakaw-aw</td>
<td>trakaw-ay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PROG</td>
<td>tr&lt;em&gt;a-trakaw</td>
<td>trakaw-aw</td>
<td>trakaw-ay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>DUR</td>
<td>tr&lt;em&gt;a-trakaw</td>
<td>trakaw-aw</td>
<td>trakaw-ay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrealis</td>
<td></td>
<td>tra-trakaw</td>
<td>tra-trakaw-i</td>
<td>tra-trakaw-an</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

As the above paradigm shows, a four-way distinction is made for events in the realis mood, but those in the irrealis mood exhibit only a three-way distinction.

Another difference between the two classes is in their forms. In realis mood the intransitive is marked by the infix <em>, but in the irrealis it is zero-marked.

An event in the realis mood must have happened or still be happening. Subcategories of morphological aspect are discussed in §6.4.1. An event in the irrealis mood is one that has not happened yet. Because of this, irrealis mood is most often used to convey a future implication. For instance:

(22) \( tu=\text{tra-trakaw-i} \quad \text{idru} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{palridrin} \)

3.GEN=RED-steal-TR2 that.NOM DF.NOM car

‘He will steal that car.’

(23) \( tu=\text{ba-bulu-an} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{barasa} \quad \text{kana} \quad \text{kali} \)

3.GEN=RED-throw-TR3 DF.NOM stone DF.OBL river

‘He will throw the stone into the river.’

The irrealis mood in the examples above not only gives us the future implication; it also denotes intention and desire.
Irrealis mood can also have non-future reference. In the following two examples, it is used in counterfactual contexts:

(24)  *an me-na’u=ku kantaw adru i, adri=ku ra-rengay*

when ITR-see=1S.NOM 3S.OBL  then TOP NEG=1S.NOM RED-tell

‘If I had seen her at that time, I wouldn’t have told him.’

(25)  *pana’an i, a-uka i tayhok i pilay adaman*

true TOP RED-go LOC Taipei SG.NOM Pilay yesterday

‘Pilay should have gone to Taipei yesterday (but she didn’t).’

6.3.2  Non-indicative mood

Two categories of non-indicative mood are distinguished: imperative and hortative. Imperatives are discussed in §12.2. Hortatives are usually associated with projective verb forms, and thus they are discussed together in §6.3.2.1. In addition to these two categories, I examine the usage of the special first person genitive pronoun *ti=*

in §6.3.2.2 and the use of *paka-* in §6.3.2.3.

6.3.2.1  Hortative mood and the projective marker -a

Projective verb forms are derived by suffixing -a to an intransitive verbal stem. They have two basic functions. Firstly, they are use to express hortative mood, as in (26) and (27).

(26)  *mare-babulras-a=ta*

RECIP-borrow-PJ=1P.ICL.NOM

‘Let’s exchange!’

(27)  *tr<em>ekelr-a=ta*

<ITR>drink-PJ=1P.ICL.NOM

‘Let’s drink!’

Secondly, verbs following motion verbs in SVCs (§13.4.4.2), such as ‘come’ and ‘go’ also take this verb form, as in the following sentences:

(28)  *drua-drua me-na’u-a a trau*

RED-come ITR-see-PJ ID.NOM person

‘Many people came to see.’

(29)  *ala m-uka kurapet-a nadru na samaya na drekal*

maybe ITR-go unite-PJ those.NOM DF.NOM some DF.NOM village

‘Maybe this portion of the villages went and united together.’

6.3.2.2  The pronominal clitic ti=

In addition to the basic genitive pronominal proclitics (§4.5.1.1), there is one more genitive enclitic, *ti=*, which is used to code desiderative mood. It is only used for those events where the agent is first person singular.

(30)  *ti=pa-karun-ay i baeli i nanshio*

1S.GEN=CAUS-work-TR2 SG.NOM my.older.sibling SG.NOM Nanshio

‘I (want to/will) ask my older brother Nanshio to work.’
From the above examples we see that \( \text{ti=} \) denotes a strong sense of volition. It is procliticised to a realis verb form even though the meaning is clearly irrealis. Another peculiar feature of \( \text{ti=} \) is that when it does cooccur with an irrealis verb form, most informants do not accept the verb with any transitive marker, which means it violates our generalisation that transitive verbs are always marked by one of the transitive suffixes. For example:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{(32)} & \quad \text{an pameli=} & \text{yu} & \text{m-asal } & \text{i, } & \text{ti=} & \text{ka-dra-dreki=} & \text{yu} \\
& \quad \text{if wrong=} & \text{2S.NOM} & \text{ITR-again TOP} & \text{1S.GEN=} & \text{ka-RED-scold=} & \text{2S.NOM} \\
& \quad \text{‘If you do it wrong again, I will scold you.’}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{(33)} & \quad \text{adri } & \text{ti=} & \text{ta-tengedr=} & \text{yu} & \text{dranu} & \text{b<in>} & \text{a-betra’-an} \\
& \quad \text{NEG} & \text{1S.GEN=} & \text{RED-punish=} & \text{2S.NOM} & \text{ID.OBL/2S.PSR} & \text{<PERF>} & \text{RED-fake-NMZ} \\
& \quad \text{‘I won’t punish you for your lies.’}
\end{align*}
\]

For some informants, the forms in (32) and (33) and the expected form \( \text{ti=} \text{ka-dra-dreki-i=} \text{yu} \) and \( \text{ti=} \text{ta-tengedr-i=} \text{yu} \) are both acceptable, but they cannot identify any difference between them. More research is needed to pin down the function and meaning of \( \text{ti=} \) more exactly.

### 6.3.2.3 \( \text{paka-} \)

The prefix \( \text{paka-} \) attaches to dynamic verbs, and only appears in the negative construction, indicating that the actor has a strong intention to do something but is unable to accomplish the action. For example:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{(34)} & \quad \text{adri=} & \text{la } & \text{paka-} & \text{lrelrep idru} & \text{na} & \text{ma’idrang} \\
& \quad \text{NEG=} & \text{PERF MOOD-chase that.NOM DF.NOM old} \\
& \quad \text{‘The old person wanted to chase (them), but was not able to.’}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{(35)} & \quad \text{adri } & \text{paka-tenges dra} & \text{kawi} \\
& \quad \text{NEG MOOD-bind ID.OBL timber} \\
& \quad \text{‘He wanted but was unable to bind the timber.’}
\end{align*}
\]

### 6.4 Aspect

Aspect may be signalled by aspectual clitics or by verbal morphology in Puyuma. There are three aspectual clitics, \( =\text{la} \) (marking perfective), \( =\text{driya} \) (marking imperfective), and \( =\text{dar} \) (marking frequentative). With regard to verbal morphology, indicative verb forms consisting only of the verbal stem plus a subject-choice affix (\( -\text{M-} \) intransitive, suffixes marking transitive verbs) are unmarked for aspect. On the other hand, indicative forms in Table 6.1 which have \( \text{Ca-} \) reduplication (\( §3.4.2 \)) or \( \text{a-} \) affixation (\( §3.4.2.3 \) and \( §6.5 \)) are typically used to indicate progressive aspect. Verb forms with serial reduplication (\( \text{Ca-Ca-} \))

---

3 In §9.2.1, a form \( \text{paka-} \) is analysed as a bimorphemic element \( \text{pa-ka-} \) used in causative construction. The affix \( \text{paka-} \) discussed here is distinct from but homophonous with the causative marker.

5 The word \( \text{kurenang} \) has the same form \( \text{kuarenang} \) for irrealis and progressive. In this sentence, we can tell it is irrealis from the appearance of \( \text{aru} \) ‘will’.
reduplication, §3.4.6.1) are typically used to express durative aspect. A voice-marked stem with Ca- reduplication is referred to as the progressive form, and a voice-marked stem with serial reduplication is referred to as the durative form, each according to its typical use for dynamic verbs.

### 6.4.1 Morphological aspect

The following table gives a paradigm of the realis forms of the verb *trakaw* ‘to steal’.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ITR (AV)</th>
<th>TR1 (PV)</th>
<th>TR2 (LV)</th>
<th>TR3 (CV)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Realis</strong></td>
<td>Unmarked</td>
<td><em>trakaw-aw</em></td>
<td><em>trakaw-ay</em></td>
<td><em>trakaw-anay</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PROG</td>
<td><em>trakaw-aw</em></td>
<td><em>trakaw-ay</em></td>
<td><em>trakaw-anay</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>DUR</td>
<td><em>trakaw-aw</em></td>
<td><em>trakaw-ay</em></td>
<td><em>trakaw-anay</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### 6.4.1.1 Unmarked forms

Verbs unmarked for aspect are formed with a verbal stem plus a subject-choice affix. In clauses with an atelic verb, the unmarked form can have two temporal readings in the absence of an aspectual marker or temporal adjunct. For example, (36) and (37) can be interpreted as present or past.

(36)  
ma-kiteng i pilay
ITR-small SG.NOM Pilay
‘Pilay is/was small.’

(37)  
ma-tengadraw i nanali
ITR-sit SG.NOM my.mother
‘My mother is/was seated.’

Ambiguity seldom occurs, because we usually get the appropriate reading from either the context or from a temporal adjunct or an aspectual marker. However, when an event is designated by a telic verb, and there is no temporal adjunct or aspectual marker, it must be interpreted as past. For instance:

(38)  
me-na’u dra unan i uma’
ITR-see ID.OBL snake LOC farm
‘He saw a snake on the farm.’

(39)  
tu=adras-aw tu=d<in>=adukur dra trau
3.GEN=lift-TR1 3.PSR=<PERF>pound ID.OBL person
‘He lifted (the rice cake) that others pounded.’

#### 6.4.1.2 Verb forms typically used in progressive aspect

Verb forms in this category are formed by a verbal stem carrying a subject-choice affix plus Ca- reduplication (or a- affixation). This construction typically marks progressive aspect in the usual sense, as in (40) to (42).
Stative verbs in progressive forms are used to indicate change of state. Compare (43) with (44) and (45) with (46).

(43) \( \text{aremeng} = \text{la} \) \\
\( \text{dark} = \text{PERF} \) \\
‘It’s dark already.’

(44) \( \text{a<ra>remeng} = \text{la} \) \\
\( \text{<RED>dark} = \text{PERF} \) \\
‘It’s getting dark already.’

(45) \( \text{kadru} = \text{mi} \text{ i balrangaw} \) \\
\( \text{there} = \text{1P.ECL.NOM LOC Taitung} \) \\
‘We live in Taitung.’ (Taitung is our permanent residence.)

(46) \( \text{k<a>adru} = \text{mi} \text{ i balrangaw} \) \\
\( \text{<a>live} = \text{1P.ECL.NOM LOC Taitung} \) \\
‘We are living in Taitung (for the time being).’

Sentence (43) simply indicates the state of being dark, but when the same verb is in the progressive form, it implies a change of state, as in (44). Likewise, sentence (45) describes a stative and permanent fact, and sentence (46) implies that the state may be subject to change.

Verbs in progressive form can also be used to express habitual meaning, as illustrated by the different possible readings in (47) and (48).

(47) \( \text{p<en>u<a>kpuk dra walak} \) \\
\( \text{<ITR><a>beat ID.OBL child} \) \\
‘He is/was beating a child.’ \\
‘He has the habit of beating children.’

(48) \( \text{m-a-ekan dra kuraw} \) \\
\( \text{ITR-RED-eat ID.OBL fish} \) \\
‘He is/was eating fish.’ \\
‘He has the habit of eating fish.’

To get an appropriate reading, we have to rely on the context of utterance. In addition, the habitual sense can be realised by time adjuncts, such as ‘every day’ or by the verb \text{marayas} ‘often’. In this case, the morphological marking is optional. For example:
Subject choice, mood and aspect

6.4.1.3 Verb forms typically used in durative aspect

Verb forms in this category are formed by a stem undergoing serial reduplication (§3.4.6), e.g. $s<em>a-sa-senay < senay ‘sing’. This construction typically encodes a process continuing for an appreciable time.

(51) $tr<em>a-tra-trekelr=ku dra eraw
<ITR>RED-RED-drink=1S.NOM ID.OBL wine
‘I have been drinking wine (for a long time).’

(52) me-ra-ra-retra’=ku dra tilril
ITR-RED-RED-put.down=1S.NOM ID.OBL book
‘I have been putting books in order (for a long time).’

With events expressing actions that are difficult to extend for a long time, it is infelicitous to use a durative form, as in (53) and (54).

(53) *$tr<em>a-tra-trekelr=ku dra puatremel
<ITR>RED-RED-drink=1S.NOM ID.OBL medicine
‘I have been keeping on taking medicine.’

(54) *me-ra-ra-retra’=ku dra kiakarunan
ITR-RED-RED-put.down=1S.NOM ID.OBL job
‘I have been keeping on taking breaks (lit. putting down jobs).’

Stative verbs can appear in the durative form with the meaning ‘getting X-er and X-er’.

(55) me-ra-ra-retra’ tu=dradrek
ITR-RED-RED-put.down 3.PSR=body
‘His health is getting worse and worse.’

6.4.2 Aspectual notions expressed by clitics

The morphological status and lexical category of the aspectual markers =la, =driya, and =dar are described in §3.3.3 and §4.5.8. This section is concerned mainly with their aspect-marking functions.

6.4.2.1 =la

The enclitic =la usually appears after the predicate or the negator (if there is one) and typically marks perfective aspect, as shown in (56) and (57).

(49) me-nga-ngara=ku kanku walak kana wa-wari-wari
ITR-RED-wait=1S.NOM DF.OBL/1S.PSR child DF.OBL RED-RED-day
‘I wait/waited for my child every day.’

(50) me-ngara=ku kanku walak kana wa-wari-wari
ITR-wait=1S.NOM DF.OBL/1S.PSR child DF.OBL RED-RED-day
‘I wait/waited for my child every day.’

(51) tr<em>a-tra-trekelr=ku dra eraw
<ITR>RED-RED-drink=1S.NOM ID.OBL wine
‘I have been drinking wine (for a long time).’

(52) me-ra-ra-retra’=ku dra tilril
ITR-RED-RED-put.down=1S.NOM ID.OBL book
‘I have been putting books in order (for a long time).’

With events expressing actions that are difficult to extend for a long time, it is infelicitous to use a durative form, as in (53) and (54).

(53) *$tr<em>a-tra-trekelr=ku dra puatremel
<ITR>RED-RED-drink=1S.NOM ID.OBL medicine
‘I have been keeping on taking medicine.’

(54) *me-ra-ra-retra’=ku dra kiakarunan
ITR-RED-RED-put.down=1S.NOM ID.OBL job
‘I have been keeping on taking breaks (lit. putting down jobs).’

Stative verbs can appear in the durative form with the meaning ‘getting X-er and X-er’.

(55) me-ra-ra-retra’ tu=dradrek
ITR-RED-RED-put.down 3.PSR=body
‘His health is getting worse and worse.’

6.4.2 Aspectual notions expressed by clitics

The morphological status and lexical category of the aspectual markers =la, =driya, and =dar are described in §3.3.3 and §4.5.8. This section is concerned mainly with their aspect-marking functions.

6.4.2.1 =la

The enclitic =la usually appears after the predicate or the negator (if there is one) and typically marks perfective aspect, as shown in (56) and (57).
In the sentences above, the perfective meaning comes from the marker =la, and according to the informant, =la occurs obligatorily if there is a perfective indication. However, =la is not restricted to occurring with telic verbs.

The appearance of =la does not always indicate the termination of an action. When =la follows an atelic or stative verb, it denotes a change of state, meaning ‘become X’, where ‘X’ refers to the stative meaning the verb denotes. For instance, compare the following two sentences:

(58) bulray na ruma’
    beautiful DF.NOM house
    ‘The house is clean.’

(59) bulray=la na ruma’
    beautiful=PERF DF.NOM house
    ‘The house has become clean.’

Furthermore, =la can also appear in irrealis clauses (60), in clauses with progressive (61) or durative (62) verb forms, or in imperative clauses (63).

(60) aru ku<a>renang=mi=la dru trau
    will <a>follow=1P.ECL.NOM=PERF ID.OBL person
    ‘We will (be able to) catch up with others.’

(61) an m-a-ekan=la nadru na sariapan i,
    when ITR<RED>eat=PERF those.NOM DF.NOM colleague TOP
tu=kasu-aw tu=padrekan
    3.GEN=take-TR1 3.PSR =basket
    ‘When those colleagues were eating, she took her basket with her.’

(62) an ki<lenga>lengaw=ta=la kana temararamaw ...
    when <RED>listen=1P.NOM=PERF DF.OBL shaman
    ‘When we were listening to the shamans …’

(63) an tu=pa-trekelr-ay=mu draku la’ub
    when 3.GEN=CAUS-drink-TR2=2P.NOM ID.OBL/1S.PSR ladle
    i, trekelr=la
    TOP drink=PERF
    ‘If she makes you drink water with my ladle, drink it.’

The enclitic =la can also appear after nominal predicates, as in (64).

(64) a bulrabulrayan=la na walak
    ID.NOM lady=PERF DF.NOM child
    ‘The child became a lady.’
6.4.2.2 =driya

Like =la the clitic =driya, glossed ‘imperfective’, usually appears after the negator (if there is one) or the predicate, and its uses make it comparable to English ‘still’. However, most of these uses are associated with events that are not affirmative realis. In the corpus it occurs most often in a negative construction, indicating that the event has not yet occurred. For example:

(65) an adri=driya ma-ladram i, sagar m-ekan drata
    when NEG=IMPF ITR-know TOP like ITR-eat ID.OBL/1P.PSR
    b<i>n>eray dra akan-an i, m-ekan
    <PERF>give ID.OBL eat-NMZ TOP ITR-eat
    ‘When they still hadn’t realised, and because they liked to eat what we gave them to eat, they ate.’

In addition to ‘not yet’, this combination, adri plus =driya, can also express the meaning ‘never’, but in this case the stress of the main verb will shift from the last syllable to the penult. Compare the following two sentences. In (66) this construction expresses the meaning of ‘not yet’, but in (67) the meaning of ‘never’.

(66) adri=ku=driya t<em>alám m-u-isatr dra sasudang
    NEG=1S.NOM=IMPF <ITR>try ITR-go-up ID.OBL boat
    ‘I have not got on a boat.’

(67) adri=ku=driya t<em>álam m-u-isatr dra sasudang
    ‘I’ve never got on a boat.’

The clitic =driya also often appears after a projective verb form, as in (68). In (69), =driya occurs in an imperative clause. In these two sentences, =driya adds a politer flavour to the requests (§12.2.2).

(68) k<em>a-a=ku=driya pa-ka-ladram kanmu
    <ITR>say-PJ=1S.NOM=IMPF CAUS-ka-know 2S.OBL
    ‘Let me say (this) to inform you.’

(69) beray=i=driya dranu ni-ranger-an idru
    give-TR2=IMPF ID.OBL/2S.PSR PERF-thought-NMZ that.NOM
    na kur-dikes kandri kana ki-a-karun-an
    DF.NOM be.together-hold this.OBL DF.OBL get-a-work-NMZ
    ‘Give your thought to that person who is responsible for this business.’

The clitic =driya can also appear in an irrealis clause (70). It indicates the action has not yet happened but will happen soon.

(70) aru p-u-a-isatr=driya kadri i sanasan i, ...
    will CAUS-go-a-up=IMPF here LOC Sanansan TOP
    ‘When they were about to land on Sanansan, …’

When =driya occurs after a progressive (71) or durative (72) verb form, the clause is often an adverbial clause (Chapter 15) which is manifested as a topic, and provides a temporal frame or a condition for the event in the main clause to take place.
Chapter 6

(71) an pa<ra>ragan=ta=driya i, ...
when <RED>build=1P.NOM=IMPF TOP
‘When we are still building (a youth house), …’

(72) an m-u-ami-ami=mi=driya i, kadru i danawlrenges
when ITR-go-RED-north=1P.NOM=IMPF TOP there SG.NOM Danawlrenges
‘Whenever we go north, Danawlrenges is there.’

The clitic =driya can also follow a predicate nominal phrase to indicate that the status is persistent. For example:

(73) a lalak=mi=driya
ID.NOM child=1P.ECL.NOM=IMPF
‘We were still children.’

Finally, =driya cooccurs with asua ‘when’ to form a fixed expression meaning ‘a long time ago’, which is frequently used as an opening in story-telling. For example:

(74) asua=driyan6 i, uliya kadru a malru-wadi
when=IMPF TOP exist there ID.NOM RECIP-younger.sibling
‘A long time ago, there were two brothers.’

6.4.2.3 =dar

The third aspectual clitic, =dar, glossed ‘frequentative’, mostly occurs after the predicate and is used to portray events repeated on different occasions. There are not many examples in the corpus. In (75) =dar occurs in a realis clause unmarked for aspect; in (76) it appears after a progressive verb form.

(75) druа=dar i takesi-an m-aya-a kanku
come=FREQ LOC study-NMZ ITR-find-PJ 1S.OBL
‘It (the dog) often came to the school to find me.’

(76) m-u-a-sabak=dar a ma’inayan
ITR-go-a-inside=FREQ ID.NOM male
‘A man often came in.’

6.5 Morphological classes of intransitive verbs

Transitive verb formation is regular across all morphological classes (cf. Table 6.1): one of the transitive/affixes is attached to the verb form used in the imperative construction.

Intransitive verbs are subclassified into seven categories on the basis of the morphological processes they undergo. Examples are shown in the seven tables below. Ca-reduplication and its allomorph a- behave to a great extent predictably in all seven classes. The category durative is not presented in the tables as it is predictable from the progressive category. If a given verb undergoes Ca-reduplication for expressing progressive, then applying Ca-reduplication twice is used in the durative; if a verb is affixed with a- in the progressive category, then it is doubled in the durative.

6 The marker =driyan is an allomorph of =driya. The allomorphic distribution needs further research.
6.5.1 Intransitive verbs with `<em>` and its allomorphs in the realis

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Progressive</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
<th>Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kasu ‘bring’</td>
<td>k&lt;em&gt;asu</td>
<td>k&lt;em&gt;a-kasu</td>
<td>ka-kasu</td>
<td>kasu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>drimutr ‘catch’</td>
<td>dr&lt;em&gt;imutr</td>
<td>dr&lt;em&gt;a-drimutr</td>
<td>dra-drimutr</td>
<td>drimutr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bu’utr ‘stop’</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;u’utr</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;a-bu’utr</td>
<td>ba-bu’utr</td>
<td>bu’utr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pilang ‘bring’</td>
<td>p&lt;en&gt;pilang</td>
<td>p&lt;en&gt;a-pilang</td>
<td>pa-pilang</td>
<td>pilang</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reput ‘cut’</td>
<td>me-reput</td>
<td>me-ra-reput</td>
<td>ra-reput</td>
<td>reput</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na’u ‘see’</td>
<td>me-na’u</td>
<td>me-na-na’u</td>
<td>na-na’u</td>
<td>na’u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alrak ‘take’</td>
<td>m-alrak</td>
<td>m-a-alrak</td>
<td>a-alrak</td>
<td>alrak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u-sabak ‘get in’</td>
<td>m-u-sabak</td>
<td>m-u-a-sabak</td>
<td>u-a-sabak</td>
<td>u-sabak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u-ngesal ‘start’</td>
<td>m-u-ngesal</td>
<td>m-u-a-ngesal</td>
<td>u-a-ngesal</td>
<td>u-ngesal</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The distribution of `<em>` and its allomorphs is phonologically determined (§2.6.1.) as can be observed from the five subclasses of verbs shown in the table above. Notice that the stems of the last two verbs in the table consist of two morphemes: u- ‘go’ and a location noun (sabak ‘inside’, ngesal ‘starting point’); morphologically they resemble those stems beginning with vowels like alrak, but a- is inserted after u-.

6.5.2 Intransitive verbs with no affix other than Ca- reduplication

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Progressive</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
<th>Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>beray ‘give’</td>
<td>beray</td>
<td>ba-beray</td>
<td>ba-beray</td>
<td>beray</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pulang ‘help’</td>
<td>pulang</td>
<td>pa-pulang</td>
<td>pa-pulang</td>
<td>pulang</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kurenang ‘follow’</td>
<td>kurenang</td>
<td>ku&lt;en&gt;renang</td>
<td>ku&lt;en&gt;renang</td>
<td>kurenang</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

6.5.3 Intransitive verbs with realis ma-

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Progressive</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
<th>Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>rengay ‘tell’</td>
<td>ma-rengay</td>
<td>ma-ra-rengay</td>
<td>ra-rengay</td>
<td>rengay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>re’ani ‘harvest’</td>
<td>ma-re’ani</td>
<td>ma-re’ani</td>
<td>re’ani</td>
<td>re’ani</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

6.5.4 Intransitive verbs with no realis affix and irrealis/imperative ka-

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Progressive</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
<th>Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>saeru ‘laugh’</td>
<td>saeru</td>
<td>sa&lt;en&gt;eru</td>
<td>ka-sa&lt;en&gt;eru</td>
<td>ka-saeru</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aremeng ‘dark’</td>
<td>aremeng</td>
<td>a&lt;en&gt;remeng</td>
<td>k-a&lt;en&gt;remeng</td>
<td>k-aremeng</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inaba ‘good’</td>
<td>inaba</td>
<td>i&lt;en&gt;naba</td>
<td>ka-i&lt;en&gt;naba</td>
<td>ka-inaba</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The function of ka- is discussed in §6.6.
6.5.5 Intransitive verbs with realis ma- and irrealis/imperative ka-

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Progressive</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
<th>Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-dreki ‘scold’</td>
<td>ma-dreki</td>
<td>ma-dra-dreki</td>
<td>ka-dra-dreki</td>
<td>ka-dreki</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-trangis ‘cry’</td>
<td>ma-trangis</td>
<td>ma-tra-trangis</td>
<td>ka-tra-trangis</td>
<td>ka-trangis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ruwa ‘can’</td>
<td>ma-ruwa</td>
<td>ma-ra-ruwa</td>
<td>ka-ra-ruwa</td>
<td>ka-ruwa</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This class of verbs consists of those that have bound roots (§3.2.2).

6.5.6 Denominal intransitive verbs taking realis mi- and irrealis/imperative pi-

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Progressive</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
<th>Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>walak ‘child’</td>
<td>mi-walak</td>
<td>mi-a-walak</td>
<td>pi-a-walak</td>
<td>pi-walak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mi-walak ‘have children’</td>
<td>mi-walak</td>
<td>mi-a-walak</td>
<td>pi-a-walak</td>
<td>pi-walak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kiping ‘clothes’</td>
<td>mi-kiping</td>
<td>mi-a-kiping</td>
<td>pi-a-kiping</td>
<td>pi-kiping</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mi-kiping ‘wear clothes’</td>
<td>mi-kiping</td>
<td>mi-a-kiping</td>
<td>pi-a-kiping</td>
<td>pi-kiping</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This class of verbs shows an alternation between mi- and pi-, and takes a- rather than Ca-reduplication.

6.5.7 Intransitive verbs derived with ki-

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Progressive</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
<th>Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lengaw ‘sound’</td>
<td>ki-lengaw</td>
<td>ki-a-lengaw</td>
<td>ki-a-lengaw</td>
<td>ki-lengaw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki-lengaw ‘listen’</td>
<td>ki-lengaw</td>
<td>ki-a-lengaw</td>
<td>ki-a-lengaw</td>
<td>ki-lengaw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>umal ‘question’</td>
<td>ki-umal</td>
<td>ki-a-umal</td>
<td>ki-a-umal</td>
<td>ki-umal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki-umal ‘ask’</td>
<td>ki-umal</td>
<td>ki-a-umal</td>
<td>ki-a-umal</td>
<td>ki-umal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>beray ‘give’</td>
<td>ki-beray</td>
<td>ki-a-beray</td>
<td>ki-a-beray</td>
<td>ki-beray</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki-beray ‘beg’</td>
<td>ki-beray</td>
<td>ki-a-beray</td>
<td>ki-a-beray</td>
<td>ki-beray</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tulrudr ‘pass’</td>
<td>ki-tulrudr</td>
<td>ki-a-tulrudr</td>
<td>ki-a-tulrudr</td>
<td>ki-tulrudr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki-tulrudr ‘receive’</td>
<td>ki-tulrudr</td>
<td>ki-a-tulrudr</td>
<td>ki-a-tulrudr</td>
<td>ki-tulrudr</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This category of verbs has two subdivisions: denominal and deverbal. The two subcategories have different syntactic features, discussed in §9.6.

6.5.8 Summary of morphological classes of intransitive verbs

Table 6.2 is a summary of the seven morphological classes of intransitive verbs.
Table 6.2: Morphological classes of intransitive verbs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
<th>Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Unmarked</td>
<td>Progressive</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kasu ‘bring’</td>
<td>(&lt;em&gt;)asu</td>
<td>(&lt;em&gt;)a-kasu</td>
<td>ka-kasu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>beray ‘give’</td>
<td>beray</td>
<td>ba-beray</td>
<td>ba-beray</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rengay ‘tell’</td>
<td>ma-rengay</td>
<td>ma-ra-rengay</td>
<td>ra-rengay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aremeng ‘dark’</td>
<td>a&lt;ra&gt;remeng</td>
<td>a-remeng</td>
<td>k-a&lt;ra&gt;remeng</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-dreki ‘scold’</td>
<td>ma-dreki</td>
<td>ma-dra-dreki</td>
<td>ka-dreki</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kiping ‘clothes’</td>
<td>mi-kiping</td>
<td>mi-a-kiping</td>
<td>pi-a-kiping</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mi-kiping ‘wear clothes’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lengaw ‘sound’</td>
<td>ki-lengaw</td>
<td>ki-a-lengaw</td>
<td>ki-a-lengaw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ki-lengaw ‘listen’</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

6.6 A note on ka-

The uses of the prefix ka- have attracted the attention of linguists studying Formosan languages. A summary of the earlier analyses of this prefix is given in Zeitoun and Huang (2000:393). Zeitoun and Huang (2000) and Zeitoun (2000) argue that in Rukai and other Formosan languages the prefix ka- indicates stativity. They demonstrate that dynamic and stative verbs exhibit different morphological alternations and that ka- is the non-realising counterpart of realising stative ma- and Ø. They claim that ‘both ma- and ka- are stem-forming affixes that appear on stative verbs: ka- occurs exclusively in nonfinite verb stems, ma- (and ~Ø) in finite verb stems.’

In Puyuma, the occurrence of ka- seems not to be as predictable as in Zeitoun and Huang’s data. As they have demonstrated, ka- appears only in imperative, causative, reciprocal, irrealis, and transitive constructions. The complication in Puyuma lies in two facts. First, dynamic and stative verbs do not always differ in their morphological alternations, and second, verbs that have ma- derivation in intransitive forms can be subcategorised into two groups, and only one of them follows the patterns demonstrated in Zeitoun and Huang (2000).

To begin with, contrary to Zeitoun and Huang’s claim that ka- is used to mark stativity in nonfinite constructions, in Puyuma it is not unusual for ka- to cooccur with verbs that are semantically dynamic. These verbs either have ma- or zero in the realising intransitive form. For instance:

(77) a. \textit{ka-dra-dratikul}  
\textit{ka-RED-fight}  
‘They might fight.’

b. \textit{ma-dratikul}  
\textit{ITR-fight}  
‘They fought.’

7 Blust (2003b) suggests that there are several *ka- prefixes in PAn and PMP, which mark an inchoative verb/adjective, a stative in negative constructions, past time, accompanied action, abstract nouns of quality, the manner in which an action is carried out, and past participle/achieved state.

8 The prefix ka- is treated as inchoative by Li (1973), Starosta (1974), Ferrell (1982), and Yeh (2000b), and is analysed as an ‘activising’ prefix by Chang and Tsao (1995).
Semantically speaking, the above verbs -dratikul ‘fight’, -dreki ‘scold’ and saeru ‘laugh’ are dynamic, but they have the morphological patterns that are expected (on Zeitoun and Huang’s observations of other Formosan languages) on more stative verbs like -’itrilr ‘stingy’ and -biring ‘jealous’ in the following examples.

(80) salraw ma-’itrilr
very ITR-stingy
‘They are very stingy.’

(81) tu=ka-’itrilr-aw  i  tayban
3.GEN=ka-stingy-TR1 SG.NOM Tayban
‘They were mean to Tayban.’

(82) ma-biring
ITR-jealous
‘He is jealous.’

(83) tu=ka-biring-aw=ku
3GEN=ka-jealous-TR1=1S.NOM
‘He is jealous of me.’

On the other hand, some semantically more stative verbs pattern morphologically like dynamic verbs. For example, some semantically stative verbs, such as lirtek ‘cold’ and dalrekeng ‘wet’, are not marked by ka- in constructions where we might expect it to occur. For instance:

(84) lirtek=la na  irupan
cold=PERF DF.NOM dish
‘The dish has become cool.’

(85) lirtek-u na  irupan
cold-TR1 DF.NOM dish
‘Cool down the dish.’

(86) dalrekeng ku=kiruan
wet 1.S.PSR=clothes
‘My clothes are wet.’

(87) adri ku=dalrekeng-i nu=kiruan
NEG 1.S.GEN=wet-TR2 2.S.PSR=clothes
‘I didn’t wet your clothes.’

Furthermore, with some verbs, ka- is used in certain constructions but is missing in some situations when we expect it to appear. For example, we expect the verb riksis ‘dirty’ to be a stative verb, and thus to be prefixed by ka- in constructions such as causatives, transitives or
reciprocals. However, as shown below, ka- is used in imperative transitives but not in declarative transitives.\(^9\)

\[(88)\] riksis na ruma’
dirty DF.NOM house
‘The house is dirty.’

\[(89)\] adri ka-riksis-i
NEG ka-dirty-TR2
‘Don’t make it dirty.’

\[(90)\] adri ku=riksis-i na ruma’
NEG 1S.GEN=dirty-TR2 DF.NOM house
‘I didn’t make the house dirty.’

Another fact that causes difficulty in predicting the occurrence of ka- is that the stems prefixed with the intransitive stative ma- or zero can be subcategorised into two groups which cut across the categories in §6.5.4 and §6.5.5. In the first group, each stem has only one intransitive form (monovalent), as in §6.5.4 and §6.5.5. In the second group, each stem can form two intransitives, one with ma- or zero as in §6.5.4 and §6.5.5, which is monovalent, and the other with an allomorph of <em>, which is bivalent, thus patterning with the verbs in §6.5.1.

Stems in the first group are prefixed with ka- in forms other than the realis intransitive. For example:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Irrealis/Imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-remeng</td>
<td>ma-remeng</td>
<td>ka-ra-remeng/ka-remeng</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-sepel</td>
<td>ma-sepel</td>
<td>ka-sa-sepel/ka-sepel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-keser</td>
<td>ma-koser</td>
<td>ka-ka-koser/ka-koser</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bulray</td>
<td>bulray</td>
<td>ka-ba-bulray</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sadru</td>
<td>sadru</td>
<td>ka-sa-sadru/ka-sadru</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sabelraw</td>
<td>sabelraw</td>
<td>ka-sa&lt;sba&gt;belraw/ka-sabelraw</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\[(91)\] ka-remeng
ka-silent
‘Keep quiet!’ (Intransitive imperative)

\[(92)\] ka-sadru-i nu=ni-anger-an
ka-many-TR2:IMP 2S.PSR=PERF-thought-NMZ
‘Put more expressions.’ (Transitive imperative)

\[(93)\] pa-ka-sa-sadru tu=ulrep-an drananiam trau i sabak
CAUS-ka-RED-many 3.PSR=tired-NMZ ID.OBL/1P.PSR person LOC inside
‘It added more hardship to our family.’ (Causative)

\(^9\) An examiner suggested that a potentive category (cf. Himmelmann 2004, 2006) could explain the irregular occurrence of ka-, but what happens in Puyuma is not similar to Tagalog. In Tagalog potentive verbs have a full paradigm of derivations (AV, PV, LV, CV, perfective/non-realis), but in Puyuma ka- never occurs in a realis actor voice construction. However I do not exclude the possibility that what is fully developed as a potentive in Tagalog is partially developed in Puyuma. More research is needed on this issue.
In the second group, two different intransitive verbs are derived. A list of some examples is given below:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stem</th>
<th>Monovalent</th>
<th>Bivalent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ba’aw</td>
<td>ba’aw ‘alive’</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;a’aw ‘save’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bias</td>
<td>bias ‘hot’</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;ias ‘make hot’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>deru</td>
<td>ma-deru ‘cooked’</td>
<td>d&lt;em&gt;eru ‘cook’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sede’</td>
<td>ma-sede’ ‘absent’</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;ede’ ‘resign’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bu’utr</td>
<td>ma-bu’utr ‘extinguished’</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;u’utr ‘stop’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ba’itr</td>
<td>ma-ba’itr ‘burned’</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;a’itr ‘burn’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bikbik</td>
<td>ma-bikbik ‘float’</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;ikbik ‘wave’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>binga’</td>
<td>ma-binga’ ‘troublesome’</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;inga’ ‘bother’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Stems in this category are not prefixed with ka- in transitive forms. For example, for the stem sede’ ‘absent, resign’, there are no such forms as *ka-sede’-aw or *ka-sede’-ay, but only sede’-aw or sede’-ay. However, ka- appears in reciprocal and causative forms. For example:

(96) mar-ka-ba’itr a ruma’a sadru
     RECIP-ka-burn ID.NOM house ID.NOM many
     ‘It (the fire) burned many houses.’

(97) pa-ka-binga’=ta dra trau
     CAUS-ka-trouble=1P.NOM ID.OBL person
     ‘We caused others trouble.’

Descriptions of the roles of ka- in a causative construction and in a reciprocal construction are given in §9.2.1.1 and §9.3.3 respectively.
Transcategorial operations

7.1 Introduction

This chapter discusses morphological operations that change the grammatical category of a word. In Chapter 4, we saw that Puyuma open word classes consist of nouns and verbs, and §4.3 discussed the distinction between nouns and verbs at two different levels: root level and word level. A nominal word may be derived from a nominal or a verbal root, and so may a verbal word. The morphological operations discussed in this chapter can be demonstrated by the following figure: any arrow that connects a noun at a higher level with a verb at a lower level describes a verbalising process; any arrow that connects a verb at a higher level with a noun at a lower level describes a nominalising process.

Figure 7.1: Transcategorial operations

The following example demonstrates the formation process of the word *pinungalrad*. In this case, there are two derivational steps: first a noun is converted to a verb, then the verb is converted to a noun.

(1)  
nantu  \( p<in>u \)-atel-an  kana  tangtang  \( i \),  
DF.NOM/3.PSR  <PERF>CAUS-fall-NMZ  DF.OBL  lime  TOP  
\( tu=p<in>u \)-ngalrad  dra  matang  
3.PSR=<PERF>CAUS-name  ID.OBL  Matang  
‘(The place) where the lime was dropped, is called Matang.’
Chapter 7

Root Stem Word
ngalrad (N) → pu-ngalrad (V) → p<in>u-ngalrad (N)
‘name’ ‘to give a name’ ‘the name given’

Note that there may be more than one intermediate or stem level between the root level and the word level. For example:

Root Stem Stem Stem Word
isatr (N) → k-isatr-an1 (N) → u-kisatran (V) → p-ukisatran (V) → p<in>ukisatran (N)
‘up’ ‘place above’ ‘go on top of’ ‘lift up’ ‘things being lifted up’

Verbalising formatives differ from nominalising formatives in several respects: first, verbalising formatives outnumber nominalising formatives; second, while there is usually one-to-one correspondence between form and function for verbalising formatives, the formatives used in nominalisation usually serve more than one function. For example, the verbaliser mi- in mi-paisu ‘have money’ or mi-kiping ‘wear clothes’ is only attached to nouns and indicates the possession of the element it attaches to, but the formative Ca-reduplication can function as a nominaliser in ta-ti’rus ‘rope’ or as a formative expressing irrealis ‘will tie’.

The most common verbalising affixes will be described in §7.2, and nominalisation in §7.3.

7.2 Verbalisation

Verbalisation is an operation that makes a non-verbal element ‘verb-like’. Payne (1997:94–95) points out that the most common type of verbalisation makes a possessive verb out of a noun. For example, the Puyuma prefix mi- attaches to a noun to derive a verb meaning ‘to have N’. In the following examples the verbalising prefixes appear in the left column and examples of derived verbs on the right.

1 The circumfix k--an is an allomorph of ki--an, which attaches to a locative noun to derive a new locative noun.
m-uri- ‘to mix with’  m-uri-’udal-an ‘to be in the rain’

pa- ‘to cause to have’  pa-susu ‘to breast-feed’
pa-kadaw ‘to bask in the sun’

pia- ‘to face’  pia-lraudr ‘to face to the east’
paria-timulr ‘to face to the south’

para- ‘to be fond of’  para-abay ‘to be fond of rice cake’
para-babayan ‘to be fond of women’

$t<em>$ara- ‘to speak a language’  $t<em>$ara-puyuma ‘to speak Puyuma’
$t<em>$ara-balaka ‘to speak a foreign language’

$t<em>$ua- ‘to make’  $t<em>$ua-abay ‘to make rice cake’
$t<em>$ua-eraw ‘to make wine’

tinu- ‘to imitate’  tinu-yawan ‘to imitate a chief’
tinu-ma’idrang ‘to imitate an elder’

The derived verbs listed above are those used in intransitive clauses (§8.4.3 and §10.2.3). When such verbs are used in transitive clauses, a transitive marker is suffixed. For example:

(2) $t<em>$ara-payran=ku
<ITR>use-Taiwanese=1S.NOM
‘I speak Taiwanese.’

(3) tu=tara-payran-anay=ta $t<em>$ubang
3.GEN=use-Taiwanese-TR3=1P.NOM <ITR>answer
‘They answered us in Taiwanese.’

(4) adri m-utu-trau paseket
NEG ITR-become-person seriously
‘He has not become a man completely.’

(5) ta=p-utu-yawan-aw i lrugi
1P.GEN=CAUS-become-chief-TR1 SG.NOM Lrugi
‘We made Lrugi become the chief.’

7.3 Nominalisation

Nominalisation forms a nominal element from a non-nominal element. Recall that in §4.3.1.1 two syntactic tests were employed to determine whether a word is verbal or nominal, and the typical characteristics of nouns and verbs were identified. The two syntactic tests (negation and the cooccurrence of a possessive free pronoun) are essential in determining the status of <$in$>, which is both a verbal and a nominal perfective formative in many Philippine-type languages but which occurs exclusively in nominals in Puyuma, whilst maintaining its perfective function.

A distinction can be made between lexicalised nominalisations and gerundive nominalisations. The difference between these two processes is evident in that gerundive nominals are productive, may have an argument NP licensed by the valency of the stem, and
are negated like a verbal construction, whereas lexicalised nominalisations are not productive and are negated like a nominal construction.

In the following sections, the status of \(<in>\) as a nominal perfective marker is treated in §7.3.1. The major types of lexical nominalisation, based on the semantic relationship between the derived noun and the verbal event, are described in §7.3.2, followed by a summary of the major types in §7.3.3. §7.3.4 presents some less productive nominalising affixes, and finally §7.3.5 treats gerundive nominals.

### 7.3.1 The status of \(<in>\)

The morpheme \(<in>\) (or its allomorph \(ni\)-) is infixed or prefixed to verbs to indicate perfective aspect in many Formosan languages. However, in Puyuma, although \(<in>\) still retains its function of marking perfective aspect, words formed with \(<in>\) are nominal; they never attract a subject pronoun like verbs do, and they can collocate with the free possessive pronouns like prototypical nouns. Sentences (6) and (7) show that, in a verbal construction, when the subject is not third person, a nominative enclitic pronoun is obligatorily attached to the verbal predicate. However, words infixed with \(<in>\) cannot take a nominative pronoun enclitic like verbs do, as shown in (8).

(6) \(tr<em>akaw=yu\) dra paisu
\(<\text{ITR}>\text{steal=2S.NOM ID.OBL money}\)
‘You stole money.’

(7) \(tu=trakaw-ay=yu\) dra paisu
\(3.GEN=\text{steal-TR2=2S.NOM ID.OBL money}\)
‘He stole money from you.’

(8) a. \(*tr<in>akaw=yu\) dra paisu
\(<\PERF>\text{steal=2S.NOM ID.OBL money}\)

b. \(*tu=tr<in>akaw=yu\)
\(3.GEN=\PERF=\text{steal=2S.NOM}\)

On the other hand, while words infixed with \(<in>\) can be preceded by a clitic pronoun (9), or a free pronoun (10) like nouns can (11), verbs are never preceded by free pronouns (12).

(9) \(ku=tr<in>ima na tilril\)
\(1S.PSR=\PERF=\text{buy DF.NOM book}\)
‘The book is my buying.’ (= ‘This is the book I bought.’)

(10) \(nanku\) \(tr<in>ima na tilril\)
\(NOM/1S.PSR\ <\PERF=\text{buy DF.NOM book}\)
‘The book is my buying.’

(11) \(nanku\) tilril
‘my book’

(12) a. \(*nanku\) \(tr<em>ima dra tilril\)
\(NOM/1S.PSR\ <\text{ITR}=\text{buy ID.OBL book}\)

b. \(*nanku\) \(trakaw-ay\)
\(NOM/1S.PSR\ \text{steal-TR2}\)
In §4.5.1.1 I mention that a proclitic pronoun can refer either to the non-subject actor or to the possessor of the entity it attaches to. Thus, a sentence like (9) can be possibly interpreted as a verb plus a noun, and <in> can be analysed as a perfective undergoer voice marker attaching to verbs. However, in the reading given in (9), it is a classifying sentence (see also §10.3.2); $ku=tr<in>ima$ in (9) corresponds to $nanku\ tr<in>ima$ in (10), and it is better analysed as ‘my buying’, not ‘I bought’. Further investigation shows that elements infixed with <in> are optionally suffixed with the nominaliser -an when the derived noun denotes the patient of the event.

\begin{equation}
\text{nanku/}ku=tr<in>ima-an \quad \text{na} \quad \text{tilril}
\end{equation}

\begin{itemize}
\item[DF.NOM/1S.PSR=<PERF>buy-NMZ \ DF.NOM \ book]
\item[‘The book is my buying.’]
\end{itemize}

According to my informants, the presence of -an in the above examples does not change the meaning. See also §7.3.2.3.

As shown in §4.3.1.1, in Puyuma different negators are used for nominal and verbal predicates. Compare the following two sentences:

\begin{equation}
\text{adri}=\text{ku} \quad \text{ma-ladram} \quad \text{dratu} \quad \text{ngai}
\end{equation}

\begin{itemize}
\item[NEG=1S.NOM \ ITR-know \ ID.OBL/3.PSR \ language]
\item[‘I don’t know their language.’]
\end{itemize}

\begin{equation}
\text{ameli} \quad \text{nantu} \quad \text{ni-ladra-ladram} \quad \text{ta}=\text{ngai}
\end{equation}

\begin{itemize}
\item[NEG \ NOM/3.PSR \ PERF-RED-know \ 1P.PSR=language]
\item[‘Our language is not something they’ve learned.’]
\end{itemize}

A gerundive nominal is negated by adri instead of ameli, as shown below. Gerundive nominals are treated in §7.3.5.

\begin{equation}
\text{wa-alrak} \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{patrungtrungan} \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{adri}=\text{driya}
\end{equation}

\begin{itemize}
\item[go-take \ ID.OBL \ drum \ ID.OBL \ NEG=IMPF]
\item[$b<in>arekep-an \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{kulritr}$]
\item[<PERF>assemble-NMZ \ ID.OBL \ skin]
\item[‘Go get a drum that has not been assembled with a skin.’]
\end{itemize}

7.3.2 Types of lexical nominalisation

Following Comrie and Thompson (1985:349), I subdivide lexical nominalisation in terms of the functions of the nouns resulting from the nominalising operations. The derived noun may be the name of the activity or state designated by the verb, or it may refer to the agent, patient, location, instrument or time of the activity or state. The categories discussed in the following sections include: action/state nouns, person-denoting nouns, patient nouns, instrumental nouns, locative nouns, and temporal nouns. Note that this classification is semantically based, and the same formation process may be applied to derive different categories of nouns. Hence, it is possible that the same derived form can belong to two semantic categories of noun. For example, $ka-lra-Irinay-an$ (< $ma-Irinay$ ‘amuse’) may mean ‘toy’ or ‘time for fun’.
7.3.2.1 Action/state nouns

Action and state nouns are formed from action verbs and denote the act, the occurrence, or the quality of that verb. Some examples are given in Table 7.1.

Table 7.1: Action nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Intransitive/Imperative</th>
<th>Derived noun</th>
<th>Formatives</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>karun</td>
<td>ki-karun/ki-karun ‘work’</td>
<td>ki&lt;an&gt;karun-an ‘job’</td>
<td>&lt;a&gt;^2 -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u-uma</td>
<td>m-u-uma/m-u-uma ‘go to farm’</td>
<td>u-uma-an</td>
<td>&lt;a&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>raip</td>
<td>me-raip/raip ‘sow’</td>
<td>raip-an</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dreki</td>
<td>ma-dreki/ka-dreki ‘condemn’</td>
<td>dreki-an</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sangalr</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;angalr/sangalr ‘rejoice’</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;angalr-an ‘appreciation’</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>engadr</td>
<td>m-engadr/engadr ‘breathe’</td>
<td>angadr</td>
<td>stem modification</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 7.1 shows three major formation processes. In the first type, the morpheme -an is suffixed to the progressive/irrealis verb form. In the second type, -an is suffixed to the root form or the realis intransitive form. In the third type, the stem is modified. The corpus does not contain many examples of the third type, and it is possible that angadr results from schwa deletion (i.e. a-engadr → angadr).

Note that the formation process used with a particular verb seems to be somewhat predictable. As the table above suggests, there is a tendency for the more dynamic verbs to use the progressive/irrealis verb form suffixed with -an; with the more stative verbs, -an is suffixed to the root. However, the example ra’ip-an ‘sowing’ in Table 7.1 is contrary to this generalisation. Furthermore, when -an is suffixed to stative verbs, it is sometimes suffixed to a root without an intransitive marker (e.g. dreki-an ‘condemnation’), and sometimes to the intransitive form of the verb (e.g. s<em>angalr-an ‘appreciation’).

Examples of their usages are given below:

(17) a. ki<an>karun=yu isuwa?
     <a>work=2S.NOM where
     ‘Where are you working?’

b. ulaya ku=ki<an>karun-an
    exist 1S.PSR=<a>work-NMZ
    ‘I have a job.’ (lit. ‘My job exists.’)

(18) a. muama=ta ma-dreki kannu
    why=1P.NOM ITR-condemn 2S.OBL
    ‘Why should we condemn you?’

b. unian dra dreki-an kandru kana suan
    not.exist ID.OBL condemn-NMZ that.OBL DF.OBL dog
    ‘She did not have any condemnation towards that dog.’

2 For ki- verbs, progressive and irrealis constructions are manifested by the same form. Thus, ki<an>karun can be interpreted as progressive or irrealis. See also §6.5.
Table 7.2: State nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Intransitive/Imperative</th>
<th>Derived noun</th>
<th>Formatives</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>asatr</td>
<td>asatr/ka-asatr ‘high’</td>
<td>asatr-an  ‘height’</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bulray</td>
<td>bulray/ka-bulray ‘beautiful’</td>
<td>bulray-an  ‘beauty’</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kualreng</td>
<td>kualreng/ka-kualreng ‘difficult, sick’</td>
<td>ka-kualreng-an  ‘difficulty’</td>
<td>ka- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sanan</td>
<td>ma-sanan/ka-sanan ‘lost’</td>
<td>ka-sanan-an  ‘being lost’</td>
<td>ka- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>igela</td>
<td>igela/k-igela ‘ashamed’</td>
<td>ki&lt;a&gt;gela-an  ‘shame’</td>
<td>k- + &lt;a&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-inatray</td>
<td>m-inatray/k-inatray ‘die’</td>
<td>ki&lt;a&gt;natray-an  ‘imminent death’</td>
<td>k- &lt;a&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Basically, verbs in this category are stative verbs and show an alternation between ma-/Ø (in realis intransitive construction) and ka- (elsewhere). The alternation of ma-/Ø and ka- was described in §6.6.

From the examples given in Table 7.2, we see that some state nouns are formed by suffixing -an to the root, and some are formed by suffixing -an to the ka- form. The choice is lexically determined. Note also that some state nouns are derived from the progressive/irrealis form. For example:

(19) a.  
**igela**=**ku**
ashamed=1S.NOM  
‘I am embarrassed.’

b.  
**a**  
**k-i<a>gela-an**  
idri
ID.NOM  k-<a>ashamed-NMZ  this.NOM  
‘This is a shame.’

(20) a.  
**m-inatray**=**la**  
na  
suan
ITR-die=PERF  DF.NOM  dog  
‘The dog has died.’

b.  
**ala**  
**dratu**  
**k-i<a>natray-an** ...
maybe  ID.OBL/3.PSR  ka-<a>die-NMZ  
‘Maybe because of its imminent death …’

7.3.2.2 Person-denoting nouns

‘Person-denoting noun’ is used here as a cover term to refer to nouns denoting the persons that carry out the action denoted by the verb and those that possess the property denoted by the verb. Some examples are given below.
We see from the examples in Table 7.3 that there are two main ways of forming person-denoting nouns, which correspond respectively to the stativity or dynamicity of the original verbal root. For the more dynamic roots, the derived nouns have the same form as those used in progressive construction; for the more stative roots, the nouns are formed by suffixing -an. Examples of person-denoting nouns derived from stative verbs are shown below.

(21) a. **bulray idri na ruma**
   beautiful this.NOM DF.NOM house
   ‘This house is beautiful.’

   b. **a bulra-bulray-an=la na walak**
   ID.NOM RED-beautiful-NMZ=PERF DF.NOM child
   ‘The child became a young woman.’

Person-denoting nouns derived from dynamic verbs can be further divided into two semantic categories; one refers to agents who perform characteristic activities, and the other to agents who perform particular acts. For example, words ending with -er/-or in English belong to the first category. ‘Teacher’ refers to someone who teaches professionally, not to someone who happens to teach somebody something perhaps for the first or the only time.

In Puyuma, some verbs make a distinction between the two categories through different morphosyntactic processes. Agents of characteristic activities and agents of specific acts are manifested by different structures. ‘The one who washes clothes for a living’ in Puyuma is given in (22), while ‘the one who happens to wash clothes on this particular occasion’ is in (23).

(22) **a mi-trepa b<en>a-base i pilay**
   ID.NOM have-share RED-ITR-wash SG.NOM Pilay
   ‘Pilay makes a living by washing clothes.’
   (lit. ‘Pilay is a person with the duty of washing clothes.’)

(23) **sagar=ku kana b<en>a-base**
   like =1S.NOM DF.OBL <ITR>RED-wash
   ‘I like the (one/ones who is/are) washing clothes.’

**Table 7.3: Person-denoting nouns**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Intransitive/Imperative</th>
<th>Derived noun</th>
<th>Formatives</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>takesi</td>
<td>t&lt;em&gt;akesi/takesi ‘study’</td>
<td>t&lt;em&gt;a-kakesi ‘student’</td>
<td>PROG. form</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kedreng</td>
<td>k&lt;em&gt;edreng/kedreng ‘pull’</td>
<td>k&lt;em&gt;a-kedreng ‘leader’</td>
<td>PROG. form</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bangsar</td>
<td>bangsar/ka-bangsar ‘handsome’</td>
<td>bangsar-an ‘young man’</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-‘idrang</td>
<td>ma-‘idrang/ka-‘idrang ‘old’</td>
<td>ma-‘idrang-an ‘old person’</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bulray</td>
<td>bulray/ka-bulray ‘beautiful’</td>
<td>bulra-bulray-an ‘young woman’</td>
<td>CVCV- + -an</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
From these examples, we see that agents of characteristic activities are usually manifested with the help of the verb *mi-trepa* ‘have a share’, whereas agents of specific acts are more like the nominalised elements we are talking about here. However, further investigation shows that agents of specific acts have the structure of a relative clause. Compare:

(24) \( s^<em>a\)-salpit=ku \\
     "<ITR><RED>beat=1S.NOM"
     ‘I am beating.’

(25) \( indang=ku \ kana \ trau \ \{kana \ s^<em>a\)-salpit \} \\
     "afraid=1S.NOM \ DF.OBL \ person \ DF.OBL \ <ITR><RED>beat"
     ‘I am afraid of the person who is beating (somebody).’

(26) \( indang=ku \ \{kana \ s^<em>a\)-salpit \} \\
     ‘I am afraid of the beater.’
     ‘I am afraid of the one who is beating.’

In (25), *kana s^<em>a\)-salpit* is a relative clause modifying the PIBU *kana trau*. But when the PIBU *kana trau* is omitted, as given in (26), we cannot differentiate between a noun and a relative clause, because in some situations, a progressive aspect verb can refer to the agent of a characteristic activity as well (which we might expect to be expressed with the *mi-trepa* ‘have a share’ construction, as described above). So:

(27) \( t^<em>a<ka\)-kesi=ku \\
     "<ITR><RED>study=1S.NOM"
     ‘I am studying.’

(28) \( a \ t^<em>a<ka\)-kesi=ku \\
     ID.NOM \ <ITR><RED>study=1S.NOM
     ‘I am a student.’

We find that the distinction between expressions of agents of characteristic activities and of agents of specific acts is lexically determined, as summarised in Table 7.4.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verbal stem</th>
<th>Agent of characteristic activities</th>
<th>Agent of specific acts</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>base ‘wash’</td>
<td><em>mi-trepa</em> <em>benase</em> ‘person making a living by washing clothes’</td>
<td><em>benabase</em> ‘the one who is washing clothes’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>maresiuk ‘cook’</td>
<td><em>mi-trepa</em> <em>maresiuk</em> ‘chef’</td>
<td><em>mararesiuk</em> ‘the one who is cooking’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| takesi ‘study’ | *temakakesi* ‘student’, ‘the one who is studying’ | }

### 7.3.2.3 Patient nouns

Patient nouns designate the patient of an action. Nouns in this category are often formed by affixing *-an*, with or without an affixation of *<in>* or *Ca*-reduplication. Examples found in this category are all derived from a dynamic verbal stem.
Patient nouns can be subdivided into four categories in terms of mood/aspect distinctions. Those suffixed only with -an have a meaning that is unmarked in aspect and mood, such as akan-an ‘food’, kiual-an ‘question’. Those infixed with <in> indicate a perfective meaning, for example ni-ekan-an ‘food eaten’. The suffix -an in patient nouns is omissible if the infix <in> is also present. Nouns that have undergone Ca- reduplication denote an irrealis meaning, for instance da-dirus-an ‘things that are going to be washed’. Sometimes, we find Ca- reduplication and <in> cooccur to derive a new noun. In these cases, there is often an imperfective or frequentative meaning. For example: d<in>a-da-way-an ‘half-done product’; s<in>a-sa-senay ‘songs often sung’. Some examples and their formation processes are given below.

Table 7.5: Patient nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Intransitive/Imperative</th>
<th>Derived noun</th>
<th>Formatives</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ekan</td>
<td>m-ekan/ekan ‘eat’</td>
<td>akan-an ‘food’</td>
<td>-an, stem modification</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>ni-ekan-an ‘food having been eaten’</td>
<td>&lt;in&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>a-akan-an ‘food going to be eaten’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>daway</td>
<td>d&lt;em&gt;away/daway ‘produce’</td>
<td>d&lt;in&gt;daway-an ‘product’</td>
<td>&lt;in&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>d&lt;in&gt;a-daway-an ‘semi-product’</td>
<td>Ca- + &lt;in&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rengay</td>
<td>ma-rengay/rengay ‘say’</td>
<td>ni-rengay-an ‘things said’</td>
<td>&lt;in&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>ra-rengay-an ‘things to be said’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>senay</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;enay/senay ‘sing’</td>
<td>sa-senay-an ‘songs to be sung’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>s&lt;in&gt;a-sa-senay ‘songs often sung’</td>
<td>Ca- + &lt;in&gt; + Ca-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Examples of their use follow:

(29) a. ulaya ku=ra-rengay-an a saya exist 1S.PSR=RED-say-NMZ ID.NOM one ‘I have one thing to say.’

b. idri ku=ni-rengay-an i, ... this.NOM 1S.PSR =PERF-say-NMZ TOP ‘This, what I have said, …’

7.3.2.4 Instrumental nouns

Most instrumental nouns are formed by affixing -an or Ca- reduplication, or both. Note that <in> is never used as a formative in this category.
### Table 7.6: Instrumental nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Intransitive/Imperative</th>
<th>Derived noun</th>
<th>Formatives</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-lrinay</td>
<td>ma-lrinay/ka-lrinay ‘amuse’</td>
<td>ka-lra-lrinay-an ‘toy’</td>
<td>ka- + Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>traba</td>
<td>tr&lt;em&gt;aba&lt;traba ‘roast’</td>
<td>tra-traba-an ‘grill’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>litek</td>
<td>pa-litek/pa-litek ‘make cold’</td>
<td>pa-la-litek-an ‘cooler; air conditioner’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sarekudr</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;arekudr/sarekudr ‘support’</td>
<td>sarekudr-an ‘a walking stick’</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aleb</td>
<td>a&lt;em&gt;lek/aleb ‘close’</td>
<td>aleb-an ‘door’</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tilru</td>
<td>t&lt;em/ilru/tilru ‘tie’</td>
<td>ta-tilru ‘rope’</td>
<td>Ca-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tukudr</td>
<td>t&lt;em&gt;ukudr/tukudr ‘withstand’</td>
<td>ta-tukudr ‘pillar’</td>
<td>Ca-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

There are also a number of instrumental nouns which have the same form as their verbal root, such as: tawasi ‘a brush, to brush’, kuang ‘a gun, to shoot’, tabukul ‘a fish-net, to fish’. For example:

(30)  
tawasi  dra  kiping
brush ID.OBL clothes
‘Brush the clothes!’

(31)  
tr<em>ima=ku dra tawasi
<ITR>buy=1S.NOM ID.OBL brush
‘I bought a brush.’

Instrumental nouns of this type are not discussed here because it is not clear if there is nominalisation involved. Recall that roots can be nominal, verbal, or pre-categorial, and examples such as tawasi, kuang, and tabukul are pre-categorial roots (see also §4.3.2).

#### 7.3.2.5 Locative nouns

Locative nouns are created from verbs to indicate the place where the action takes place. Although the presence of -an does not guarantee that the given element will denote the meaning of location, locative nouns mostly end with the suffix -an, with only one exceptional example found in the corpus (marayas ‘flat’ > marayarayas ‘plain’). Basically, four types of locative noun can be distinguished: those only suffixed with -an, those taking Ca- reduplication (or <a> infixation), those taking CVCV- reduplication, and those having the <in> infix.
Table 7.7: Locative nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Intransitive/Imperative</th>
<th>Derived noun</th>
<th>Formatives</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>alup</td>
<td>alup/alup ‘hunt’</td>
<td>alup-an ‘hunting place’</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>takesi</td>
<td>t&lt;em&gt;akesi/takesi ‘study’</td>
<td>takesi-an ‘school’</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dirus</td>
<td>d&lt;em&gt;irus/dirus ‘wash; play with water’</td>
<td>da-dirus-an ‘bathroom’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>diru-dirus-an ‘swimming pool’</td>
<td>CVCV- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>daway</td>
<td>d&lt;em&gt;daway/daway ‘produce’</td>
<td>dawa-daway-an ‘studio; factory’</td>
<td>CVCV- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-lrinay</td>
<td>ma-lринay/ka-lринay ‘amuse’</td>
<td>ka-lrina-lринay-an ‘amusement park’</td>
<td>ka- +CVCV- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>palu</td>
<td>palu/palu ‘demarcate’</td>
<td>pa-palu-an ‘boundary’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bekas</td>
<td>bekas/ka-bekas ‘run’</td>
<td>k&lt;in&gt;a-bekas-an ‘path having been run’</td>
<td>ka- +&lt;in&gt;+ -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-edreng</td>
<td>m-iедreng/k-iедreng ‘sleep’</td>
<td>k-i&lt;in&gt;a-edreng-an ‘bed’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>k&lt;in&gt;iедreng-an ‘place slept at before’</td>
<td>k- +&lt;in&gt;+ -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-rayas</td>
<td>ma-rayas ‘flat’</td>
<td>ma-raya-rayas ‘plain’</td>
<td>CVCV-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

As the examples above show, locative nouns formed by the first three processes all suggest places characterised by certain events, but the formation processes are unpredictable, although CVCV- reduplication with -an seems to be the most productive one from the corpus. On the other hand, locative nouns formed by <in> (with -an) do not refer to places typically associated with the named event; they can refer to any place where the named action has taken place. Compare the following two sentences. In (32), the locative noun is derived from m-iедreng ‘lie down; sleep’ by using the irrealis form suffixed with -an; in (33), the locative noun is derived from takesi ‘study’. Both of the examples denote a location that is typically associated with the named action.

(32)  unian=ku  i  k-i<in>a-edreng-an
      not.exist=1S.NOM  LOC  <in>sleep-NMZ
‘I wasn’t in bed.’

(33)  druа=dar  i  takesi-an  m-aya-a  kanku
      come=FREQ  LOC  study-NMZ  ITR-find-PJ  1S.OBL
‘It often came to school to find me.’

On the other hand, in (34) and (35), the locative nouns are derived from kadru ‘be there’ and m-iедreng ‘lie down, sleep’ respectively, and they can denote any place where the named action has previously taken place.

(34)  m-uka  t<em>ungu-tungur-a  dratu  k<in>a-edreng-an
      ITR-go  <ITR>RED-pop.in.and.look-PJ  ID.OBL/3.PSR  <PERF>there-NMZ
‘It popped in and looked at the place where it used to live.’
There is a further distinction between locative nouns formed by <in> and all other types. While locative nouns without <in> are usually preceded by i, locative nouns with <in> are never preceded by the noun phrase marker i. They are usually preceded by a genitive pronoun referring to a discourse participant and are sometimes preceded by na or dra. This suggests that the two types of locative nouns, with or without <in>, are syntactically different. Those with <in> are in fact nominalised RCs without a PIBU (§5.6.3).

### 7.3.2.6 Temporal nouns

Temporal nouns are formed from verbs to denote the time an action takes place. Not many examples are found in the text corpus, but elicited data show that their formation processes are similar to those of patient nouns: a distinction between unmarked, perfective, and irrealis can be made. These nouns are never formed by suffixing -an alone. Temporal nouns that are unmarked for aspect/mood always contain a circumfix ka--an ‘a period of time’, regardless of whether the verb is dynamic or stative, as shown in the first three examples (sangalr, salrem, and bulray) in Table 7.8. Dynamic temporal nouns (e.g. berek and redek in Table 7.8) formed by Ca- (with -an) reduplication have an irrealis reading, whereas those formed with <in> (with -an) have a perfective reading.

**Table 7.8:** Temporal nouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Intransitive/Imperative</th>
<th>Derived noun</th>
<th>Formatives</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>sangalr</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;angalr/sangalr</td>
<td>ka-sangalr-an  ‘time to rejoice’</td>
<td>ka- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘rejoice’</td>
<td>ka-sangalr-an  ‘time to rejoice’</td>
<td>ka- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>salrem</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;alrem/salrem</td>
<td>ka-salrem-an   ‘time to sow’</td>
<td>ka- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘sow’</td>
<td>ka-salrem-an   ‘time to sow’</td>
<td>ka- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bulray</td>
<td>bulray/ka-bulray</td>
<td>ka-bulray-an   ‘time of being beautiful’</td>
<td>ka- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘beautiful’</td>
<td>ka-bulray-an   ‘time of being beautiful’</td>
<td>ka- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>berek</td>
<td>ma-berek/berek</td>
<td>ba-berek-an   ‘time to leave’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘leave’</td>
<td>ba-berek-an   ‘time to leave’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b&lt;in&gt;erek-an</td>
<td>‘time left’</td>
<td>&lt;in&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>redek</td>
<td>ma-redek/redek</td>
<td>ra-redek-an   ‘time to arrive’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘arrive’</td>
<td>ra-redek-an   ‘time to arrive’</td>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ni-redek-an</td>
<td>‘time arrived’</td>
<td>&lt;in&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-sikasik</td>
<td>ma-sikasik/ka-sikasik</td>
<td>ka-si&lt;em&gt;a&gt;kasik-an  ‘time to start off’</td>
<td>ka- + -a&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>‘start off’</td>
<td>ka-si&lt;em&gt;a&gt;kasik-an  ‘time to start off’</td>
<td>ka- + -a&gt; + -an</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Examples (36) and (37) illustrate the use of realis/irrealis distinction.

(36) nanku ba-berek-an=la  garem
    DF.NOM/1S.PSR RED-leave-NMZ=PERF  now
    ‘Now, it’s about time for my departure.’
Chapter 7

(37) nanku b<in>erek-an adaman
  DF.NOM/1S.PSR  <PERF>leave-NMZ  yesterday
  ‘Yesterday was the day of my departure.’

7.3.3 A summary of lexical nominalisation

Examples such as those given in §7.3.2 show that several formatives among the
nominalising morphemes are related to the mood/aspect formatives discussed in Chapter 6.
The formatives used in nominalisation are summarised in Table 7.9. ‘D’ and ‘S’ in Table 7.9
represent ‘Dynamic’ and ‘Stative’ respectively. Such a distinction is made in order to see if
the distinction is crucial in the formation process. However, the table shows there is no
obvious correspondence between dynamicity/stativity and the formation processes.

Table 7.9: Types of lexical nominalisation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ACT</th>
<th>STAT</th>
<th>AGT (D)</th>
<th>AGT (S)</th>
<th>PAT (D)</th>
<th>PAT (S)</th>
<th>INS T(D)</th>
<th>INS T(S)</th>
<th>LOC (D)</th>
<th>LOC (S)</th>
<th>TEM P (D)</th>
<th>TEMP (S)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-an</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka--an</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca- + -an</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-Ca- + -an</td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&lt;in&gt; + -an</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-&lt;in&gt; -an</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVCV--an</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-CVCV--an</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca-</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca-&lt;in&gt;-an</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca-&lt;in&gt;Ca-</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CVCV-</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PROG. form</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Except for patient nouns, nouns can be derived from both dynamic and stative verbal
roots. In the patient nouns category, -an is omissible if <in> is present. For other categories
of derived noun, -an must be present.

Some of the formatives used in nominalisation are also used in verbal constructions. These
formatives have similar functions in both constructions. For example, Ca- reduplication is
used to denote irrealis and progressive meaning, whereas CVCV- reduplication is used to mark
repetitive aspect in patient, locative, and temporal nouns. The more peculiar formatives are
those which contain <in> in conjunction with reduplication. From the table we can see that
these formatives basically occur in patient nouns and denote perfective (marked by <in>
alone), imperfective (marked by <in> plus Ca-) or frequentative (marked by <in> plus
CaCa-) aspect. Recall from §6.4.2 that in verbal constructions, the same aspectual categories,
perfective, imperfective and frequentative, are not signalled by verbal morphology but are
expressed by aspectual clitics =la, =driya and =dar respectively. Thus, nominalisations
express aspectual and modal categories by morphology alone while in verbal constructions
some categories are expressed by morphology and some by clitics. Table 7.10 is a summary of
aspect/mood categories distinguished in nominalisation.
Table 7.10: Aspect and mood in nominalisation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>unmarked</td>
<td>perfective</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ø</td>
<td>&lt;in&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca-&lt;in&gt;</td>
<td>CVCV-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca-&lt;in&gt;-Ca-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

7.3.4 Some other nominalising affixes

In addition to the noun-deriving processes discussed in §7.3.2 (which basically utilise the nominaliser -an combined with other aspect/mood formatives), there are several other nominalising affixes which are less productive.

7.3.4.1 ika-

The prefix ika- is often accompanied by Ca- reduplication to denote the meaning of ‘the shape of, the build-up of’, and it can be affixed to both dynamic and stative verbs. For instance:

(38) drua ki-pa-ladram-a a lalak kanantu ika-ta-tigir
    come get-CAUS-know-PJ ID.NOM child DF.OBL/3.PSR ika-RED-build.up
    kana trakuban
    DF.OBL boys’.house
    ‘A child came to ask about the construction of the boys’ meeting house.’

(39) pakumau dratu ika-u<lra>lrane kana tralrun
    confirm ID.OBL/3.PSR ika-<RED>fat DF.OBL grass
    ‘They checked the grass’ growth.’

7.3.4.2 ya-

This prefix is related to the expression of possession, and it usually cooccurs with a possessive pronouns, as shown below:

(40) sadru nu=ya-beray
    many 2S.PSR=ya-give
    ‘What you give is a lot.’

The nominaliser ya- is only attached to a dynamic verb root, and in such cases the meaning of the derived noun is very similar to that of the patient nouns discussed earlier. However, the translations of (40) and (41) indicate a difference in aspect: (40) is unmarked/indefinite and (41) is perfect/completion.

(41) sadru nu=b<in>eray
    many 2S.PSR =<PERF>give
    ‘What you’ve given is a lot.’


7.3.4.3 *si*-an

This circumfix forms a locative noun. There is only one example in the corpus. *si-druma-an* ‘other places; nonlocal’ < *druma* ‘other’. Compare (42) and (43).

(42) `tu=luluy-aw dra druma dra suan i nanali`
3.GEN=chase-TR1 ID.OBL other ID.OBL dog SG.NOM my.mother

‘Other dogs chased after my mother.’

(43) `adri=ta=driya me-na’u i si-druma-an`
NEG=1P.NOM=IMPF ITR-see LOC si-other-an

‘We haven’t seen (this) in other places.’

7.3.5 Gerundive nominals

Some derived nominals exhibit different morphosyntactic properties from typical nouns and appear to be syntactically derived rather than lexically derived. Gerundive nominals and lexical nominalisation take the same formatives to express different aspectual/modal meaning (see Table 7.10). A gerundive nominal is affixed with *-an* and optionally with one of the aspectual/modal formatives given in Table 7.10. When *<in>* is present, *-an* is optional. Consider the following sentences.

(44) `k<em>adru ku=<in>a-sagar-an dra suan`
<ITR>there IS.PSR=<PERF>ka-like-NMZ ID.OBL dog

‘My loving of dogs is like that.’

(45) `tu=pasisi-ay kan pilay dra tra-truak-an dra suan`
3.GEN=force-TR2 SG.OBL Pilay ID.OBL RED-kill-NMZ ID.OBL dog

‘Pilay forced him to kill dogs.’

In the above sentences, the derived nouns *k<in>a-sagar-an* and *tra-truak-an* take arguments, and they seem to possess both nominal and verbal properties. They are very similar to an English gerundive nominal as demonstrated in the following sentences.

(46) a. *He killed the dog.*

b. *His killing the dog annoyed us.*

Several linguists working on Formosan languages (Rau 2002; Tang 2002; Zeitoun 2002a) have also observed that a distinction between lexical and clausal (or syntactic) nominalisation can be made in terms of the different morphosyntactic properties they exhibit, even though they use the same formatives, such as *<in>*, *Ca-* reduplication, *CVCV*-reduplication, and *-an*. According to Comrie and Thompson (1985:391–393) a clausal nominal is a construction with no lexically derived noun. Clausal or syntactic nominals discussed by Rau (2002) and Tang (2002) seem to resemble Comrie and Thompson’s ‘action nominals’, which I call ‘gerundive nominals’ in the present study.

Comrie and Thompson (1985:358–391) define ‘action nominal’ as a noun phrase ‘which contains, in addition to a noun derived from a verb, one or more reflexes of a proposition or predicate’. In Puyuma, it is not always easy to make such a distinction, but in some cases there are clues showing whether a given construction is a lexical nominalisation or a gerundive nominal. First, as shown in (44) and (45), some nominals can take arguments and are therefore evidently gerundive. However, when there is no argument present, we often
cannot tell whether a given construction is a lexical nominal or a gerundive nominal. Second, as I mentioned in §4.3.3.1, different negators are used to negate a nominal and a verbal element in Puyuma. The negator *adri* is used with gerundive nominals, showing that they are verbal constructions.

(47) wa-alrak dra patrungrungan dra *adri* =driya
    go-take ID.OBL drum ID.OBL NEG =IMPF

  *b<in>arekep-an*³ dra kulritr
  <PERF>assemble-NMZ ID.OBL skin

  ‘Go get a drum that has not been assembled with a skin.’

A third clue is that gerundive nominals can be followed by an intransitive verb to form a serial verb construction. For example:

(48) *k<em>irami=ku=la* dra kiakarunan draku
    <TR>start=1S.NOM=PERF ID.OBL job ID.OBL/1S.PSR

  *ka-ruwa-an* kikarun
  ka-can-NMZ work

  ‘I started a job that I’m able to do.’

Genitive pronouns are used by Rau (2002), Tang (2002), and Zeitoun (2002a) as a diagnostic for distinguishing gerundive nominals from lexical nominals, but they are not valid evidence in Puyuma, because gerundive nominals, like lexical nominals, are not necessarily preceded by genitive pronouns; see (45).

Gerundive nominals typically function as an RC or a small NP which modifies the PIBU (§5.1.1 and §5.6.3), as in (47) and (48), or complementation (§14.2.2), as in (44) and (45). For instance, in (48), the gerundive nominal *draku ka-ruwa-an kikarun* is a small NP, modifying the PIBU *kiakarunan* ‘job’, which is a lexically derived nominal. A gerundive nominal functions as an RC only when the PIBU is the undergoer of the event denoted by the RC. If the PIBU is the actor of the event, the RC is manifested as a full clause with a finite verb.

³ There is no genitive pronoun preceding the gerundive nominal here, but I have no explanation for this. It seems to me that when the actor is not known, gerundive nominals can occur without the genitive pronoun, whose function is to denote the actor of the nominal. One more example is given below:

(49) *p<in>u-ngalrad* dra kuma
    <PERF>CAUS-name ID.OBL Kuma

  ‘Its being named Kuma …’
Transitivity

8.1 Introduction

This chapter discusses transitivity and argument structures in Puyuma. The transitivity status of a verb refers to the number of core arguments the given verb takes, excluding oblique arguments. Thus an intransive verb takes one core argument, a transitive verb takes two core arguments, and an ambient verb takes no core argument. Because the maximal number of core arguments a verb can take is two, there are no ditransitive verbs in Puyuma.

Transitivity and argument structures are closely related to subject choice. Like many Philippine-type languages, Puyuma has a ‘symmetrical voice’ system, which is defined by Himmelmann (2005:113) as one that has at least two voice alternations marked on the verb, neither of which is clearly the basic form. For instance, in Puyuma, the verb *trukulr* ‘pick off’ carries an actor voice (ITR) affix *<em>* in (1) and an undergoer voice (TR1) affix *-aw* in (2). The two verb forms *tr<em>*ukulr and *trukulr*-aw are thus equally marked morphologically.

(1) \( \text{tr<em>ukulr=ku dra sa’adr} \)

\( \text{<ITR>pick=1S.NOM ID.OBL branch} \)

‘I picked off (some) tree-branches.’

(2) \( \text{ku=trukulr-aw na sa’adr} \)

\( \text{1S.GEN=pick-TR1 DF.NOM branch} \)

‘I picked off the tree-branches.’

Until now I have simply assumed that an actor voice clause is intransitive, but it is a matter of controversy whether an actor voice clause that has two arguments (one the subject, marked nominative, and the other marked oblique) is transitive or intransitive, and this question in turn relates to how we define core and oblique arguments. To be exact, the question is whether the oblique-marked argument in an actor voice clause (e.g. *sa’adr* ‘branch’ in (1)) is a core argument or not.

1 Himmelmann’s (2005) use of ‘symmetrical voice’ is different from Foley’s (1998) and Arka’s (2003); while Himmelmann’s ‘symmetrical voice’ refers only to morphological markedness, Foley’s and Arka’s use of the term implies that both actor voice and undergoer voice clauses are transitive.

2 Although the main issue in this chapter is whether the actor voice is transitive or intransitive, I continue to gloss it ‘ITR’ for the sake of consistency. I have shown in §6.2 that TR1, TR2 and TR3 are variants of a single transitive (undergoer voice) construction. Here I will show that the actor voice is intransitive.
In (1) *sa’adr* ‘branch’ is an argument required by the semantics of the verb *tremukulr* ‘pick’, so it is not an adjunct. However, it is oblique-marked. If *sa’adr* is analysed as an oblique argument, then this clause is intransitive (the only core argument is =*ku* ‘I’); if it is analysed as a core argument, then this clause is transitive (with two core arguments =*ku* and *sa’adr*).

Although there has been a great quantity of research focusing on the peculiarity of the Philippine-type voice systems, including whether the system is accusatively or ergatively aligned,\(^3\) and how the notion of ‘subject’ can be appropriately applied to these languages,\(^4\) there is relatively little discussion about how to decide whether a given argument is core or not in the study of Austronesian languages.\(^5\)

This chapter will deal with the issues of transitivity and ergativity by looking at the syntactic status — core or oblique — of various arguments in both actor voice and undergoer voice (including TR1, TR2 and TR3) constructions. I will make a distinction between transitivity and valency. Valency is defined as the number of arguments required by the verb, including both core and oblique arguments. It thus differs from transitivity, which is determined by the number of core arguments only. Four types of verbs can be distinguished on the basis of valency: zero-valent, monovalent, bivalent and trivalent. See also §4.3.1.3 and §10.2.

The organisation of this chapter is as follows: in §8.2, the case marking of nouns and pronouns is explored, and in §8.3 a preliminary account of verbal clause patterns is given, followed by a discussion of the core-oblique distinction and transitivity in §8.4. Finally, the ergative properties of Puyuma are discussed in §8.5.

### 8.2 Case marking

Puyuma makes a three-way case-marking distinction among verbal arguments: nominative, marking the grammatical subject; genitive, marking the non-subject actor; and oblique, marking other arguments.

An argument may be a pronoun or a full NP. Table 8.1 summarises how each argument can be manifested.

---


\(^5\) There are a few exceptions: for example, Kroeger (1993) was one of the first to make this issue explicit; Chang and Tsai (2001) and Y.L. Chang (2004) use control as a major means to distinguish between a core argument and a peripheral argument in several Formosan languages; Arka (2003, 200f) assesses the core status of NPs in Balinese and several other Indonesian languages by looking at the syntactic properties of the NPs; H.C. Chang (2006) applies Arka’s methodology in her study of the core/oblique status of Paiwan NPs.
Table 8.1: The manifestation of arguments

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>Non-subject Actor</th>
<th>Others</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Pronoun</strong></td>
<td>pronominal clitic (NOM)</td>
<td>pronominal clitic (GEN)</td>
<td>free pronoun (OBL)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Full NP</strong></td>
<td>NP marker (NOM)</td>
<td>NP marker (OBL)</td>
<td>NP marker (OBL)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>possessor (NOM)</td>
<td>possessor (OBL)</td>
<td>possessor (OBL)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

As shown above, the case of an argument may be indicated by a pronominal clitic (§4.5.1.1), a free pronoun (§4.5.1.2), or a noun phrase marker (§4.3.1.2.2). The subject of a clause is encoded as nominative. It may be (i) the only argument of a monovalent verb (which might be an actor or an undergoer), as in (3) and (4); or (ii) the actor of a bivalent verb when the patient is indefinite, as in (5); or (iii) the definite undergoer of a bivalent verb, as in (6). The subject may be manifested as a pronominal clitic, as in (5), or a noun phrase preceded by a noun phrase marker, as in (4) and (6), or a noun phrase preceded by a possessor pronoun (bound or free),\(^6\) as in (3).

(3)  
drua nantu lalak
    come DF.NOM/3.PSR child
    ‘Her child came.’

(4)  
ma-ba’itr na patraka
    ITR-burn DF.NOM meat
    ‘The meat was burnt.’

(5)  
tr<em>aka-trakaw=ku dra akan-an
    <ITR>RED-steal=1S.NOM ID.OBL eat-NMZ
    ‘I stole food repeatedly.’

(6)  
ku=trekab-aw na basikaw
    1S.GEN=cut.open-TR1 DF.NOM bamboo
    ‘I cut the bamboo open.’

As (6) illustrates, the non-subject actor of a bivalent verb is encoded by a genitive proclitic pronoun, which is obligatory, i.e. it functions as an agreement marker. If there is a coreferential actor NP, this is marked as *obi*lique, as in (7), as there are no genitive-marked full NPs. The actor NP can be an NP preceded by a noun phrase marker, as in (7), or an NP preceded by a possessor pronoun (free), as in (8).

(7)  
tu=pes-pespes-ay kan kakawalan
    3.GEN=RED-massage-TR2 SG.OBL Kakawalan
    ‘Kakawalan kept massaging him.’ (Non-subject actor)

(8)  
tu=pes-pespes-ay kantu walak
    3.GEN=RED-massage-TR2 DF.OBL/3.PSR child
    ‘Her child kept massaging her.’

---

\(^6\) The free pronoun *nantu* in (3) can be replaced by a bound pronoun *tu=*.
An oblique NP may be (i) the non-subject actor of a bivalent verb (coreferenced by a genitive proclitic pronoun on the verb), as in (7); or (ii), the indefinite patient required by the valency of a bivalent verb, as in (9); or (iii) an adjunct, as in (10) and (11). It can be manifested as a free oblique pronoun, as in (11), or as an NP preceded by an oblique noun phrase marker, as in (9) and (10), or as an NP preceded by an oblique possessor pronoun, as in (8).

(9) \( tu=trakaw-anay \ dra \ paisu \ i \ tinataw \)
3.GEN=steal-TR3 ID.OBL money SG.NOM his.mother
‘He stole money for his mother.’ (Indefinite patient)

(10) \( tu=pa-langlang-anay \ kana \ apuy \)
3.GEN=CAUS-dry-TR3 DF.OBL fire
‘They made it dry with the fire.’ (Adjunct)

(11) \( tu=trakaw-aw \ na \ paisu \ kanku \)
3.GEN=steal-TR1 DF.NOM money 1S.OBL
‘He stole the money from me.’

The three types of argument illustrated above, namely the non-subject actor of a bivalent verb, the indefinite patient required by the valency of a bivalent verb, and an adjunct, have different syntactic behaviours, although they are all preceded by an oblique noun phrase marker. Their status as core or oblique is discussed in §8.4.

8.3 Verbal clause patterns and arguments

The four subject choices in Puyuma are described in §6.2. Examples are repeated here in (12) to (15).

(12) \( tr<em>akaw \ dra \ paisu \ i \ isaw \)
<ITR>steal ID.OBL money SG.NOM Isaw
‘Isaw stole money.’

(13) \( tu=trakaw-aw \ na \ paisu \ kan \ isaw \)
3.GEN=steal-TR1 DF.NOM money SG.OBL Isaw
‘Isaw stole the money.’

(14) \( tu=trakaw-ay=ku \ dra \ paisu \ kan \ isaw \)
3GEN=steal-TR2=1S.NOM ID.OBL money SG.OBL Isaw
‘Isaw stole money from me.’

(15) \( tu=trakaw-anay \ i \ tinataw \ dra \ paisu \)
3.GEN=steal-TR3 SG.NOM his.mother ID.OBL money
‘He stole money for his mother.’

7 We might expect the instrument apuy ‘fire’ to be the subject since the verb is in TR3 (CV) form, but here the subject is the thing being made dry, which is not overtly expressed in this sentence.
The order of the NPs in the templates below is flexible, and all free NPs can be omitted. If no nominative free NP is present, the sentence is interpreted as having a covert third person subject argument; however, the absence of an oblique free NP does not force a particular interpretation.

An actor voice verb takes a subject (nominative) argument and optionally an oblique argument, as in (16a) and (16b).

(16) a. $V^{AV} (\text{NP}^{\text{NOM}}) \quad tr<em>a-trekelr=mi <\text{ITR}>\text{RED-drink}=1P.NOM 'We were drinking.'

b. $V^{AV} (\text{NP}^{\text{OBL}}) (\text{NP}^{\text{NOM}}) \quad p<en>\text{angutr dra dare'} na mar-kataguin <\text{ITR}>\text{grab ID.OBL soil DF.NOM RECIP-spouse 'The couple grabbed some soil.'}

A genitive pronoun proclitic occurs obligatorily with an UV verb, marking the actor. The proclitic is coreferential with an oblique-marked actor NP, as shown in (17a) and (17b). An undergoer voice verb also takes a subject (nominative) undergoer NP and, if it is TR2 or TR3, an oblique patient NP.

(17) a. $\text{Pron}_i^{\text{GEN}=V^{\text{UV}}} (\text{NP}^{\text{NOM}}) (\text{NP}_i^{\text{OBL}}) \quad tu=ka-aw=ku=kan nanali 3.GEN=tell-TR1=1S.NOM SG.OBL my.mother 'My mother told me.'

b. $\text{Pron}_i^{\text{GEN}=V^{\text{UV}}} (\text{NP}^{\text{NOM}}) (\text{NP}_i^{\text{OBL}}) (\text{NP}_i^{\text{OBL}}) \quad tu=trakaw-ay=ku dra paisu kan isaw 3.GEN=steal-TR2=1S.NOM ID.OBL money SG.OBL Isaw 'Isaw stole money from me.'

Arguments are categorised in terms of the argument structure of the verb, and the case marking and semantic role of the arguments. From the perspective of semantic role, arguments are divided into three categories.

the actor (ACT), in one-, two- and three-participant clauses, e.g. $=mi$ in (16a), $na markataguin$ in (16b), $kan nanali$ in (17a) and $kan isaw$ in (17b);

the patient-like undergoer argument (PL), in two- and three-participant clauses, e.g. $dra dare'$ in (16b), $=ku$ in (17a) and $dra paisu$ in (17b);

the less-patient-like undergoer argument (LPL), in a three-participant clause, e.g. $=ku$ in (17b).

ACT and PL in turn have two possible case markings in different constructions, as shown in Table 8.2.

---

8 Puyuma and Tsou (cf. S. Huang 2002) are the only two examples among Formosan languages that have a proclitic coreferential with an oblique-marked actor NP.
Recall that in §6.2, a distinction between actor and undergoer voice was made with regard to two-participant clauses; however, for three-participant clauses, there is a need to distinguish among undergoer voice clauses between TR1 clauses on the one hand and TR2/TR3 clauses on the other. Three-participant TR2 and TR3 clauses are applicative-like, since an adjunct is promoted to the subject position.

The Actor is marked nominative in an actor voice clause, like =mi in (16a) and na markatagun in (16b), and genitive in a UV clause (optionally with a coreferential oblique-marked NP), like tu= (which agrees with kan tinataw) in (17a).

The PL is marked nominative in a TR1 clause, like =ku in (17a), but oblique in an actor voice clause (dra dare’ in (16b)) or a three-participant TR2/TR3 clause (dra paisu in (17b)).

The LPL is marked nominative in a three-participant TR2/TR3 clause, like =ku in (17b). It is an argument not required by the verbal valency, but which is promoted to the subject position in a three-participant TR2/TR3 clause and thus becomes an argument (the subject) in these clauses. The adjunct is shown in parentheses in Table 8.2 because it is not an argument of the verb. It is, however, the source of the nominative LPL.

Five categories of arguments are thus distinguished: ACT\textsuperscript{NOM}, ACT\textsuperscript{GEN}, PL\textsuperscript{NOM}, PL\textsuperscript{OBL}, and LPL\textsuperscript{NOM}. A mapping of the voice constructions and the five argument encodings is given in Table 8.2. An account of their syntactic behaviours is given in §8.4.1.

### 8.4 Transitivity and the syntactic status of the arguments

In §8.4.1 several syntactic diagnostics are applied in order to examine the syntactic status of the five categories of arguments. The transitivity of actor and undergoer clauses is dealt with in §8.4.2, and the occurrence of definite oblique PLs in actor voice clauses is treated in §8.4.3. This is followed by a discussion of the mapping between voice and transitivity in §8.4.4.

#### 8.4.1 The syntactic status of the five argument encodings

In the discussion below, I use five diagnostics to examine the syntactic status of the five argument encodings listed in §8.3. They are:

1. coreferencing clitics on the verb
2. control in SVCs
3. topicalisation
4. modification by a floating quantifier
5. raising from complement clauses

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 8.2: A mapping of clause types and role/case of arguments</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><img src="image" alt="Table" /></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>One participant clause</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Two participant clause</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Three participant clause</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UV: TR1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UV: TR2, TR3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
An argument that is able to trigger or participate in one or more of these processes is, in Van Valin and LaPolla’s terminology (1997:274–285), a ‘privileged syntactic argument’ (PSA). Van Valin and LaPolla point out that PSA is not a category across the whole grammar; it is defined by the individual construction. These behavioural properties are usually used only to test subjecthood in the literature (see Himmelmann 2005 for a summary and discussion), but they are used here, following Arka (2005), to test for core syntactic status.

### 8.4.1.1 Coreferencing clitics on the verb

In Puyuma, verbal clitics single out the special status of certain arguments. There may or may not also be a coreferential NP. On this basis, we can say that the genitive proclitic, which refers to a non-subject actor (ACT\(^{\text{GEN}}\)), and the nominative enclitic, which refers to the subject (ACT\(^{\text{NOM}}\), PL\(^{\text{NOM}}\), and LPL\(^{\text{NOM}}\)), are core arguments. The nouns *buwang* ‘hole’, *walak* ‘child’, and *paisu* ‘money’ in (18), (19) and (20) respectively are all marked for oblique case. In (19) *walak* is coreferenced by a genitive bound pronoun and is a core argument (ACT\(^{\text{GEN}}\)). The nouns *buwang* in (18), an adjunct, and *paisu* in (20), a PL\(^{\text{OBL}}\), are not coreferenced by a bound pronoun and are by this criterion not core.

1. \(tu=lasedr-aw\) kana *buwang* i temutaw
   \(3.\text{GEN}=\text{hide-TR1} \text{ DF.OBL} \text{ hole SG.NOM} \text{ his.grandparent}\)
   ‘He hid his grandmother in the hole.’
2. \(tu=padrek-aw\) i temutaw kana *walak*
   \(3.\text{GEN}=\text{carry.on.back-TR1} \text{ SG.NOM} \text{ his.grandparent DF.OBL} \text{ child}\)
   ‘The child carried his grandmother on his back.’
3. \(tu=trakaw-anay\) dra *paisu* i tinataw
   \(3.\text{GEN}=\text{steal-TR3} \text{ ID.OBL} \text{ money SG.NOM} \text{ his.mother}\)
   ‘He stole money for his mother.’

There is a small complication with the verbal clitic test, as there is no third-person nominative enclitic. However, as first- and second-person nominative enclitics occur and the status of a third-person nominative NP is otherwise identical to a first or second person nominative, this is not a problem. For instance:

1. a. \(sagar=ku\) dra suan
   \(\text{like}=\text{1S.NOM} \text{ ID.OBL} \text{ dog}\)
   ‘I like dogs.’

2. b. \(sagar\) dra suan
   \(\text{like} \text{ ID.OBL} \text{ dog}\)
   ‘S/he/They like dogs.’

### 8.4.1.2 Control in serial verb constructions

Another diagnostic for corehood is argument sharing in serial verb constructions (§13.2.1). This is the syntactic process whereby one argument of the first verb is coreferential with the deleted subject of the second verb.
Only \(\text{ACT}^{\text{NOM}}\), \(\text{ACT}^{\text{GEN}}\), and \(\text{PL}^{\text{NOM}}\) are controllers, as shown in (22), (23) and (24) respectively. In (22) \(=\text{k}u\) is the subject, and in (23) \(\text{tu}^=\) is the non-subject actor, but each of them is coreferential with the deleted subject of the second verb.

(22) \[\text{kurudung}^=\text{k}u \quad \text{miedren} \quad \text{kana} \quad \text{tutui}\]

\(\text{lean.against}=\text{1S.NOM} \quad \text{sleep} \quad \text{DF.OBL} \quad \text{puppy}\)

‘I leant against the puppy to sleep.’

(23) \[\text{tu}^=\text{brugas-aw} \quad \text{me-na’u}\]

\(3.\text{GEN}=\text{lift.up-TR1} \quad \text{ITR-see}\)

‘He lifted it up to see.’

(24) \[\text{tu}^=\text{bau-buai-aw}^=\text{k}u \quad \text{m-uka} \quad \text{i} \quad \text{takesi-an}\]

\(3.\text{GEN}=\text{RED-push-TR1}=\text{1S.NOM} \quad \text{ITR-go} \quad \text{LOC} \quad \text{study-NMZ}\)

‘She kept pushing me to go to school.’

\(\text{PL}^{\text{OBL}}\) and \(\text{LPL}^{\text{NOM}}\) cannot be controllers, as shown in (25) and (26).

(25) \[\text{ma-tara-padrek}^=\text{k}u^i \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{walak}^j \quad \text{me-languy}^i/^j\]

\(\text{ITR-take-carry.on.back}=\text{1S.NOM} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{child} \quad \text{ITR-swim}\)

‘I carried a child on my back swimming.’

(26) \[\text{tu}^i=\text{trakaw-ay}^=\text{k}u^j \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{paisu} \quad \text{tr<em>ima’}^i/^j \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{kiping}\]

\(3\text{GEN}=\text{steal-TR2}=\text{1S.NOM} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{money} \quad <\text{ITR}>\text{buy} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{clothes}\)

‘She stole money from me to buy clothes.’

### 8.4.1.3 Topicalisation

Another useful diagnostic is topicalisation, i.e. fronting with the topic-marker \(i\). In Puyuma, there are many structural units that can be topicalised, including a temporal adjunct, a locative adjunct, or a whole clause denoting the reason, cause, time, and so on, i.e. a clausal adjunct (§4.5.7). However, with regard to arguments, only arguments denoting the subject (\(\text{ACT}^{\text{NOM}}, \text{PL}^{\text{NOM}}, \text{and} \text{LPL}^{\text{NOM}}\)) or the non-subject actor (\(\text{ACT}^{\text{GEN}}\)) can be put in topic position. For instance, in (27b), the argument in the topic position, \(\text{dradrungaw}\), is \(\text{ACT}^{\text{NOM}}\). In (28b), \(\text{driketran}\) ‘sticky rice’ is \(\text{PL}^{\text{NOM}}\). In (29b), \(\text{bira}\) ‘leaf’ is \(\text{LPL}^{\text{NOM}}\).

(27) a. \[\text{adri} \quad \text{mi-kataguin} \quad \text{i} \quad \text{dradrungaw}\]

\(\text{NEG} \quad \text{have-spouse} \quad \text{SG.NOM} \quad \text{Dradrungaw}\)

‘Dradrungaw didn’t have a spouse.’

b. \[\text{i} \quad \text{dradrungaw} \quad \text{i}, \quad \text{adri} \quad \text{mi-kataguin}\]

\(\text{TOP} \quad \text{SG.NOM} \quad \text{Dradrungaw} \quad \text{TOP} \quad \text{NEG} \quad \text{have-spouse}\)

‘Dradrungaw, she didn’t have a spouse.’

(28) a. \[\text{ta}=\text{ilrang-aw} \quad \text{dra} \quad \text{enay} \quad \text{na} \quad \text{driketr-an}\]

\(1P.\text{GEN}=\text{grind-TR1} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{water} \quad \text{DF.NOM} \quad \text{sticky-NMZ}\)

‘We grind the sticky rice with water.’

---

9 \(\text{LPL}^{\text{NOM}}\) cannot be a controller in this particular example, but I do not exclude the possibility that it can be a controller when there is an appropriate context, e.g. ‘she stole money for me to buy clothes.’
b. na drikdr-an i, ta=ilrang-aw dra enay
DF.NOM sticky-NMZ TOP 1P.GEN=grind-TR1 ID.OBL water
‘The sticky rice, we grind it with water.’

(29) a. ta=liripur-anay dra kuraw na bira’
1P.GEN=wrap-TR3 ID.OBL fish DF.NOM leaf
‘We wrapped fish with the leaves.’

b. na bira’ i, ta=liripur-anay dra kuraw
DF.NOM leaf TOP 1P.GEN=wrap=TR3 ID.OBL fish
‘The leaves, we use them to wrap fish.’

In (30a), ACT\textsuperscript{GEN} can be topicalised, but there is always a genitive proclitic in the main clause. When it is put in the topic position, it is marked nominative, as in (30b).

(30) a. tu=padrek-aw i temutaw kana walak
3GEN=carry-TR1 SG.NOM his.grandparent DF.OBL child
‘The child carried his grandmother on his back.’

b. idru na walak i, tu=padrek-aw i
that.NOM DF.NOM child TOP 3GEN=carry-TR1 SG.NOM

temutaw
his.grandparent
‘That child, he carried his grandmother on his back.’

PL\textsuperscript{OBL} may not be topicalised, as shown in (31b).

(31) a. tr<em>ikelr dra sa’adr
<ITR>pick ID.OBL branch
‘She picked up some branches.’

b. *na/dra sa’adr i, tr<em>ikelr
DF.NOM/ID.OBL branch TOP <ITR>pick

8.4.1.4 Floating quantifier

The next diagnostic for testing corehood modification is the floating quantifier peniya.\textsuperscript{10}
Nominative arguments, ACT\textsuperscript{NOM}, PL\textsuperscript{NOM}, and LPL\textsuperscript{NOM}, can be modified by peniya ‘all’.

(32) karuwa t<em>ubang na la hak peniya
can <ITR>answer DF.NOM child all
‘All the children can answer.’

(33) ta=kan-aw=la peniya na kuraw
1P.GEN=eat-TR1=PERF all DF.NOM fish
‘We have eaten all the fish.’

\textsuperscript{10} The word \textit{p<en>iya} has two meanings: it means ‘finish’ when it occurs as V1 of an SVC (§13.4.2), and it means ‘all’ in other situations.
If the clause includes both ACT\textsuperscript{GEN} (expressed by an oblique-marked NP and coreferenced by a genitive clitic) and PL\textsuperscript{NOM}, two readings are possible, i.e. peniya can modify either argument.

\begin{equation}
tu=kan-aw\quad na\quad kuraw\quad kana\quad lalak\quad peniya
\end{equation}
\begin{center}
3GEN=eat-TR1\quad DF.NOM\quad fish\quad DF.OBL\quad child\quad all
\end{center}

‘All of the children ate the fish.’

‘The children ate all of the fish.’

PL\textsuperscript{OBL} and adjuncts are not modified by peniya. In (36), peniya modifies bira’ ‘leaf’ (LPL\textsuperscript{NOM}), not kuraw ‘fish’ (PL\textsuperscript{OBL}).

\begin{equation}
tu=lriputr-anay\quad na\quad bira’\quad peniya\quad dra\quad kuraw
\end{equation}
\begin{center}
3GEN=wrap-TR3\quad DF.NOM\quad leaf\quad all\quad ID.OBL\quad fish
\end{center}

‘She wrapped fish with all of the leaves.’

‘*She wrapped all of the fish with leaves.’

\section*{8.4.1.5 Raising from a complement clause}

The next syntactic diagnostic is whether it is possible to raise the argument from a complement clause to the matrix clause. All the argument encodings except PL\textsuperscript{OBL} may be raised out of a complement clause. In the following examples, complement clauses are indicated by brackets, and the argument raised is underlined. Raising is illustrated in the (b) example in each instance. In (37b) ACT\textsuperscript{NOM} is raised, in (38b) ACT\textsuperscript{GEN}, in (39b) PL\textsuperscript{NOM}, and in (40b) LPL\textsuperscript{NOM}.

\begin{equation}
ma-ladram=ku\quad [dra\quad m-ekan\quad dra\quad kuraw\quad i\quad pilay]
\end{equation}
\begin{center}
ITR-know=1S.NOM\quad COMP\quad ITR\-eat\quad ID.OBL\quad fish\quad SG.NOM\quad Pilay
\end{center}

‘I know that Pilay eats fish.’

\begin{equation}
ma-ladram=ku\quad kan\quad pilay\quad [dra\quad m-ekan\quad dra\quad kuraw]
\end{equation}
\begin{center}
ITR-know=1S.NOM\quad SG.OBL\quad Pilay\quad COMP\quad ITR\-eat\quad ID.OBL\quad fish
\end{center}

‘I know that Pilay eats fish.’

\begin{equation}
ma-ladram=ku\quad [dra\quad tu=lriputr-aw=la\quad na\quad kuraw\quad kan\quad nanali,]
\end{equation}
\begin{center}
kuraw\quad kan\quad nanali,\quad]
\end{center}
\begin{center}
fish\quad SG.OBL\quad my.mother
\end{center}

‘I know that my mother has wrapped the fish.’

\begin{equation}
ma-ladram=ku\quad kan\quad nanali\quad [dra\quad tu=lriputr-aw=la\quad na\quad kuraw\quad]
\end{equation}
\begin{center}
kuraw\quad kan\quad nanali\quad]
\end{center}
\begin{center}
3_GEN=wrap-TR1=PERF\quad DF.NOM\quad fish
\end{center}

‘I know that my mother has wrapped the fish.’
(39) a. \( ma-ladram=ku \ [dra \ tu=lripur-traw \ na \ kuraw \] \)
\( \text{ITR-know=1S.NOM \ COMP 3.GEN=wrap-TR1 \ DF.NOM \ fish} \)
\( \text{id.OBL \ leaf} \)
‘I know that the fish was wrapped in a leaf.’

b. \( ma-ladram=ku \ kana \ kuraw \ [dra \ tu=lripur-traw \ dra \ bira'] \)
\( \text{ITR-know=1S.NOM \ DF.OBL \ fish \ COMP 3.GEN=wrap-TR1 \ ID.OBL \ leaf} \)
‘I know that the fish was wrapped in a leaf.’

(40) a. \( ma-ladram=ku \ [dra \ tu=lripur-anay \ dra \ kuraw \ na \ bira'] \)
\( \text{ITR-know=1S.NOM \ COMP 3.GEN=wrap-TR3 \ ID.OBL \ fish \ DF.NOM \ leaf} \)
‘I know that the leaf was used to wrap fish.’

b. \( ma-ladram=ku \ kana \ bira' [dra \ tu=lripur-anay \ dra \ kuraw] \)
\( \text{ITR-know=1S.NOM \ DF.OBL \ leaf \ COMP 3.GEN=wrap-TR3 \ ID.OBL \ fish} \)
‘I know that the leaf was used to wrap fish.’

In (41) an PL^{OBL} may not be raised to the matrix clause.

(41) a. \( ma-ladram=ku \ [dra \ tu=lripur-anay \ dra \ kuraw \ na \ bira'] \)
\( \text{ITR-know=1S.NOM \ COMP 3.GEN=wrap-TR3 \ ID.OBL \ fish \ DF.NOM \ leaf} \)
‘I know that the leaf was used to wrap fish.’

b. \( *ma-ladram=ku \ dra \ kuraw \ [dra \ tu=lripur-anay \ na \ bira'] \)

The result of the five syntactic tests is summarised in Table 8.3.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 8.3: Morphosyntactic properties of argument encodings</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>ACT</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clitic on verbs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>control in SVCs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>topicalisation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>being modified by <em>peniya</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>raised from complement</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.3 shows that an oblique-marked PL cannot launch any of the syntactic processes. This means that, of the five argument encodings, PL^{OBL} can be regarded as non-core, whilst the other four encodings are core arguments.
8.4.1.6 PL^{OBL} vs adjunct

Should a PL^{OBL} be treated as an adjunct? No, for the following two reasons. First, while a PL is required by verbal valency, an adjunct is not. Second, the definiteness of a PL will force a subject-choice alternation, while the definiteness of an adjunct will not.

The patient (PL) of an actor voice clause or a three-argument TR2/TR3 clause is indefinite, as shown in (42) and (43).

(42) a. \textit{an tr<em>ekelr}=ta \textit{dra eraw i, …}
\begin{align*}
\text{when } &\text{<ITR>drink}=1P.NOM \text{ ID.OBL wine TOP} \\
\end{align*}
‘When we drink \textit{wine, …}’

b. \textit{*an tr<em>ekelr}=ta \textit{kana eraw i}
\begin{align*}
\text{when } &\text{<ITR>drink}=1P.NOM \text{ DF.OBL wine TOP} \\
\end{align*}

(43) a. \textit{tu=kiwitr}=ay \textit{i temamataw dra patraka}
\begin{align*}
\text{3.GEN=grab-TR2 SG.NOM their.father ID.OBL meat} \\
\end{align*}
‘They grabbed \textit{meat} from their father.’

b. \textit{*tu=kiwitr}=ay \textit{i temamataw kana patraka}
\begin{align*}
\text{3.GEN=grab-TR2 SG.NOM their.father DF.OBL meat} \\
\end{align*}

If there is a definite patient, it must be the subject of the clause and thus will cause a subject-choice alternation: from ITR to TR1, as shown in comparison of (42) and (44); or from TR2/TR3 to TR1, as shown in comparison of (43) and (45).

(44) \textit{ta=trekelr}=aw \textit{na eraw}
\begin{align*}
\text{1P.GEN=drink-TR1 DF.NOM wine} \\
\end{align*}
‘We drank the wine.’

(45) \textit{tu=kiwitr}=aw \textit{na patraka}
\begin{align*}
\text{3.GEN=grab-TR1 DF.NOM meat} \\
\end{align*}
‘They grabbed the meat.’

On the other hand, the definiteness of an adjunct does not cause a subject-choice alternation. For example, in the following sentences, trabak ‘box’ and tatilru ‘string’ can be either definite or indefinite.

(46) \textit{tu=abak}=aw \textit{na bulra-bulray}=an \textit{kana/dra trabak}
\begin{align*}
\text{3.GEN=pack-TR1 ID.NOM RED-beautiful-NMZ DF.OBL/ID.OBL box} \\
\end{align*}
‘They packed the girl into the/a box.’

(47) \textit{tu=betbet}=aw \textit{kana/dra tatilru na trabak}
\begin{align*}
\text{3.GEN=tie-TR1 ID.OBL/ID.OBL string DF.NOM box} \\
\end{align*}
‘They tied the box with (the) string.’

Based on the two facts that a PL is required by verbal valency and its definiteness will force a subject-choice alternation, we can say that a PL^{OBL} is syntactically different from an adjunct.

8.4.2 Transitivity

Different points of view about transitivity in Philippine-type languages are held by different linguists. Some linguists, e.g. Starosta (1997; 1999) with regard to Philippine-type
languages in general, assert that undergoer voice sentences are transitive while actor voice sentences are intransitive. Others, e.g. Kroeger (1993) with regard to Tagalog, suggest that both actor voice and undergoer voice sentences are transitive. Ross (2002) points out that the matter of transitivity can be viewed from two angles: semantics and morphosyntax. In the following section, I will look at how Puyuma sentences can be analysed from these two perspectives.

8.4.2.1 Semantic transitivity

From a semantic perspective, a prototypical transitive clause is one which has an agentive participant and a patient participant whose referent is significantly affected by the action denoted by the verb. In Puyuma the undergoer voice construction is clearly transitive in this sense.

Among studies of semantic transitivity, Hopper and Thompson’s (1980:251–253) work is the most influential. They show that if a language distinguishes between transitive and intransitive constructions, there are certain semantic features which are more likely to be associated with the transitive construction, while their absence is more likely to be associated with the intransitive.

Among these features, individuation of O is the most relevant factor when we look at the Puyuma sentences. Individuation of O refers to properties such as being proper, human/animate, concrete, singular, count, and referential/definite (as opposed to common, inanimate, abstract, plural, mass, and non-referential/indefinite). As was mentioned in 8.4.1, in Puyuma texts a definite PL in an independent clause will be chosen to be the subject, and the sentence will be manifested as UV. This confirms Hopper and Thompson’s observation. For example:

\[(48)\] \[puka=ku \text{ } \text{ } dra \text{ } 'aputr\]
\[\text{add=1S.NOM} \text{ } \text{ } \text{ID.OBL} \text{ } \text{flower}\]
‘I added some flowers.’

\[(49)\] \[ku=puka-ay \text{ } \text{ } na \text{ } 'aputr \text{ } dra \text{ } pakering\]
\[\text{1S.GEN}=\text{add-TR2} \text{ } \text{DF.NOM} \text{ } \text{flower} \text{ } \text{ID.OBL} \text{ } \text{hook}\]
‘I added some hooks to the wreath.’

8.4.2.2 Morphosyntactic transitivity

From a morphosyntactic point of view, a sentence is transitive if it has at least two core arguments. We are now in a position to re-examine the syntactic templates presented in §8.3 with regard to their transitivity. We have seen in §8.4.1 that nominative and genitive arguments (ACT$^{\text{NOM}}$, PL$^{\text{NOM}}$, LPL$^{\text{NOM}}$, and ACT$^{\text{GEN}}$) are core because they are syntactically privileged arguments: they participate in the syntactic operations. Accordingly, the UV templates in (51) are transitive, because there is always a nominative-marked (PL$^{\text{NOM}}$ or LPL$^{\text{NOM}}$) and a genitive (ACT$^{\text{GEN}}$) argument. The actor voice templates in (50), on the other hand, are intransitive. Example (50a) has only a nominative argument and is thus intransitive. The oblique argument in (50b) is PL$^{\text{OBL}}$ and therefore non-core, leaving just the nominative as a core argument, so (50b) is also intransitive.
The subtypes that have an oblique-marked patient are exemplified in (50b) and (51b). We saw in §8.4.1 that oblique-marked patients belong to the argument structure of the verb, i.e. the patient is required by verbal valency, and they are not adjuncts. For this reason, the transitivity of these sentences is not as straightforward as those shown in (50a) and (51a) because of the seemingly intermediate status of the oblique-marked patient. In Dixon’s (1994:120-124) terminology the templates in (50b) and (51b) are respectively an ‘extended intransitive construction’ and an ‘extended transitive construction’. The ‘extension’ in each construction is required by the argument structure of the verb, but does not behave as a core argument in any syntactic construction.

8.4.3 Instances where there is a definite oblique PL

I wrote in §8.4.1.6 that the PL of an actor voice clause is indefinite. However, there are a few instances in the corpus where the PL of an actor voice clause is definite. These exceptional cases fall into four categories. First, the constraint that a definite PL must be subject only applies in circumstances where a bivalent verb can appear in undergoer voice form. When a non-initial verb of an SVC or the verb of an RC is forced by its construction into the actor voice form, the PL may be definite. The second verb of an SVC must be an actor voice verb (§13.2.2.1) and as a result it breaks the constraint. Similarly, in a relative clause where the NP_{rel} is the actor, the RC must be an actor voice clause (§5.6.3), which in turn may cause a situation where the oblique PL in an AV clause is definite.

Second, there are some verbs that have no corresponding transitive forms and always appear in intransitive forms. For example, for the verbs masepel ‘disappoint’ and sarepa ‘satisfy’ there are no such forms as sepal-aw, sepal-ay, ka-sepel-aw or ka-sepel-ay, and no sarepa-aw, sarepa-ay, ka-sarepa-aw or ka-sarepa-ay.
(52) a. sarepa=ku kantu ngai  
satisfy=1S.NOM DF.OBL/3.PSR word  
‘I am satisfied with his words.’  
b. *ku=sarepa-ay nantu ngai

In addition, there are certain verbs that have different meanings in their actor and undergoer voice forms. These verbs include verbs denoting perception ((53) to (54)), cognition ((55) to (56)), and psychological states ((57) to (60)). In other words, the semantics of these actor voice verbs are different from their corresponding undergoer voice forms (e.g. ‘see’ vs ‘watch over’ in (53); ‘hear’ vs ‘listen to’ in (54); ‘know’ vs ‘recognise’ in (55)).

(53) a. me-na’u=ku kana sinsi i dalran  
ITR-see=1S.NOM DF.OBL teacher LOC road  
‘I saw the teacher on the street.’  
b. ku=na’u-ay na sinsi (*i dalran)  
1S.GEN=see-TR2 DF.NOM teacher  
‘I watched over (took care of) the teacher.’  
‘*I watched over the teacher on the street.’

(54) a. kilengaw=ta kantu senay kana sinsi  
hear=1S.NOM DF.OBL/3.PSR song DF.OBL teacher  
‘We heard the teacher’s song.’  
b. an tu=turu-ay=yu kana sinsi (*i, kilengaw-i)  
when 3GEN=exhort-TR2=2S.NOM DF.OBL teacher TOP hear-TR2.IMP  
‘When the teacher is exhorting you, listen (to him).’  
c. kilengaw=ku kana hikoki  
hear=1S.NOM DF.OBL plane  
‘I heard the plane.’  
d. *ku=kilengaw-ay na hikoki  
‘*I listened to the plane.’

(55) a. ma-ladram=yu kandru na trau?  
ITR-know=1S.NOM that.OBL LK person  
‘Do you know the person?’  
b. tu=ka-ladram-ay=ku kan pilay  
3GEN=ka-know-TR2=1S.NOM SG.OBL Pilay  
‘Pilay recognised me.’

(56) a. ma-ulrid=ku kanu ngai  
ITR-don’t.know=1S.NOM DF.OBL/2S.PSR word  
‘I don’t understand your words.’  
b. nu=ka-ulrid-ay=ku  
2S.GEN=ka-don’t.know-TR2=1S.NOM  
‘You didn’t inform me.’
Transitivity

(57) a. masupeng=ku kan nanali
miss=1S.NOM SG.OBL my.mother
‘I miss my mother.’

b. ku=supeng-ay i nanali
1S.GEN=kiss-TR2 SG.NOM my.mother
‘I kissed my mother.’

(58) a. igela=ku kanu
embarrassed=1S.NOM 2S.OBL
‘I felt embarrassed (toward you).’

b. ku=k-igela-ay=yu
1S.GEN=ka-respect-TR2=2S.NOM
‘I respect you.’

(59) a. sagar=ku kanu
like=1S.NOM 2S.OBL
‘I like you.’ (without any specific reason)

b. ku=ka-sagar-aw=yu
1S.GEN=ka-like-TR1=2S.NOM
‘I cosset you.’ (because of a specific reason)

(60) a. indang=ku kanu
afraid=1S.NOM 2S.OBL
‘I am afraid of you.’ (without a specific reason)

b. *indang=ku kana kakuwalrengan
afraid=1S.NOM DF.OBL disease
‘I’m afraid of the disease.’

(61) a. *kilengaw=ku kana sinsi s<em>enay
hear=1S.NOM DF.OBL teacher <ITR>sing
‘I heard the teacher sing.’

b. ku=kilengaw-ay na sinsi s<em>enay
1S.GEN=hear-TR2 DF.NOM teacher <ITR>sing
‘I listened to the teacher’s singing.’
(62) a. *indang=ku kan isaw m-u-dalep
afraid=1S.NOM SG.OBL Isaw ITR-go-near
‘I am afraid of Isaw’s approaching.’

b. indang=ku kan isaw ki-dalep
afraid=1S.NOM SG.OBL Isaw PASS-near
‘I am afraid of being approached by Isaw.’
(Note: The controller of kidalep is =ku.)

Recall that in raising constructions (§8.4.1.5) an argument that is raised from a complement clause may be marked oblique in the main clause, as illustrated in (63).

(63) a. ma-ladram=ku [dra m-ekan dra kuraw i pilay]
ITR-know=1S.NOM COMP ITR-eat ID.OBL fish SG.NOM Pilay
‘I know that Pilay eats fish.’

b. ma-ladram=ku kan pilay [dra m-ekan dra kuraw]
ITR-know=1S.NOM SG.OBL Pilay COMP ITR-eat ID.OBL fish
‘I know that Pilay eats fish.’

In (63b) pilay is an instance of definite oblique-marked PL, because the verb maladram ‘know’ does not have a (same-meaning) transitive form, as shown in (55).

Examples in (64) show that if the raised argument is definite, the complement-taking verb appears in its transitive form.

(64) a. me-na’u=ku [dra tu=tra-trakaw-aw na kuraw]
ITR-see=1S.NOM COMP 3.GEN=RED-steal-TR1 DF.NOM fish
kan isaw
SG.OBL Isaw
‘I saw Isaw stealing the fish.’

b. ku=na’u-ay i isaw [dra tu=tra-trakaw-aw
1S.GEN=see-TR2 SG.NOM Isaw COMP 3.GEN=RED-steal-TR1
na kuraw]
DF.NOM fish
‘I saw Isaw stealing the fish.’

The last situation where we may encounter a definite oblique PL occurs in a special genre (prayers). For instance, in one of the texts given in Appendix 3 (Part of a prayer), when the speaker is praying to God she used the transitive forms to say ‘I pray to you’, ‘I worship/bow down to you’, etc. There are several restrictions in such instances: first, the mood is hortative/desiderative, and second, the actor must be the first person and the PL must be the second person, as in (65a) and (65b). If the definite PL is not the second person, as in (65c), it will be the subject.

(65) a. sa-sungalr=mi kanu (or: s<em>ungalr-a=mi kanu)
RED-bow=1P.ECL.NOM 2S.OBL
‘We will bow down to you.’ OR: ‘We will worship you.’

b. *ku=sungalr-aw=yu
1S.GEN=bow-TR1=2S.NOM
‘We bowed to you.’
8.4.4 The mapping between transitivity and voice in Puyuma

Having demonstrated that actor voice sentences are intransitive and undergoer voice sentences are transitive, I will show why the morphemes that are traditionally glossed as ‘focus’ markers or ‘voice’ markers are better glossed as marking transitivity in Puyuma.

(66) \(<\em>alretrag=ku\) dr\(a\) en\(ay\)

\(<AV>\)pour.out=1S.NOM ID.OBL water
\(<ITR>\)pour.out=1S.NOM ID.OBL water
‘I poured out some water.’

(67) ku=\(alretrag-aw\) na enay i babulru’

1S.GEN=pour.out-\(PV\) DF.NOM water LOC yard
1S.GEN=pour.out-\(TR1\) DF.NOM water LOC yard
‘I poured out the water in the yard.’

(68) ku=\(alretrag-ay\) dra enay nu=tranguru’

1S.GEN=pour.out-\(LV\) ID.OBL water 2S.PSR=head
1S.GEN=pour.out-\(TR2\) D.OBL water 2S.PSR=head
‘I poured some water on your head.’

(69) ku=\(alretrag-anay=la\) na enay

1S.GEN=pour.out-\(CV=PERF\) DF.NOM water
1S.GEN=pour.out-\(TR3=PERF\) DF.NOM water
‘I have poured out the water.’

The second set of glosses in (66)–(69) is introduced in Ross and Teng (2005a), and has been adopted in this grammar wherever the voice glosses are not required for reasons of presentation. The reasons for preferring the second set are explained below.

First, there is very often a mismatch between the gloss of the voice (the Philippinists’ ‘focus’) affix and the semantic role of the subject that the affix indicates (§6.2). Traditionally, verbs marked by the \(M\)-morpheme are glossed as actor voice, regardless of whether the nominative argument is the actor or not. Compare:

(70) m-atel i drenan \(idri\) na walak

ITR-throw LOC mountain this.NOM DF.NOM child
‘The child threw (something) away in the mountains.’

(71) ma-atel ku=\(paisu\)

ITR-throw 1S.PSR =money
‘My money was gone (disappeared).’

(72) ma-’itrilr=\(yu\)

ITR-stingy=2P.NOM
‘You are stingy.’

In the above sentences, the semantic roles of the nominative NP are very different. In (70), the nominative NP is the actor, while in (71) and (72) the nominative NP is not, and to
gloss the marker *ma-* as actor voice is strange. On the other hand, the three sentences are all intransitive. Glossing *M-* morphemes as intransitive captures this fact.

As I show in §6.2, the semantic role of the nominative argument in each undergoer voice construction covers a great range of variation. The choice among three undergoer voice markers is to a great extent related to the degree to which the subject participant is affected by the action denoted by the verb. This fact can also be observed in irrealis and negative constructions (§6.3.1 and §11.2). The terms ‘patient voice’, ‘locative voice’ and ‘conveyance voice’ are simply inappropriate to Puyuma.

### 8.5 Ergativity

‘Ergative’ is used here in Dixon’s (1994) sense of a linguistic feature which marks the sole argument of an intransitive clause (S, hereafter) and the undergoer argument of a transitive clause (O, hereafter) in the same way.

In a canonical intransitive sentence, S is marked as nominative. In a canonical transitive sentence, O is marked as nominative while A is marked differently (as genitive). In this regard, Puyuma is syntactically ergative. However, the reader should note that Puyuma verb forms are not ergatively aligned. If they were, then the antipassive (actor voice) verb would be marked differently from the intransitive, but this is not the case. Antipassive verbs have the same marking as intransitive verbs. Thus verbal morphology is accusatively aligned in Puyuma.

Croft (2001:155) proposes a Subject Construction Hierarchy, shown in (73), which defines ‘an implicational scale such that for any construction on the scale, if the construction patterns ergatively, then all the constructions to the right of it on the scale also pattern ergatively; if the construction patterns accusatively, then all the constructions to the left of it on the scale also pattern accusatively’.

#### (73) The Subject Construction Hierarchy

```
coordination < purposive < relativisation < verb agreement < case marking
```

We have seen that Puyuma patterns ergatively in case marking and verb agreement. Relative clauses (§5.6) pattern accusatively, as one construction (full clause, as in (74a)–(74b)) is used when A or S is relativised, and a different strategy (gerund, as in (74c)) is used when an O is relativised.

#### (74) a. k<<a>>adru=drinya nantu lang [na aru ‘a’-’adras

      <a>there=IMPF DF.NOM/3.PSR company DF.NOM will RED-lift.up

      kantaw]

3.OBL

‘There is his friend who will lift him up.’

b. tu=alrak-aw na sababa [na salraw drekan]

3.GEN=take-TR1 DF.NOM cloth DF.NOM very wide

‘He took the cloth which was very wide.’

c. m-uka k<<em>>ururus-a kana gelrit [kantu

1TR-go <1TR>drag-OBL thorn DF.OBL/3.PSR

`
Serial verb constructions including purposive clauses also pattern accusatively in Puyuma (see §13.2.2.1). In short, Puyuma independent clauses are morphosyntactically ergative, but complex constructions display accusativity.
9

Re-encoding of arguments

9.1 Introduction

This chapter deals with five operations that re-encode core arguments. These operations are: causative, reciprocal, reflexive, anticausative, and passive constructions. In the literature these operations are commonly described as valency-changing. Because ‘valency’ refers to the number of all arguments (core or non-core) in this grammar and this chapter concerns only the coding of core arguments, I choose to avoid using ‘valency-changing’ here.

A causative construction (§9.2) introduces a new argument, a causer. The causee becomes the undergoer/PL, and the undergoer of the caused event the LPL (§8.3) of the causative verb. In reciprocal constructions (§9.3) the undergoers are at the same time the actors, and the undergoer argument vanishes. Reflexive constructions (§9.4) in Puyuma utilise a body part or a neutral pronoun (with the same number and person as the actor) to manifest the undergoer; they are structurally the same as ordinary transitive clauses. In the anticausative (§9.5) and the passive (§9.6) constructions, the undergoer remains as a core argument, but the actor is demoted to the oblique position. Table 9.1 provides a summary of these operations and the corresponding encodings of arguments.

9.2 Causative constructions

In many languages of the world, if the caused event is intransitive, the causative becomes transitive; if the caused event is transitive, the causative counterpart becomes ditransitive. Because Puyuma only allows two core slots, the causative counterpart of a transitive verb remains transitive (not ditransitive) and the definiteness of the causee is important in determining subject choice (§9.2.1.2).

In this section, my discussion focuses on morphological causativisation, given in §9.2.1, as it is the most productive causative construction in Puyuma. In the morphological causative, the verb denoting the resultant event is derived by prefixing a causative morpheme. In Puyuma, there are also analytic causatives, which will be discussed in §9.2.2.

1 Transitive clauses that have three arguments (two cores and one oblique) are applicative-like, as they bring an adjunct into the undergoer position, and are thus core-argument adjusting operations. They are not treated here but are described in §6.2 and §8.3.

2 This table only summarises those operations that utilise a morphological device to express re-encoding of arguments. Reflexive constructions are not listed here because there is no morpheme devoted to expressing a reflexive meaning.
Table 9.1: Re-encoding of arguments

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb types</th>
<th>Transitive clause</th>
<th>Intransitive clause</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>—</td>
<td>anticausative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>—</td>
<td>passive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>—</td>
<td>reciprocal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>monovalent intransitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Causative</td>
<td>pa-(ka-)Root-TR: NOM: Undergoer/actor of the caused event GEN: Actor of the causative event</td>
<td>extended intransitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>reciprocal</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

9.2.1 Morphological causatives

9.2.1.1 Derivation of causative verbs

In this type of causativisation, causative verbs are derived by affixing a causative morpheme *pa-*\(^3\), *p-*\(^4\), or *pu-* to a non-causative stem.\(^5\) For example:

---

\(^3\) There are two homophonous prefixes *pa-* in Puyuma. One is causative. The other *pa-* , together with Careduplication, signals plurality of relations (§9.3.2). Note also that while the *pa-ka-Root* construction discussed in this section is the causative derivation of some verbs, there is another derivational form *paka-Root* involving no causative meaning (§6.3.2.3).

\(^4\) It is suggested by Blust (1999a) that there was an alternation between *pa-* and *paka-* marking causative verbs in PAn. According to his reconstruction of PAn, *pa-* attached to more dynamic verbs, and *paka-* to more stative verbs. While Zeitoun (2000) and Zeitoun and Huang (2000) agree with Blust’s claim that *pa-* attaches to dynamic verbs and *paka-* attaches stative verbs, they analyse *paka-* as a bimorphemic prefix *pa-ka-* and reconstruct *ka-* as a stative marker in PAn. The Puyuma examples favour Zeitoun and Huang’s analysis. However, in Puyuma the semantic distinction between *pa-* and *pa-ka-* is not as clear-cut as in the account of other Formosan languages given by these authors. The function of *ka-* is discussed in §6.6.
Non-causative stems are not restricted to verbs. Sometimes the stem is a noun. Causative verbs and their formation are initially subcategorised according to whether the stem which the causative marker attaches to is a noun or a verb.

Verbs in this category are formed by prefixing pa- to nominal stems.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Non-causative</th>
<th>Causative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kasu ‘bring’</td>
<td>pa-kasu ‘to make s.b. bring’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trekelr ‘drink’</td>
<td>pa-trekelr ‘to make s.b. drink’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Most causative verbs are formed by prefixing the causative marker pa- to the verb forms used in imperative sentences. We can divide such verbs into two categories; those with ka- in imperative/irrealis constructions, and those without ka- (§6.5). Verbs with ka- in the imperative/irrealis constructions are affixed with ma- (or Ø) in the corresponding intransitive construction. I first show examples of verbs with ka- together with their causative counterparts, and then examples of verbs without ka-. Examples of causatives which do not follow this pattern are given at the end.

(i) Causatives with ka- in the imperative/irrealis form.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Imperative form</th>
<th>Causative form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ka-trina ‘be big’</td>
<td>pa-ka-trina ‘to make s.th./s.b. big’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-keser ‘be strong’</td>
<td>pa-ka-keser ‘to make s.b. strong’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-’itu ‘be wounded (by spirits)’</td>
<td>pa-ka-’itu ‘to cause s.b. to be wounded by spirits’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-inaba ‘be good’</td>
<td>pa-ka-inaba ‘to make s.th./s.b. good’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-asatr ‘be tall’</td>
<td>pa-ka-asatr ‘to make s.th./s.b. tall’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-uringetr ‘be brave’</td>
<td>pa-ka-uringetr ‘to make s.b. brave’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-bulray ‘be clean/beautiful’</td>
<td>pa-ka-bulray ‘to make s.th./s.b. clean/beautiful’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k-ingdan ‘be afraid’</td>
<td>pa-ka-ingdan ‘to cause s.b. to be afraid’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-kualreng ‘be sick’</td>
<td>pa-ka-kualreng ‘to cause s.b. to be sick’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-bekalr ‘be new’</td>
<td>pa-ka-bekalr ‘to renew’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(ii) Causatives without ka- in the imperative form.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Imperative form</th>
<th>Causative form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>’aw’aw ‘call’</td>
<td>pa-’aw’aw ‘to make s.b. call’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kilengaw ‘listen’</td>
<td>pa-kilengaw ‘to make s.b. listen’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>karun ‘work’</td>
<td>pa-karun ‘to make s.b. work’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The forms pa- and p- are allomorphs: p- attaches to stems that begin with /a/, and pa- elsewhere. The occurrence of pu- is more restricted and needs more research. However, this pu- should not be confused with p-u- (causative plus motion, e.g. p-u-sabak ‘make s.b. go inside’). In the case of the pu- causative, pu- attaches to a verbal or a nominal stem and the prefix pu- cannot be further analysed into p-u- (e.g. pu-ngalrad ‘to give a name to’ < ngalrad ‘name’, *u-ngalrad); whereas in the case of p-u-, the causative p- prefixes to a stem that contains u- and a locative noun, meaning ‘go to N’.
Re-encoding of arguments

(iii) Causatives not formed from imperative forms.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Imperative form</th>
<th>Causative form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ka-lriay 'be drunk'</td>
<td>pa-lriay ‘to make s.b. drunk’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-dawak ‘be poisoned’</td>
<td>pa-dawak ‘to poison s.b.’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-risan ‘be identical’</td>
<td>pa-risan ‘to make s.th./s.b. identical’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-'udal ‘rain’</td>
<td>pa-'udal ‘to make rain’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-ladram ‘know’</td>
<td>pa-ladram ‘to teach s.b.’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-tia ‘dream’</td>
<td>pa-tia ‘to send message through dreams’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k-alupe ‘sleep’</td>
<td>p-alupe ‘to pamper s.b.’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ka-litek ‘be cold’</td>
<td>pa-litek ‘to make s.th. cold’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

How can the irregular forms in (iii) be explained? One possibility is that some roots historically had two sets of derivations, one stative and one dynamic, and that from these were derived two causative forms with different meanings. For example, -lriay ‘drunk’ or dawak ‘poison’ may have had two sets of derivations, a dynamic and a stative, as shown in Table 9.2 and Table 9.3 (the asterisk indicates a hypothetical form).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 9.2: (Possible) derivations of -lriay</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>-lriay</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Intransitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imperative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrealis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Causative</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 9.3: (Possible) derivations of dawak</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>dawak</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Intransitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imperative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrealis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Causative</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

6 The word is analysed as k-alupe instead of ka-lupe because from the example alupe=la ‘He’s slept’ we know the root is alupe.
As time went by, one form was lost, and thus the irregularity arose. This hypothesis is supported by the derivations of bu’utr ‘stop’ and sanan ‘stray, get lost’ given in Table 9.4 and Table 9.5.

**Table 9.4: Verbal derivations of bu’utr**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>bu’utr</th>
<th>Dynamic</th>
<th>Stative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Intransitive</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;u’utr ‘to stop s.th.’</td>
<td>ma-bu’utr ‘cease’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imperative</td>
<td>bu’utr ‘to stop’</td>
<td>ka-bu’utr ‘to cease’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrealis</td>
<td>ba-bu’utr ‘will stop’</td>
<td>ka-ba-bu’utr ‘will cease’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Causative</td>
<td>pa-bu’utr ‘cause s.b. to stop’</td>
<td>pa-ka-bu’utr ‘cause s.th. to cease’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Table 9.5: Verbal derivations of sanan**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>sanan</th>
<th>Dynamic</th>
<th>Stative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Intransitive</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;an anan ‘stray’</td>
<td>ma-sanan ‘get lost’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imperative</td>
<td>sanan</td>
<td>ka-sanan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrealis</td>
<td>sa-sanan</td>
<td>ka-sa-sanan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Causative</td>
<td>pa-sanan ‘make s.b. get lost’</td>
<td>pa-ka-sanan ‘cause s.b. to get lost’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Examples of sanan and its derivations are given in (3)–(6).

(3)  an  s<em>an anan =yu dra dakran i tralrun ...
    when <ITR>stray=2S.NOM ID.OBL road LOC grass
    ‘If you lost your way in the field …’

(4)  ka-sa-sanan dra dalran
    ka-RED-stray ID.OBL road
    ‘He will get lost.’

(5)  tu=pa-sanan-aw=ku
    3.GEN=CAUS-stray-TR1=1S.NOM
    ‘He made me get lost.’

(6)  ku=asalr-aw na pinutungan pa-ka-sa-sanan
    1S.GEN=move-TR1 DF.NOM knot CAUS-ka-RED-stray
    dra  ala ‘ala’
    ID.OBL  RED-enemy
    ‘I moved the knots to cause the enemy to get lost.’

From the translations of (5) and (6), it seems that when a root has two causative derivations (with and without ka-), the one with ka- denotes indirect causation, while the one without ka- indicates direct causation. Further investigation of this matter is needed.

At this point, one thing needs to be mentioned. Like non-causative verbs, causative verbs also take transitive affixes, as shown in (5). However, there is no intransitive marker. In other words, while transitive affixes, -aw (TR1), -ay (TR2), and -anay (TR3) can coexist with the causative marker pa-, the intransitive marker ma- (or m-, <em>, me-) is incompatible
with the causative marker \(pa\). The four subject choice alternations of the verb \(talam\) ‘to try’ and their causative counterparts are shown below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Non-causative</th>
<th>Causative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ITR (t\textless em&gt;alam)</td>
<td>(pa\text{-}talam)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TR1 (talam\text{-}aw)</td>
<td>(pa\text{-}talam\text{-}aw)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TR2 (talam\text{-}ay)</td>
<td>(pa\text{-}talam\text{-}ay)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TR3 (talam\text{-}anay)</td>
<td>(pa\text{-}talam\text{-}anay)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that there is no *\(pa\text{-}t\textless em\>alam\).

### 9.2.1.2 Subject choice and case marking of arguments

There are at least two arguments in a causative construction: the causer, which is the agent of cause, and the causee, which is the agent or experiencer of the caused event. Syntactically, a causative construction is usually manifested as transitive, i.e. in an undergoer voice, except in certain cases where the causee is an indefinite NP, or where there are other syntactic restrictions, such as in a serial verb construction (Chapter 13). The definiteness of the causee, which is the PL, is an important factor in determining subject choice in Puyuma in non-causative independent clauses (§8.4.1.7). If the PL is definite, it must be chosen as the subject and is marked nominative (and the clause is thus transitive). However, in all the examples examined, the undergoer of the caused event is always marked with oblique case, whether definite or indefinite.

In most cases, the assignment of case to the arguments is as follows:

- **Causer** (the actor of the causative event): genitive case
- **Causee** (the actor of the caused event): nominative case
- **Others** (the undergoers of the caused event): oblique case

In the following discussion, I will give a schema after each example to better illustrate the relationships between the arguments and the causative/caused events. A causative construction can be symbolised as:

\[
\text{CAUSE} (X, P) = X \text{ causes } P
\]

So,

\[
\text{CAUSE} (\text{John, drink (Mary, wine)}) = \text{John caused Mary to drink wine.}
\]

For example:

\[
(7) \quad tu=pa\text{-}trekelr\text{-}ay=mu \quad dra \quad enay \quad i, \quad ...
\]

3\text{.GEN}=\text{CAUS}\text{-}drink\text{-}TR2=2\text{P.NOM} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{water} \quad \text{TOP}

‘If she made you drink water, …’

\[
\text{CAUSE} (\text{she}\text{GEN, drink (you}\text{NOM, water}\text{OBL}))
\]

---

7 There are only two examples in my data which show \(pa\)-cooccurring with an actor voice marker; \(pa\text{-}ka\text{-}ma\text{-keser\) ‘make strong’, and \(pa\text{-}ka\text{-}\textless em\>angalr\) ‘to make happy, to award’. I have no explanation for these.
As mentioned earlier, the definiteness of the causee plays an important role in determining subject choice. In cases where actor voice is chosen, the causee is always indefinite. For instance:

(9) \(p\-par\-rangan=yu\) dra manay dra belretrenganan  
CAUSE (youNOM, up (somethingOBL))
‘Can you build something ancient?’

(10) \(p\-u\-patrar\-an\) dra tulru-a ki<a>umal-an  
CAUSE (heNOM, out (three questionsOBL))
‘He brought out three questions.’

(11) \(p\-r\-ag\-an\) dra trakuban  
CAUSE (theyNOM, up (boys’ houseOBL))
‘They built a boys’ house.’

However, an indefinite causee does not always cause a sentence to be manifested in actor voice. In some examples, an undergoer voice is used even when the causee, the actor of the caused event, is indefinite. For example:

(13) \(tu=p\-tal\-am\-ay\) a suan i,  
CAUSE (heGEN, try (a dogNOM))
‘He made a dog try.’

(14) \(tu=p\-u\-sabak\-aw\) a tidrul kana patrugtrungan  
CAUSE (heGEN, go inside (a waspNOM))
‘He put a wasp into the drum.’

(15) \(a d\-\) tu=pa\-k\-ladram-i a trau  
CAUSE (sheGEN, know (othersNOM))
‘She didn’t let others know.’
So, we can say that for a causative clause to appear in actor voice, the causee must be indefinite. But the converse is not true: an indefinite causee will not necessarily result in an actor voice sentence with a causative verb.

Our next concern is with undergoer voice causative constructions and with the question of when and why a particular undergoer voice is chosen. All three undergoer voices are found in the examples, as shown below:

(16) \( tu=p\)-\textit{inatray-aw} idru na bangsaran \\
3.GEN=CAUS-die-TR1 that.NOM DF.NOM young.man \\
‘He killed that young man.’

\textbf{CAUSE (he\textsubscript{GEN}, die (that young man\textsubscript{NOM}))}

(17) \( tu=p\)-\textit{treketr-ay} dra kadepu’ \\
3.GEN=CAUS-stick-TR2 ID.OBL paper \\
‘He stuck a paper on it.’

\textbf{CAUSE (he\textsubscript{GEN}, stick (it\textsubscript{NOM}, paper\textsubscript{OBL}))}

(18) \( ta=p\)-\textit{la’udr-anay} i kali \\
1P.GEN=CAUS-float-TR3 LOC river \\
‘We let it float in the river.’

\textbf{CAUSE (we\textsubscript{GEN}, float (it\textsubscript{NOM}))}

From the above examples, it seems that a particular subject choice is determined by the affectedness of the causee in the action denoted by the causative verb. In (16), the causee is the patient of the action, in (17), the goal or location, and in (18), the theme. However, it is not always this clear, and sometimes we cannot easily find a reason for the choice of undergoer subject. For instance, in the following examples, the same verb, -\textit{uka} ‘go’ in (19) and (20), and \textit{talam} ‘try’ in (21) and (22), is manifested in different undergoer choices.

(19) \( tu=p\)-\textit{uka-aw}=ku kana palriangalrungan \\
3.GEN=CAUS-go-TR1=1S.NOM DF.OBL band \\
‘They sent me to the band.’

\textbf{CAUSE (they\textsubscript{GEN}, go (I\textsubscript{NOM}))}

(20) \( tu=p\)-\textit{uka-anay}=ku kana ising \\
3.GEN=CAUS-go-TR3=1S.NOM DF.OBL doctor \\
‘They caused me to be taken to the doctor.’

\textbf{CAUSE (they\textsubscript{GEN}, go (I\textsubscript{NOM}))}

(21) \( tu=p\)-\textit{talam-anay}=driya dra basikaw \\
3.GEN=CAUS-try-TR3=IMPF ID.OBL bamboo \\
‘He made them try again with a bamboo.’

\textbf{CAUSE (he\textsubscript{GEN}, try (they\textsubscript{NOM}, bamboo\textsubscript{OBL}))}

(22) \( tu=p\)-\textit{tala-talam-aw} tu=\textit{wadi} \\
3.GEN=CAUS-RED-try-TR1 3.PSR=younger.sibling \\
‘He made his younger brother try again and again.’

\textbf{CAUSE (he\textsubscript{GEN}, try (his younger brother\textsubscript{NOM}))}

Sentences (19) and (20) are taken from the same text. Although in both sentences the informant was sent to the band and to the doctor, respectively, in (19) the informant went to
the band himself, but in (20) he is in the theme role to be moved to the hospital because he is paralysed. Examples (21) and (22) are from different texts, and I have no explanation for the different subject choices in the two sentences.

To sum up, there are two factors affecting subject choice: the definiteness of the causee, and its semantic role or its affectedness by the given action. The first factor influences the choice between actor voice or undergoer voice, and the second factor determines which undergoer subject is chosen.

9.2.2 Analytic causatives

An analytic causative is defined by Payne (1997:181) as a construction ‘consisting of a matrix verb (expressing the notion of cause) whose sentential complement refers to the caused event’. In a Puyuma analytic causative construction, very often, but not always, the verb denoting the caused event is prefixed with pa-. For instance:

(23) \(tu=pasisi-ay=ku\) \(\text{pa-karun}\)
3.GEN=force-TR2=1S.NOM CAUS-work
‘She forced me to work.’

(24) \(tu=aiselr-aw\) \(\text{pa-trekelr} \ dra \ eraw\)
3.GEN=force-TR1 CAUS-drink ID.OBL wine
‘They forced him to drink wine.’

But the verb denoting the caused event is not prefixed with \(pa-\) in (25).

(25) \(tu=bau-bai-aw=ku\) \(m-uka\) \(i\) \(\text{takesi-an}\)
3.GEN=RED-push-TR1=1S.NOM ITR-go LOC study-NMZ
‘She kept pushing me to go to the school.’

As the analytic causative construction is a subtype of serial verb construction, this construction is discussed further in §13.4.7.

9.3 Reciprocal constructions

In a reciprocal construction, two participants equally act upon one another; both are the actor and the undergoer at the same time. In Puyuma a reciprocal construction is marked by prefixing one of the reciprocal markers, \(\text{mar(e)}-\) or \(\text{ma-RED-}\), to the stem. Which one occurs depends mainly on the stativity/dynamicity of the verb. A stative verbal stem carries \(\text{mare-}\) to form a reciprocal verb and a dynamic stem \(\text{ma-RED-}\). For example:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{laman} & \quad \text{‘pity’} \quad \text{mare-ka-laman} & \quad \text{‘have pity on each other’} \\
\text{turus} & \quad \text{‘follow’} \quad \text{ma-ta-turus} & \quad \text{‘follow each other’}
\end{align*}
\]

9.3.1 The range of situations marked by reciprocal markers

Lichtenberk (2000:31) has pointed out that in languages of the Oceanic subgroup of Austronesian, the morphological markers that are used to encode reciprocal are also used to encode certain other situations. Other situations the reciprocal markers may also refer to are: collective, chaining, distributed, repetitive, converse, and depatientive. He suggests that ‘there is one notion that underlies the great majority of the functions: plurality of relations’,
by which ‘two or more instances are ultimately linked, either because they are of the same kind, or because the relations are converse of each other’ (Lichtenberk 2000:33). In addition to the notion of ‘plurality of relations’, he also mentions that these situations all involve a ‘low degree of elaboration of situations’, and in particular a ‘low degree of distinguishability of the participants’ (Lichtenberk 2000:34).

In Zeitoun’s (2002b) study of reciprocals from eleven Formosan languages,8 she claims that the reciprocal markers do not mark other meanings as they do in Oceanic languages studied by Lichtenberk (2000). However, in the Puyuma data the markers marking reciprocals are also used in other situations, such as chaining and the collective relation, and graduality. In the following discussion I follow Lichtenberk and gloss the markers used in these situations as PR, meaning ‘plurality of relations’.

9.3.2 Reciprocal markers

First, consider the following examples.

(26) ma-da-da’ul=mu?
    ma-Ca-inform=2P.NOM
    ‘Did you inform each other?’

(27) adri pa-dra-drulrun dranemu kiruan
    NEG pa-Ca-change ID.OBL/2P.PSR clothes
    ‘Don’t exchange your clothes!’

There are two possible analyses of the reciprocal markers. One may analyse the PR markers as bimorphemic ma-Ca- and pa-Ca-, or as monomorphemic maCa- and paCa-. Let us first look at the bimorphemic analysis. The form ma-Ca-Root is the progressive form for some verbs, as shown in Table 9.6. Furthermore, the prefix pa- in the reciprocal form pa-Ca- has nothing to do with causatives, and if the marker is analysed as pa-Ca-, it is identical with the progressive form of some causative verbs.9

Table 9.6: Formations of reciprocals/plurality of relations (PR)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Root</th>
<th>Intransitive</th>
<th>Intransitive</th>
<th>Intransitive</th>
<th>Intransitive</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Imperative</td>
<td>Unmark</td>
<td>Progressive</td>
<td>Reciprocal/PR</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>be’elr</td>
<td>be’elr</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;e’elr</td>
<td>b&lt;en&gt;a-be’elr</td>
<td>ma-ba-be’elr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>se’er</td>
<td>se’er</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;e’er</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;a-se’er</td>
<td>ma-sa-se’er</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sangalr</td>
<td>sangalr</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;sangalr</td>
<td>s&lt;em&gt;a-sangalr</td>
<td>ma-sa-sangalr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>da’ul</td>
<td>da’ul</td>
<td>d&lt;em&gt;a’ul</td>
<td>d&lt;em&gt;a-da’ul</td>
<td>ma-da-da’ul</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-dreki ‘to scold’</td>
<td>ka-dreki</td>
<td>ma-dreki</td>
<td>ma-dra-dreki</td>
<td>mar-ka-dreki</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-lingay ‘to play’</td>
<td>ka-lringay</td>
<td>ma-lringay</td>
<td>ma-la-lringay</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-supeng ‘to miss’</td>
<td>ka-supeng</td>
<td>ma-supeng</td>
<td>ma-sa-supeng</td>
<td>mar-ka-supeng</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-trangis ‘to cry’</td>
<td>ka-trangis</td>
<td>ma-trangis</td>
<td>ma-tra-trangis</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

8 These languages are: Paiwan (Mudan), Puyuma (Nanwang), Saisiyat (Tungho), Pazeh, Atayal (Mayrinax), Amis (Changpin), Thao, Tsou, Kavalan, and Yami.
9 For example: ragan ‘get up’, pa-ragan ‘build’, pa-ra-ragan ‘building’. (The reciprocal form for this verb is mar-paragan.) However, not all causative verb forms have a progressive derivation.
From Table 9.6, it seems that which reciprocal marking a verb takes depends on the intransitive marker the verb takes. So, those verbs taking <em> in the intransitive unmarked and progressive construction will take ma-Ca- in the reciprocal construction; those verbs that take ma- in the intransitive unmarked and progressive construction, whether dynamic or stative, will take mar- in the reciprocal construction.

On the other hand, we may treat the reciprocal marker as a single morpheme, maCa-, to avoid the confusion that results from the bimorphemic analysis. The major problem this analysis will cause is when the verb represents a reciprocal event composed of a number of equivalent subevents. In such cases, the reciprocal is marked by maCVCV-. Compare the reciprocal markings in the following examples.

(28) _mapa-pingitr_
PR-scratch
‘They scratched each other.’

(29) _ma-pingi-pingitr_
ma-CVCV-scratch
‘They were fighting each other.’

(30) _masa-salraw_
PR-pass
‘They passed by each other.’

(31) _ma-salra-salraw_
ma-CVCV-pass
‘They chased each other.’

This will then suggest that for dynamic reciprocal verbs, there is always reduplication involved, either Ca- or CVCV- reduplication. This in turn indicates that the PR marker should be analysed as ma-RED-.

It seems that both analyses have their drawbacks. The polysemies of the markers suggest that there is no one-to-one correspondence between form and function. To avoid the dilemma, it is necessary to distinguish between construction and marking. Thus, the same form ma-RED- may occur in different constructions with different functions. In other words, ma-Ca-, when it cooccurs with certain verb roots, denotes a plurality of relations in a reciprocal construction, and with certain other verb roots, it indicates progressive aspect. In order not to confuse the reader, in this chapter I gloss ma-Ca- and pa-Ca- as ma.Ca- and pa.Ca-, meaning PR ‘plurality of relations’, and treating them as portmanteaux.

### 9.3.3 Dynamic vs stative

Zeitoun (2002b) proposes that reciprocals provide further evidence for positing a dynamic/stative and finite/non-finite distinction in PAn verbs (see also Zeitoun and Huang 2000). The reciprocal prefixes she proposes for PAn are (cf. Zeitoun 2002b:6):
While my findings are mostly the same as Zeitoun’s, it needs to be mentioned again that the dynamic/stative distinction in Puyuma is not always clear (see also §6.6 and §7.3.3). Examples (32)–(34) illustrate the dynamic/causative/stative distinction in Puyuma.

(32) Dynamic verbs:
   a. ma.da-dikes dra kawi
      PR-hold ID.OBL wood
      ‘They held the wood together.’
   b. pa.sa-se’er muumu, ala pamau taytaw nay
      PR-stare 2P.NEU maybe correct 3.NEU or
      ‘Look at each other and see if the other one is doing right.’

(33) Causativised verbs:
    marayas mar-pa-talam dratu uringetr-an
    often PR-CAUS-try ID.OBL/3.PSR brave-NMZ
    ‘They often try each other’s bravery.’

(34) Stative verbs:
   a. kaimayay i lrikudran i, mar-ka-inaba=ta …
      if.by.any.chance LOC behind TOP PR-ka-good=1P.NOM
      ‘If by any chance we reconcile in the future …’
   b. adri=ta par-ka-inaba
      NEG=1P.NOM PR-ka-good
      ‘We won’t reconcile.’

   Sometimes a semantically dynamic verb may take a marking that belongs to the stative category, or vice versa, and sometimes different informants may use different forms. For instance, dalep ‘close’ is semantically rather stative, but the marker it takes groups it together with more dynamic verbs; baretuk ‘pitch’ is semantically dynamic, but the marker it takes falls into the stative category; salraw ‘pass’ is dynamic as well, and both dynamic and stative markings are used by different informants.

(35) ma.da-dalep a turak
     PR-close ID.NOM pillar
     ‘The pillars are close to each other.’

---

10 Zeitoun’s term ‘finite’ is paralleled by a Puyuma construction that is indicative, realis, and intransitive, while ‘non-finite’ is paralleled to constructions other than indicative realis intransitive, such as imperatives, irrealis and transitive constructions.

11 The reciprocal form of salpit ‘beat’ is ma-salpit rather than *ma-sa-salpit. This is the only example found to have only ma- as the reciprocal marker.

12 If the root begins with a vowel, mare- is prefixed, and if the root begins with a consonant, mar- is attached. However, some informants insert a schwa automatically to avoid the consonant cluster.
(36)  *mar-baretuk*
PR-pitch
‘They pitched at each other.’

(37)  *mar-salraw=ta  kadrini*
PR-pass=1P.NOM  here
‘We passed by each other here.’

(38)  *ma.sa-salraw*
PR-pass
‘They passed by each other.’

### 9.3.4 Other situations marked by a PR marker

There are a number of other situations besides reciprocality that are marked by a PR marker. The first one is the repetitive function, in which the marker signals the repeated occurrences of a situation. According to Lichtenberk (2000:41), the repeated occurrences of a situation can be ‘iterative within one time frame and with the same Initiator involved, or over multiple time frames with the same Initiator or the same type of Initiator involved’. As can be seen from the following examples, in Puyuma the repetitive function is mainly used to signal situation where successive events are undertaken by the same type of Initiator. For instance:

(39)  *mar-ka-la-la’udra trau*
PR-ka-RED-drown  ID.NOM  person
‘People kept getting drowned.’

(40)  *mar-pa-raga-ragan=la dra palrakuan*
PR-CAUS-RED-erect=PERF  ID.OBL  men’s.house
‘(People) kept building men’s houses.’

The second function is to refer to a collective situation, in which two or more participants are together involved. For example:

(41)  *ma.sa-sangal=ta dratu in-u-ruma’ kan namali*
PR-glad-1P.NOM  ID.OBL/3.PSR  PERF-go-house  SG.OBL  my.father
‘Let’s celebrate the coming home of our father!’

(42)  *wa-ruma’=ta=la mar-p-alup i*
go-home=1P.NOM=PERF  PR-CAUS-hunt  TOP
‘After hunting together, we went home.’

However, there is another marker *kara-* , used to indicate collective situations, and it seems to be more commonly used.

- *kara-ekan*  ‘eat together’
- *kara-na’u*  ‘watch together’
- *kara-uarak*  ‘dance together’
- *kara-basak*  ‘carry on the shoulder together’

The third function is to indicate an increasing degree, ‘more and more’. For example:
Re-encoding of arguments

(43)  
\[
\text{mar-ka-sadru } tu=\text{trau}=\text{la} \\
\text{PR-ka-many 3.PSR=person=PERF} \\
\text{‘There are more and more people.’}
\]

(44)  
\[
\text{mar-ka-supen}=\text{ku} \\
\text{PR-ka-miss}=1\text{S.NOM} \\
\text{‘I miss (someone) more and more.’}
\]

The fourth function is to signal a chaining situation, in which ‘participant A stands in a certain relation to participant B, B stands in the same relation to participant C, C to D, etc.’ (Lichtenberk 2000:35). Thus, in the following example, the piling up of bamboos represents a chaining situation.

(45)  
\[
\text{tu=par-ta-tadrar-aw na basikaw} \\
\text{3.GEN=PR-RED-pile.up-TR1 DF.NOM bamboo} \\
\text{‘They piled up the bamboos.’}
\]

The fifth function is to indicate a distributed situation. According to Lichtenberk (2000:39), in a distributed situation, ‘the overall situation comprises a plurality of localities or different directionalities: the locality or directionality of one subevent is not the same as that of another subevent’. There are two subtypes of distributive situation: dispersive, which involves dispersion of subevents from a common origin, and reversive, which involves reverse directionality of subevents. Only the reversive type is found in Puyuma.

(46)  
\[
\text{payas mar-belriyas m-uka m-aya-a kantu wadi} \\
\text{right.away PR-turn ITR-go ITR-find-PJ DF.OBL/3.PSR younger.sibling} \\
\text{‘They returned right away to go find their younger sister.’}
\]

(47)  
\[
\text{ta=par-belriyas-aw i ’ine-’ine’} \\
\text{1P.GEN=PR-turn-TR1 LOC RED-sea} \\
\text{‘Let us bring her back to the sea.’}
\]

9.3.5 Argument structure of reciprocals

In a typical reciprocal situation, the two (or more) participants act upon each other and thus the participants are at the same time the actor and the patient. In spite of the dual roles the participants play, they are encoded as subject and are manifested once. The verb is almost always marked for actor voice, only occasionally for undergoer voice. Of all the examples taking a PR marker that were examined (about 50 tokens), only three are in undergoer voice, and none of these three denotes reciprocal meaning. Sentence (48) is a distributive situation, (49) a chaining situation, and (50) is a collective situation.

(48)  
\[
\text{ta=par-belrias-aw i ’ine-’ine’} \\
\text{1P.GEN=PR-turn-TR1 LOC RED-sea} \\
\text{‘Let us bring her back to the sea.’}
\]

(49)  
\[
\text{tu=par-ta-tadrar-aw na basikaw} \\
\text{3.GEN=PR-RED-pile.up-TR1 DF.NOM bamboo} \\
\text{‘They piled up the bamboos.’}
\]
9.3.6 Noun-based derivations

The reciprocal prefixes can also be used with nouns. The nouns used in this category mostly involve kinship terms, and expressions such as ‘spouse’, ‘friend’. They refer to two or more participants that are in converse relations to each other, and the base noun indicates the relation of one member of the set to the other(s). Examples are shown below.

- **wadi** ‘younger siblings’
  - **malru-wadi** ‘be brother and sister’
- **temama** ‘(your) father, uncle’
  - **mar-temama** ‘be father and son’
- **taina** ‘(your) mother, aunt’
  - **mar-taina** ‘be mother and daughter’
- **temuwan** ‘grandparent, grandchild’
  - **mar-temuwan** ‘be grandparent and grandchild’
- **kataguin** ‘spouse’
  - **mar-kataguin** ‘be husband and wife’
- **alri** ‘male friend’
  - **mare-alri** ‘be male friends’
- **anay** ‘female friend’
  - **mare-anay** ‘be female friends’

9.4 Reflexive constructions

While a prototypical reciprocal clause is one in which two participants equally act upon each other, in a reflexive clause, the actor performs an act upon himself/herself. A number of linguists, e.g. Kemmer (1993), among others, have observed that in some languages reflexive and reciprocal relations are expressed identically, with the same morphosyntactic means serving two functions. In Puyuma these two functions are not expressed by the same morphosyntactic means. A prototypical reflexive construction is one in which subject and object are the same entity. Typically, the reflexive marker denotes an object that is co-referential with the subject noun phrase. Like causative constructions, reflexives can be expressed lexically, morphologically, or analytically (cf. Payne 1997:198).

Payne (1997:200) mentions that analytic reflexives are often based on body parts, usually ‘head’ or ‘soul/self’, or other parts. Puyuma has analytic reflexives, which are signaled by the use of **dradrek** ‘body’. Examples are:

- **salraw ma-sime’ dratu dradrek**
  - **very ITR-careful ID.OBL/3.PSR body**
  ‘He’s taking good care of himself.’
Another way of expressing reflexive meaning is to use a neutral pronoun (§4.5.1.2), as in (56). However, this sentence is ambiguous because a neutral pronoun may either coreference the actor or denote the undergoer. When the neutral pronoun coreferences the actor, an emphatic meaning is obtained; when it denotes the undergoer, a reflexive meaning is obtained.

(56) \[ ku=na\'u-ay \quad kuiku \]
\[ 1S.GEN=look-TR2 \quad 1S.NEU \]
‘I looked at myself.’  (Reflexive)
‘I myself looked at it.’  (Emphatic)

9.5 Anticausatives\textsuperscript{13}

An anticausative verb is prefixed with \textit{mu-} in Puyuma. Like a transitive clause an anticausative clause has the undergoer as its subject. Unlike the actor of a transitive clause, which is manifested as a genitive pronoun procliticised to the verb, the actor or the causer (if any) of an anticausative verb is marked as oblique, as shown in (57) and (58).

(57) \[ mu-la\'uadr \quad na \quad kawi \]
\[ ACAUS-float \quad ID.OBL \quad timber \]
‘The timber is floating (on the water).’

(58) \[ mu-puar \quad na \quad suan \quad dra \quad palerutrukan \]
\[ ACAUS-escape \quad DF.NOM \quad dog \quad ID.OBL \quad firecracker \]
‘The dog was frightened away because of firecrackers.’

In Puyuma there are two different \textit{mu-} prefixes, which behave differently morphosyntactically, although they have been treated as the same morpheme/formative in earlier studies.\textsuperscript{14} The first \textit{mu-} is bimorphemic, consisting of \textit{m-} ‘intransitive marker’ plus \textit{u-} ‘motion prefix’.\textsuperscript{15} The second \textit{mu-} is an anticausative prefix.\textsuperscript{16} The differences between the two categories of prefixes can be summarised as follows.

\textsuperscript{13} This term was first introduced by Nedjalkov and Sil’nickij (1969). See Haspelmath (1987) for more details on anticausatives.

\textsuperscript{14} Starosta (1995) reconstructs PAn *\textit{mu-} as ‘actor focus’ and *\textit{u-} derived motion verbs ‘go to N’ from place nouns. Blust (2003b:451), on the other hand, reconstructs PAn *\textit{mu-} ‘motion prefix’. Blust’s discussion of *\textit{mu-} is mainly based on examples from Thao (Blust 2003a) and Puyuma (Cauquelin 1991a and Tsuchida 1980).

\textsuperscript{15} Although the examples in §9.5.2 confirm Starosta’s reconstruction of *\textit{u-}, Blust’s observation that \textit{mu-} is different from actor voice marker *\textit{um-} is also true.

\textsuperscript{16} Verbs that are prefixed with anticausative \textit{mu-} do not have modal and aspectual forms.
1. Stems taking m-u- are usually place names, deictic expressions, and other words which refer to spatial relationships, as was mentioned earlier. On the other hand, stems taking mu- usually have a counterpart taking <em>.</em>

2. Semantically, motion verbs derived by affixing m-u- have a very clear sense of motion. Verbs taking mu- have a passive-like sense.

3. In intransitive sentences, the subject of m-u- motion verbs is always the actor; on the contrary, the subject of anticausative mu- verbs is always the patient.

9.5.1 mu- as an anticausative marker

From the data collected, about 60 out of 400 verbs in the corpus take both mu- and <em>, with a semantic and syntactic contrast.

A pair of examples showing the anticausative mu- verbs and their <em> counterparts derived from the same stem are given below:

(59) a. mu-bu’utr=la na lawlaw
    ACAUS-stop=PERF DF.NOM lamp
    ‘The lamp went out.’

    b. karuwa b<en>u’utr dra aru a-araw kanta drekal
    can <ITR>stop COMP will RED-rob DF.OBL/1P.PSR village
    ‘It can stop our village being robbed.’

Compare the marking of the actor and undergoer in (60) and (61). Example (60) is an anticausative clause, while (61) is a transitive clause. In both sentences, the undergoer tralrun ‘grass’ is marked nominative. In (61) there is also a genitive actor, but in (60), there is no actor. If there is an actor in an anticausative clause, it is marked as oblique, like the oblique marked paletrutrukan ‘firecracker’ in (58).

(60) mu-ba’itr na tralrun
    ACAUS-burn DF.NOM grass
    ‘The grass was burned.’

(61) nu=ba’itr-aw=la na tralrun?
    2S.GEN=burn-TR1=PERF DF.NOM grass
    ‘Have you burned the grass’

What then is the factor that triggers the speakers to use the anticausative construction instead of a transitive clause? The importance of volitionality can be observed from the following elicited sentences. In sentence (62), which is a mu- construction, the agent gung ‘ox’ carried out the action incidentally; in (63), which is a transitive clause, the agent carried out the action on purpose.

(62) ku=s<in>alrem na ‘aputr i, mu-dupa’ dra gung
    1S.PSR=<PERF>plant DF.NOM flower TOP ACAUS-step ID.OBL ox
    ‘The flowers I planted, they were stepped on by an ox.’

(63) ku=alradr-aw na ‘aputr i, tu=dupa’-aw dra gung
    1S.GEN=surround-TR1 DF.NOM flower TOP 3.GEN=step-TR1 ID.OBL ox
    ‘Although I fenced in the flowers, they were still stepped on by an ox.’
Readers may wonder if topicality plays any role in the choice between an anticausative construction like (62) and a transitive construction like (63). In other words, if the actor or the causer of an event is topical (i.e. mentioned very recently), will the speaker still choose an anticausative construction instead of a transitive construction? The answer is ‘no’. In (64), the actor of the anticausative verb mu-subuk ‘covered’ is dawa ‘millet’, which has been mentioned more recently than the undergoer/subject tu=asaua ‘her daughter-in-law’. Here the anticausative construction is chosen because the actor dawa ‘millet’ performs the action mu-subuk ‘cover’ non-volitionally.

(64) tu=asaua i, kadru i saninin kana apuy, ala
3S.PSR=child.in.law TOP there LOC side DF.OBL fire maybe
atungtung, k<em>em> adru aw, na dawa na ni-resyuk i,
dizzy <ITR>there and DF.NOM millet DF.NOM PERF-cook TOP
mar-semak aw mu-ipang. aw mar-sa-semak=driya aw
PR-inflate and ACAUS-pour.out and PR-RED-inflate=IMPF and
mu-subuk=la kandru kana dawa
ACAU=cover=PERF that.OBL DF.OBL millet
‘Her daughter-in-law, she was beside the fire, and maybe she was dizzy, and the millet that was cooked became inflated and then was overflowing. It became more and more inflated and then she (the daughter-in-law) was covered by the millet.’

9.5.2  m-u- as a bimorphemic intransitive motion marker

Blust (2003b:452) mentions that mu- often derives verbs of motion when it prefixes to ‘place names, deictic expressions, and other words which refer to spatial relationships’. For instance: dare ‘earth’ : mu-dare ‘descend’ ; isatr ‘up, above’ : mu-isatr ‘ascend’. Evidence for treating mu- as bimorphemic m-u- can be seen when the motion verbs are used in imperative or undergoer voice constructions. In those cases, it is clear that mu- involves two morphological processes and should be analysed as m-u-.

(65) an m-u-sabak i ruma’ i, ...
when ITR-go-inside LOC house TOP
‘When he went into the house, …’

(66) tu=u-sabak-ay dra unan tu=ruma’
3.GEN=go-inside-TR2 ID.OBL snake 3.PSR=house
‘A snake went into their house.’

(67) adri u-sabak i drekal
NEG go-inside LOC village
‘Don’t go into the village.’

(68) i tribudran i, m-u-ngesal idru na kia-dra’ing
LOC behind TOP ITR-go-start.point that.NOM DF.NOM get-tax
‘Afterwards, the tax collection began.’

(69) u-ngesal=la
go-start.point=PERF
‘Let’s begin!’
In sentences (65) and (68), the motion verbs *musabak* ‘go inside’ and *mungesal* ‘start’ are used in an intransitive actor voice construction. In the transitive undergoer voice construction in (66), it is clear that *m-* is replaced by the undergoer voice marker -ay, but *u-* is still kept. Similarly, in (67) and (69), *u-* is kept in the imperative construction.

9.6 *ki-* passive

There is a frequently occurring marker *ki-* which can prefix to nominal or verbal stems to derive verbs. The derivations of *ki-* verbs in different aspects and moods are described in §6.5.7, and its use as a verb-deriving affix in §7.2. In this section, we focus mainly on the subcategories of verbs occurring with *ki-* and their functional and morphosyntactic characteristics. Because *[ki- + nominal stem] ‘get N’ is reconstructable in PA (Zeitoun and Teng 2006), but *[ki- + verbal stem] only occurs in Paiwan, Rukai and Puyuma to denote a passive meaning, it seems that passive *ki-* is grammaticalised from *[ki- + nominal stem] ‘get N’. For this reason I will describe *[ki- + nominal stem] first in §9.6.1 and then passive *ki-* in §9.6.2.

9.6.1 *ki-* verbs derived from nominal stems

When *ki-* attaches to a nominal stem, it means ‘to get or to obtain something’. Examples below show that *ki-* verbs derived from nominal stems can be further divided into three subclasses.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nominal stems</th>
<th>Derived verbs</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I. 'aputr ‘flower’</td>
<td><em>ki-’aputr</em> ‘to pick flowers’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kawi ‘wood’</td>
<td><em>ki-kawi</em> ‘to hack wood’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kuraw ‘fish’</td>
<td><em>ki-kuraw</em> ‘to fish’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>paisu ‘money’</td>
<td><em>ki-paisu</em> ‘to get/extort money’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. lengaw ‘sound’</td>
<td><em>ki-lengaw</em> ‘to listen’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tranguru ‘head’</td>
<td><em>ki-tranguru</em> ‘to behead’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. anger ‘mind; thought’</td>
<td><em>ki-anger</em> ‘to think’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rami ‘root’</td>
<td><em>ki-rami</em> ‘to start’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Verbs in the first category only appear in intransitive sentences, and the same forms are used in imperative and declarative sentences.

(70) \[ ki-’aputr=ku=la \]
\[ get-flower=1S.NOM=PERF \]
‘I’ve picked flowers.’

(71) \[ ki-’aputr \]
\[ get-flower \]
‘Pick some flowers!’

Verbs in the second and third category have intransitive/transitive alternations. For example: *ki-lengaw* ‘listen; ITR’, *ki-lengaw-ay* ‘listen, TR2’, *ki-lengaw-anay* ‘listen, TR3’, *ki<em>-anger* ‘think about, want; ITR’, *ki-anger-aw* ‘TR1’. Examples of transitive forms are given below.
Re-encoding of arguments

(72) *tu=*ki-*lengaw-ay* *i* tinataw
3.GEN=ki-sound-TR2 SG.NOM his.mother
‘He listened to his mother.’

(73) *tu=*ki-*anger-aw* *tu=*pi-*amanay-an
3.GEN=ki-thought-TR1 3.PSR=have-what-NMZ
‘He (only) thought about his getting rich.’

While those in the second category have the same form in imperative and declarative intransitive sentences, those in the third category take <em> in declarative intransitive sentences. Compare (72) and (73) with (74) and (75).

(74) *ki-*lengaw=*ku* kandrunu kana ma-*idrang-an
ki-sound=1S.NOM those.OBL DF.OBL ITR-old-NMZ
‘I heard from those elders.’

(75) an *ki-*anger=*ta* when <ITR>ki-thought=1P.ICL.NOM TOP
‘When we thought about it, …’

The subject is always the actor in a [ki- + nominal stem] construction.

Table 9.7 summarises the above observations about the subcategories of ki- verbs derived from nominal stems.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>I</th>
<th>II</th>
<th>III</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>can take &lt;em&gt;</td>
<td>No</td>
<td>No</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>have ITR/TR alternations</td>
<td>No</td>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

9.6.2 *ki-* verbs derived from verbal stems

When *ki-* attaches to a verbal stem it conveys a passive meaning. For instance:

Verbal stem | Derived verbs
---|---
*bekas* ‘interrogate’ | *ki-*bekas ‘be interrogated’
*tenges* ‘tie up’ | *ki-*tenges ‘be tied up’
*tarama* ‘bully’ | *ki-*tarama ‘be bullied’
*baluk* ‘wake’ | *ki-*baluk ‘be woken up’
*ba’aw* ‘alive’ | *ki-*ba’aw ‘to ask for help’
*da’ul* ‘inform’ | *ki-*da’ul ‘be informed’

(76) *drua* b<em>ekas-a *i* tugi
come <ITR>interrogate-PJ SG.NOM Tugi
‘Tugi came to interrogate.’

(77) *m-uka* *i* trau-trau, *m-uka* *ki-*bekas-a
ITR-go LOC RED-person ITR-go PASS-interrogate-PJ
‘He went to others; he went to get interrogated.’
The sentences above are all intransitive. In (76) and (78), the subject is the actor; in (77) and (79), the subject is the patient (or the possessor of the patient if the patient is not an animate participant).

The two constructions, [ki- + verbal stem] and [ki- + nominal stem], have different argument structures. Recall that the subject in a [ki- + nominal] intransitive construction is the actor (§9.6.1). But here, the subject is the patient.

In terms of argument structure, the ki-passive construction is similar to the mu-anticausative construction (§9.5.1), as both demote the actor to the oblique position. The difference between the two involves the volition/intention of the patient. In a mu-anticausative construction, neither the actor nor the undergoer has control of the action, while in a ki-passive construction, the patient, or the possessor of the patient, intends the event to occur. The following sentences are examples of sulud ‘push’ in the ki-passive construction, in the mu-anticausative construction, and in the transitive construction.

(80) \[ \text{ki-sulu-sulud} = \text{ku dra trau} \]
\[ \text{PASS-RED-push=1S.NOM ID.OBL person} \]
‘I got pushed by others.’

(81) \[ \text{tu='et} \text{r-etr-anay i, mu-sulud na katengadraw-an} \]
\[ 3.GEN=jostle-TR3 TOP ACAUS-push DF.NOM sit-NMZ \]
‘He jostled, and so the chair was pushed away.’

(82) \[ \text{ku=sulud-aw na katengadraw-an} \]
\[ 1S.GEN=push-TR1 DF.NOM sit-NMZ \]
‘I pushed the chair away.’

The control/volitionality of the participants in the above sentences can be summarised as follows.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Transitive</th>
<th>ki-passive</th>
<th>mu-anticausative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>actor</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>patient</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Another difference between the mu- construction and the ki-construction is that the subject (the patient) in the ki-construction is usually animate.17

---

17 The only exception found is given below, where the patient is an inanimate object kawi ‘timber’. However, according to the informant, there is a personifying flavour in the sentence.

\[ \text{adri muai ki-la’udr na kawi} \]
\[ \text{NEG willing.to PASS-wash.away DF.NOM timber} \]
‘The timber can’t be washed away.’
The fact that there is a volitional patient in a *ki*-construction can be observed from the following sentences. In these examples, *ki*-verbs follow another verb to form a serial verb construction. The verbs preceding *ki*-verbs in the two examples are a desiderative verb *maranger* ‘want’ in (83) and a motion verb *muka* ‘go’ in (84), both of which denote a strong sense of volition.

(83)  
\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ma-ranger} & \quad \text{ki-da’ul} & \quad \text{dra} & \quad \text{trau} \\
\text{ITR-want} & \quad \text{PASS-informed} & \quad \text{ID.OBL} & \quad \text{person} \\
\end{align*}
\]

‘He wanted to be informed by others.’ (He wouldn’t take action until being informed.)

(84)  
\[
\begin{align*}
\text{m-uka}=ku & \quad \text{ki-pespes-a} \\
\text{ITR-go}=\text{1S.NOM} & \quad \text{PASS-massage-PJ} \\
\end{align*}
\]

‘I went to get massaged.’

There are also some examples showing *ki*- being used to mark a middle construction, as in (85).

(85)  
\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ki-lasedr}=ku & \quad \text{kantaw} \\
\text{ki-hide}=\text{1S.NOM} & \quad \text{3.OBL} \\
\end{align*}
\]

‘I hide at his place.’

Finally, for verbs denoting ‘giving/receiving’, *ki*- changes the direction of the action. For instance:

- *beray* ‘give’  
  - *ki-beray* ‘get; beg’
- *pa-bulras* ‘lend’  
  - *ki-bulras* ‘borrow’
- *tulrudr* ‘pass something to’  
  - *ki-tulrudr* ‘catch’

The subject of these verbs is the recipient, the participant that a theme is given to. In a sentence without *ki*-, it is the giver that initiates and controls the happening of the action; in a sentence marked by *ki*-, it is the recipient that initiates and controls the event. Compare the argument structure of the sentences below.

(86)  
\[
\begin{align*}
\text{an} & \quad \text{tu}=\text{beray-ay}=\text{mu}=\text{la} & \quad \text{dra} & \quad \text{la’ub} \ldots \\
\text{if} & \quad \text{3.GEN}=\text{give-TR2}=\text{2P.NOM}=\text{PERF} & \quad \text{ID.OBL} & \quad \text{ladle} \\
\end{align*}
\]

‘If she gives you a ladle …’

(Giver: Gen ; Receiver: Nom)

(87)  
\[
\begin{align*}
\text{beray}=\text{ku}=\text{la} & \quad \text{dra} & \quad \text{paisu} \\
\text{give}=\text{1S.NOM}=\text{PERF} & \quad \text{ID.OBL} & \quad \text{money} \\
\end{align*}
\]

‘I’ve given money.’

(Giver: Nom ; Receiver: ---)

(88)  
\[
\begin{align*}
\text{an} & \quad \text{ki-a-beray}=\text{ku} & \quad \text{dra} & \quad \text{pa-ka-sagar-an} & \quad \text{i,} \ldots \\
\text{if} & \quad \text{PASS-a-give}=\text{1S.NOM} & \quad \text{ID.OBL} & \quad \text{CAUS-ka-like-NMZ} & \quad \text{TOP} \\
\end{align*}
\]

‘If I can ask for a prize, …’

(Giver: --- ; Receiver: Nom)
Again, from the English translation, we find that when *ki-* is used, the receiver (instead of the giver) exercises his/her will to make the action be carried out.
10 Clause types

10.1 Introduction

In this chapter, clause types are described in terms of their internal structure, with reference to different formal categories of predicate. Two major types of clause can be distinguished in terms of whether the predicate is verbal or nonverbal. Clauses with verbal predicates fall into three subtypes according to the number of core arguments a predicate has: transitive, intransitive and ambient. Intransitive clauses divide into several categories, depending on the argument structure of the verb. Some are simple intransitive clauses with a monovalent verb (§4.3.1.3), some are extended intransitives (AV) with a bivalent verb (§4.3.1.3, §8.4.2.2), and some have either an anticausative or a passive verb derived from a bivalent verb (§9.5 and §9.6).

Puyuma only has two types of nonverbal predicate: nominal predicates and existential/possessive/locative predicates. These utilise different copula verbs or no copula at all. A third type of nonverbal predicate, the adjectival predicate, is often distinguished cross-linguistically, but there is no adjective word class in Puyuma (§4.4), and accordingly no adjectival predicates.

Subtypes of verbal clauses are described in §10.2. Nominal clauses are dealt with in §10.3, followed by a description of existential/possessive/locative clauses in §10.4.

10.2 Verbal clauses

10.2.1 The main types of verbal clauses

More detailed discussion of verbal predicates occurs in Chapter 8 and Chapter 9. In this chapter, I summarise the basic types and present some illustrative examples.

Figure 10.1 presents a classification of verbal clause types in Puyuma. The basic distinction among verbal predicates is between transitive, intransitive, and ambient predicates, with two, one and no core arguments respectively. Transitive and intransitive verbs behave differently in terms of both argument structure and morphological marking (§8.4). Many verb stems can appear in both transitive and intransitive clauses when they are affixed with transitive or intransitive markers.

Within the intransitive category, monovalent verbs require only one argument semantically, while other intransitives require more than one. The distinction among extended intransitive, anticausative, and ki-passive is that the extended intransitive downgrades the patient to an oblique, while the anticausative and the passive downgrade the actor to an
oblique. While the patient subject of an anticausative is non-volitional, the patient subject of a passive at least exercises a degree of intention. Verbs in ambient, monovalent and extended intransitive clauses (marked in bold) carry the same intransitive affix.

### Figure 10.1: Puyuma verbal clause types

#### 10.2.2 Transitive clauses

The verb of a transitive clause always carries a transitive suffix, and there is always a genitive pronoun attached to the predicate. A transitive clause may either be bivalent, as in (1), or trivalent, as in (2). A transitive clause with a trivalent predicate is an extended transitive clause (§8.4.2.2). The two core arguments of a transitive clause are the genitive actor (\(tu=\)) and the nominative undergoer (=\(ku\) in (1) and nantu sarekudran in (2)).

(1) \[ tu=sapana \, ^{\prime}-aw=ku \]
\[ 3\text{.GEN}=\text{fake-TR1}=1\text{S.NOM} \]
\[ ‘\text{He fooled me.’} \]

(2) \[ tu=truri-anay \text{ nantu sarekudran dra dalran} \]
\[ 3\text{.GEN}=\text{draw-TR3} \text{ DF.NOM/3.PSR walking.stick ID.OBL road} \]
\[ ‘\text{He drew a road with his walking stick.’} \]

#### 10.2.3 Intransitive clauses

The verb in an intransitive clause usually carries an intransitive prefix or infix, but there are two subcategories of verb that do not take an intransitive affix (§6.5). Intransitive predicates include those that take only one argument (monovalent), and those that take more than one argument (bivalent or trivalent), i.e. extended intransitive, passive, anticausative. Syntactically, there is always one core argument, which is marked nominative, in these constructions.
10.2.3.1 Clauses with a monovalent predicate

Monovalent predicates include predicates denoting both stative and dynamic events. These two kinds of predicate have the same argument structure and are both always marked by an intransitive marker. Stative predicates are often, but not always (§6.6), prefixed by a marker *ka-* to mark irrealis. Sentences (3) and (4) are examples of clauses with a stative predicate in realsis and irrealis moods respectively; sentences (5) and (6) are examples of clauses with a dynamic predicate.

(3) \text{ma-lriay i baeli} \quad \text{ITR-drunk SG.NOM my.older.sibling} \quad \text{‘My brother was drunk.’}

(4) \text{ka-lra-lriay=yu} \quad \text{ka-RED-drunk=2S.NOM} \quad \text{‘You will be drunk.’}

(5) \text{ma-ragan i nanali i, ...} \quad \text{ITR-move.up SG.NOM my.mother TOP} \quad \text{‘When my mother got up, …’}

(6) \text{ra-ragan=ku} \quad \text{RED-move.up=1S.NOM} \quad \text{‘I will get up.’}

10.2.3.2 Extended intransitive clauses

The verb of an extended intransitive clause (§8.4.2.2) is bivalent, as in (7) and (8). It has an actor subject and a patient. The patient is indefinite and thus is downgraded to oblique status or is not overtly expressed when the meaning can be inferred from the context.

(7) \text{m-alrak dra dinun na babayan} \quad \text{<ITR>take ID.OBL tub DF.NOM woman} \quad \text{‘The woman took a tub.’}

(8) \text{tr<em>akaw dra paisu i isaw} \quad \text{<ITR>steal ID.OBL money SG.NOM Isaw} \quad \text{‘Isaw stole money.’}

Morphosyntactically speaking, the only distinction between an extended intransitive and a clause with a monovalent predicate is the optional occurrence of the oblique-marked patient in the extended intransitive clause. An extended intransitive clause has a transitive counterpart with an undergoer subject when the patient is definite, as shown below:

(9) \text{tu=alrak-aw na dinun} \quad \text{3.GEN=take-TR1 DF.NOM tub} \quad \text{‘She took the tub.’}

(10) \text{tu=trakaw-aw na paisu kan isaw} \quad \text{3.GEN=steal-TR1 DF.NOM money SG.OBL Isaw} \quad \text{‘Isaw stole the money.’}
10.2.3.3 Anticausative clauses

Like a transitive predicate, an anticausative predicate (§9.5) has the undergoer as its subject. Unlike the actor of a transitive predicate, which is manifested as a genitive pronoun procliticised to the verb, the actor (if any) of an anticausative predicate is marked as oblique, as shown in (12) below.

(11)  \textit{mu-sapana’}=ku
     ACAUS-fake=1S.NOM
     ‘I was fooled.’

(12)  \textit{mu-sede’} dra dalran tu=dare’
     ACAUS-interval ID.OBL road 3.PSR=earth
     ‘His land was separated by a road.’

10.2.3.4 Passive clauses

Like anticausative and transitive predicates, the subject of a passive clause is the undergoer. However, while there is always a genitive actor in a transitive clause, the actor of a passive clause is usually unmentioned. When it is mentioned, it is marked as oblique. The difference between an anticausative construction and a passive construction is that the undergoer in a passive construction intends the event to occur. More discussion of passives is given in §9.6.

(13)  \textit{ki-pespes}=ku
     ki-massage=1S.NOM
     ‘I was massaged.’

(14)  \textit{ki-sulu-sulu}=ku  dra trau
     ki-RED-push=1S.NOM  ID.OBL  person
     ‘I was pushed by others.’

10.2.4 Ambient clauses

Ambient clauses are clauses with no arguments. They typically refer to weather conditions. For instance:

(15)  \textit{an} \textit{ka-’udal} i, ta=bebet-anay kadriyu
     when \textit{ka-rain} TOP 1P.GEN=tie-TR3 there
     ‘When it rained, we tied it there.’

(16)  \textit{aremeng}=driya i, tu=pi-tre’ep-aw=ta
     dark=IMPF TOP 3.GEN=have-company-TR1=1P.NOM
     ‘When it was dark, they (our parents) put us to sleep together with others.’

10.3 Nominal clauses

10.3.1 An overview

A nominal clause consists of two noun phrases: a predicate NP and a subject. Two types of nominal clauses can be distinguished in terms of whether the predicate NP is non-referential (classifying), as in (17), or referential (identifying), as in (18).
Clause types

(17) Nancy is a lawyer.

(18) Sally Smith is the head of this department.

Both types of nominal clause are often referred to as ‘equational’ clauses in the literature, but various linguists have argued that separate terms should be applied to them and I refer to them as ‘classifying’ and ‘identifying’.

In a Puyuma nominal clause, the predicate NP always occupies the clause-initial position. For example:

(19) a k-i<a>ndang-an idri
     ID.NOM     k-<a>afraid-NMZ this.NOM
     ‘This (person) is a dangerous person.’

As can be seen from the above sentence, the predicate NP a kiandangan ‘dangerous thing’ and the subject idri ‘this’ are simply juxtaposed. The nominal predicate in a Puyuma nominal clause is marked with nominative case, as is the subject NP.

When the subject is manifested as a bound pronoun, it cliticises to the predicate NP, for example:

(20) a tipul=ku
     ID.NOM Tipul=1S.NOM
     ‘I am a Tipul.’ (I am from Tipul.)

A nominal predicate may be a noun, like tipul in (20), or a nominalised verb, like kiandangan in (19).

10.3.2 Classifying clauses

A classifying clause consists of an indefinite NP predicate and a subject noun phrase. The predicate NP denotes a class to which the subject referent belongs.

(21) a redean na barasa
     ID.NOM foundation DF.NOM stone
     ‘The stone is a foundation.’

Classifying clauses do not need a copula verb in affirmative sentences. However, a copula verb ameli (§11.3) precedes the nominal predicate when the clause is negated. For example:

(22) ameli a s<em>eneng ina unan
     NEG.COP ID.NOM <ITR>special DF.NOM snake
     ‘The snake was not a special one.’

When the subject is manifested as a bound pronoun, it encliticises to the copula ameli, as in (23).

(23) ameli=ta a payran
     NEG.COP=1P.NOM ID.NOM Taiwanese
     ‘We are not Taiwanese.’

A classifying predicate can have an aspectual marker following it to indicate perfective or imperfective aspect. For example:
Very often, the subject is placed in the topic position. For example:

(24) \(a\ bulra-bulray-an=\text{la} na\ walak\)
ID.NOM RED-beautiful-NMZ=PERF DF.NOM child
‘The child became a young woman.’

(25) \(a\ lalak=ku=\text{driya}\)
ID.NOM child=1S.NOM=IMPF
‘I was still a child.’

10.3.3 Identifying clauses

The predicate in an identifying clause is a definite NP, and the subject referent is equated with the referent of the predicate NP, as shown in (28).

(28) \(a\ maun tu=\text{bangsaran} kana\ barubaru\ nadru\)
COP 3.PSR=young.man DF.OBL Barubaru those.NOM
‘Those are Barubaru’s young men.’

Identifying clauses are usually introduced by a copula verb *amau*.1 For instance:

(29) \(a\ maun idri na\ unan na\ m-ekan\)
COP this.NOM DF.NOM snake DF.NOM ITR-eat
‘The one that ate is this snake.’

It is very rare for clauses introduced by *amau* to have a subject manifested as a full noun phrase following the predicate, as in (29). More often, the subject is manifested as a topic, as in (30), or is mentioned in the previous discourse, as in (31).

(30) \(na\ pu-ka-\text{rikudran} m-inatray i, a\ ma\text{'inay}\)
DF.NOM CAUS-ka-behind ITR-die TOP ID.NOM male
‘The eldest, he is a boy.’

(31) \(ma\text{sa-se' er} dratu\ kiruan\ kadri\ maka-satr kana\)
RECIP-come.across ID.OBL/3.PSR clothes here along-high DF.OBL

\(barasa, a\ maun tu=\text{kiruwan} kantu\ wadi\)
stone COP 3.PSR=clothes DF.OBL/3.PSR younger.sibling
‘They came across her clothes here above the stone, it was their younger sister’s clothes.

In other words, *amau* often only has a definite predicate NP following it. When there is no noun phrase denoting the subject, we know that it is a third person participant.

---

1 The word *amau* has an irrealis form *kamau*, and *ameli* has an irrealis form *kameli*. This seems to be the only evidence for treating these words as copula verbs.
When the subject is manifested as a full noun phrase, or is in topic position, the copula verb can be omitted, although this is rare. For example:

(32) \[ ku=sa-sede-an \text{idrini} \]
1S.PSR=RED-interval-NMZ this.NOM
‘This, is my holidays.’

(33) \[ idrunu \text{i, nanku ruma’} \]
that.NOM TOP DF.NOM/1S.PSR house
‘That, it is my house.’

When the subject is not manifested as a full NP, \textit{amau} can never be omitted. Unlike the negative copula verb \textit{ameli}, \textit{amau} does not attract pronominal clitics. That is, if the predicate or the subject is a pronoun, it must be manifested as a free pronoun, as shown below:

(34) \[ \text{amau } kuiku na \text{sa-senay} \]
COP 1S.NEU DF.NOM <ITR>RED-sing
‘The one who was singing is me.’

(35) \[ *\text{amau=ku na } \text{sa-senay} \]

10.4 Locative/existential/possessive\(^2\) clauses

10.4.1 An overview

The second set of major nonverbal clauses is those that employ a copula verb \textit{ulaya/uliya}.\(^3\) The same copula verb introduces locative, possessive, and existential clauses. Lyons (1967:390) indicates that these three types of construction are closely related to each other. He notes, ‘in many, and perhaps in all, languages existential and possessive constructions derive (both synchronically and diachronically) from locatives’.\(^4\)

Tan (1997:78) says that these three Puyuma constructions share many properties. While her analyses are based on a large amount of data, because the data are elicited sentences, she fails to grasp some important facts about real usage.

To begin with, let us briefly examine existential, possessive, and locative constructions in Puyuma.\(^5\) As the following sentences show, the affirmative sentences are introduced by \textit{ulaya}, and the negative sentences by \textit{unian}.

---

\(^2\) Possessive relations can be expressed predicatively or adnominally. In this section we are only concerned with predicative possession. Adnominal possession is discussed in §5.3.

\(^3\) These two forms seem to be in free variation; certain speakers favour one, and some other speakers favour the other.

\(^4\) Similar observations are also made by Kuno (1971), Clark (1978) and Freeze (1992). They each claim that the three named constructions are all locative in origin. For example, Clark (1978) examines word order, definiteness, and verb agreement from a typological perspective, and she distinguishes four locational constructions accordingly.

\(^5\) Zeitoun et al. (1999) compare in detail these three constructions in several Formosan languages, looking at structural variations, morphological properties and the syntactic behaviour of the copula verb, the syntactic and semantic characteristics of their arguments, and the word order of these constructions.
Chapter 10

(36) ulaya a ma’idrang i puyuma
exist ID.NOM old LOC Puyuma
‘There was an old man in Puyuma.’
(Existential construction)

(37) ulaya ku=idrus a k<em>adri
exist 1S.PSR=spoon ID.OBL <ITR>here
‘I have such kinds of spoons.’
(Possessive construction)

(38) ulaya i temuu i puyuma
exist SG.NOM your.grandparent LOC Puyuma
‘Your grandmother is in Puyuma.’
(Locative construction)

(39) na’u-i tu=ruma’ i, unian dra ruma’
look.at-TR2 3.PSR=house TOP not.exist ID.OBL house
dra mi-puran
ID.OBL have-betelnut
‘Look at their houses, there is no house that has betelnut trees.’
(Negative existential construction)

(40) unian=ku dra walak
not.exist=1S.NOM ID.OBL child
‘I don’t have children.’
(Negative possessive construction)

(41) m-u-ruma’=la i, unian tu=walak k<em>a
ITR-go-house=PERF TOP not.exist 3.PSR =child ITR-say
‘When he went home, his children were not there.’
(Negative locative construction)

Are ulaya and unian verbs in Puyuma? Zeitoun et al. (1999:16–24, 40) argue that the elements introducing existential/possessive/locative sentences in the Formosan languages should be treated as verbs. Their reasons are: first, that in some languages, these elements can be marked for voice; and second, that in languages where they are not marked for voice, they may occur in imperative constructions, attract pronominal clitics/suffixes, and cooccur with temporal/aspectual markers, and that the reduplication of the stem yields a future, progressive, or iterative reading. No imperative examples are found in my data, but Puyuma existential/possessive/locative sentences manifest the other verbal features they propose. For example, in (42) the clitic pronoun =yu is attached to unian. In (43) and (44) the imperfective aspectual marker =driya and the perfective aspectual marker =la cooccur with ulaya and unian, respectively. In (45) unian undergoes partial reduplication to denote an irrealis meaning.

(42) an unian=yu dra angadr-an, ...
when not.exist=2S.NOM ID.OBL breathe-NMZ
‘When you have no breath, …’
(43) \( \text{laba ma-ladram-a dra ulaya= driya mu-ba’aw tu=walak} \)  
so.that ITR-know-PJ ID.OBL exist=IMPF ACAUS-live 3.PSR =child  
‘So that she can know that her child is still alive.’

(44) \( \text{unian=la dra kedrang ki-karun} \)  
not.exist=PERF ID.OBL strength get-job  
‘They don’t have strength to work.’

(45) \( \text{adri=mi } u<\text{nian} \text{ dra akan-an} \)  
NEG=1P.NOM <RED>not.exist ID.OBL eat-NMZ  
‘We won’t be short of food.’

Although I do not object in principle to the suggestion that existential words should be treated as verbs, I argue that whether or not an element is a verb in a particular language should be determined by the grammatical criteria of that language. Thus while \text{ulaya} and \text{unian} do possess the characteristics cited by Zeitoun et al. (1999), these characteristics are not necessarily diagnostic of verbhood in Puyuma. For example, in Puyuma, aspectual markers can cooccur not only with verbs, but also with nouns and negators; similarly, not only verbs attract pronominal clitics but also nouns, and sometimes negators. The reduplication of the stem to indicate a future, progressive, or iterative reading also applies to both nouns and verbs (see §3.3.3 and §3.4.2).

So, it seems that the criteria Zeitoun et al. propose are not sufficient to qualify \text{ulaya} and \text{unian} as verbs in Puyuma. More persuasive evidence for treating \text{ulaya} and \text{unian} as verbs is that \text{unian} can be negated by \text{adri}, the negator used to negate a verbal predicate (see §4.3.1.1), as exemplified in (45) and (46). Thus the status of \text{ulaya} and \text{unian} as copula verbs can be confirmed.

(46) \( \text{adri } u<\text{nian} \text{ idri na barasa} \)  
NEG <RED>not.exist this.NOM DF.NOM stone  
‘This stone has never disappeared.’

In the following discussion, I first examine the existential, possessive, and locative constructions in turn with respect to the order of the argument and the nominal predicate, and with respect to definiteness/case. I also discuss the verb \text{kadru} ‘there/live’ and verbs begin with \text{mi-}, meaning ‘have’. They are not nominal predicates, but are discussed here because they resemble existential/possessive/locative constructions semantically.

### 10.4.2 Existential clauses

Pragmatically, the basic function of an existential construction is to assert the existence of an entity or to introduce an entity into the discourse. Syntactically, two properties are often considered to be universal in existential constructions: the indefiniteness restriction and the underlying obligatory locative element (cf. Lyon 1967; Kuno 1971; Clark 1978; Ziv 1982; Freeze 1992). For example, Clark (1978:91) noted that existential constructions usually introduce new information, so they normally contain indefinite nominals. Ziv (1982:73) similarly points out that it would be absurd to assert the existence of an entity that is already presupposed to exist.
Existential clauses in Puyuma usually consist of the copula verb *ula\text{ya}  and two nominals; one is the argument whose existence is asserted (*\text{a ma}'idrang} in (47)), and the other refers to a location (*i puyuma} in (47)). The locative NP is optional.

**10.4.2.1 Marking of case and definiteness**

In existential clauses, the location is always marked by the locative marker *\text{i}, whereas the entity asserted to exist is marked as an indefinite nominative in an affirmative clause (47) and an indefinite *\text{oblique} in a negative clause (48).

(47) \begin{align*}
\text{*ula\text{ya}} & \text{ } \text{a} & \text{ma}'idrang} & \text{ } \text*i & \text{puyuma} \\
& \text{exist} & \text{ID.NOM} & \text{old} & \text{LOC} & \text{Puyuma} \\
& \text{‘There’s an old man in Puyuma.’}
\end{align*}

(48) \begin{align*}
\text{unian} & \text{ } \text{dra} & \text{akan-an} \\
& \text{not.exist} & \text{ID.OBL} & \text{eat-NMZ} \\
& \text{‘There’s no food.’}
\end{align*}

Both Zeitoun et al. (1999:33,40) and Tan (1997:81–83) say that the definiteness restriction does not account for the data in most of the languages they observed. For example, Tan (1997:81) asserts that personal proper nouns are allowed to occur in an existential construction. Consider the following Puyuma sentences:

(49) \begin{align*}
\text{*ula\text{ya}} & \text{ } \text{i} & \text{ukak} \\
& \text{exist} & \text{SG.NOM} & \text{Ukak} \\
& \text{‘Ukak is here/there.’} & \text{OR:} & \text{‘Ukak exists/is alive.’}
\end{align*}

(50) \begin{align*}
\text{unian} & \text{ } \text{i} & \text{ukak} \\
& \text{not.exist} & \text{SG.NOM} & \text{Ukak} \\
& \text{‘Ukak is not here/there.’} & \text{OR:} & \text{‘Ukak does not exist/is dead.’}
\end{align*}

(From Tan 1997:84)

Tan says that each of the above two sentences may have two readings; it may indicate the location of the entity, or the existence of the entity. She does not tell the reader whether she considers these sentences to be existential or locative. I would argue that these examples represent the locative construction and that the existential reading is a metaphoric usage.

Tan (1997:81–83) distinguishes two subtypes of existential sentence in Puyuma. One asserts/negates the existence of a genus in the world (e.g. (51)–(52)); the other indicates the existence/non-existence of some indefinite subset of a genus in a specified location (e.g. (53)–(54)). In the examples she provides, the basic difference between them is the use of a different noun phrase marker in negative sentences. In the one type, the nominative noun phrase marker *\text{a} is used in negatives as in (52); in the other type, the oblique noun phrase marker *\text{dra} is used, as in (54).

(51) \begin{align*}
\text{*ula\text{ya}} & \text{ } \text{a} & \text{ariwanes} \\
& \text{exist} & \text{ID.NOM} & \text{rainbow} \\
& \text{‘Rainbows exist.’} & \text{(There is such a thing as a rainbow.)}
\end{align*}
Clause types

According to Tan, *ariwanes* ‘rainbow’ in (51) is non-referential, whereas *kuraw* ‘fish’ in (53) is referential but indefinite. Because the locative frame of sentence (51) is the whole world, the NP *ariwanes* ‘rainbow’ cannot designate any specific token but has to denote a generic element. On the other hand, in (53), the locative frame is overtly specified, the NP *kuraw* ‘fish’ cannot denote the whole class, so it is referential. Tan gives another example where *a* is used in a negative existential sentence.

(55) ?unian *a* kuraw i kali
not.exist ID.NOM fish LOC river
‘There is not a single fish in the river.’

She explains that a sentence like (55) is seldom used but that it conveys an emphatic overtone. However, in both (52) and (55), *a* instead of *dra* is considered unacceptable by some informants, and unnatural by others. What we can be sure of is that in natural speech, only *dra* is used in negative sentences.

To sum up, the definiteness restriction does hold in Puyuma text. The NP denoting the location is always marked by *i*, and the NP denoting the entity is always marked by *a* (indefinite nominative) in the affirmative, and *dra* (indefinite oblique) in the negative.

### 10.4.2.2 Word order

Clark (1978:92–94) writes that ‘word order appears to vary predictably with the definiteness of the subject nominal in existential and locative constructions across different languages’. According to her work, the definiteness of the theme and word order are two major characteristics that distinguish an existential construction from a locative one. She generalises that there is a preference for the location to precede the theme. However, Zeitoun et al. (1999:34–36) and Tan (1997:84) state that the noun denoting an entity must always precede the location in an existential construction in Puyuma. While in most cases it is true that new information (the asserted entity) precedes the old information (the location), I do find several examples in texts which show that the location may acceptably precede the theme. For example:

(56) uliya kadri i ami *a* salraw bulray
exist here LOC north ID.NOM very beautiful
‘There is a very beautiful girl in the north.’

---

6 The question mark indicates that it is acceptable to some informants but is a bad sentence.
Thus word order is not crucial in distinguishing existential sentences from locative sentences.

10.4.2.3 Pragmatic function

In natural speech most affirmative existential sentences introduce a new participant to the discourse, especially at the beginning of a story. In such situations, no location is mentioned. According to Tan (1997), if no location is overtly specified or implied, the locative frame referred to is the whole world, and the NP in such clauses refers to a generic element. However, in the following sentences the NP does not encode a generic element.

(58)  *asuwa=driyan i, ulaya a saya a drekal.*
when=IMPF TOP exist ID.NOM one ID.NOM village
*kire-k-ameli tu=kakuwayanan*
*kire-ka-NEG 3.PSR=custom*
‘Once upon a time, there was a village. Its customs were different.’

(59)  *ulaya a mare-temuwan. i temutaw=la i,*
exist ID.NOM RECIP-grandchild SG.NOM grandparent=PERF TOP
*unian=la dra kedrang, idru na walak i,*
not.exist=PERF ID.OBL strength that DF.NOM child TOP
*tu=padrek-aw i temutaw m-a-uka=la*
3.GEN=carry.on.back-TR1 SG.NOM grandparent ITR-RED-go=PERF
*m-atel-a i drenan*
ITR-throw-PJ LOC mountain
‘There was a grandmother and a grandson. The grandmother had no strength (to work), so the grandson carried her on his back and went to throw her away in the mountains.’

10.4.3 Locative clauses

A locative clause specifies the location of a certain entity. Like many existential sentences, a locative sentence has three elements: the existential verb *ulaya/unian*, the theme, and the location.

10.4.3.1 Marking of case and definiteness

Unlike existential sentences, in a locative clause the theme is definite and is marked as nominative. For example, in (60), the theme *temuu* ‘your grandparent’ is definite and takes the nominative phrase marker *i*.

(60)  *ulaya i temuu i puyuma*
exist SG.NOM your.grandparent LOC Puyuma
‘Your grandmother is in Puyuma.’
Of about 60 tokens with *ula*/*unian*, only five occur in a locative construction. Speakers prefer to use another verb, *kadru* ‘there, live’ (§10.4.6.1), to express the location of a certain entity.

### 10.4.3.2 Word order

Clark’s (1978:94–95) typological study of locative constructions shows that there is a strong tendency for a definite theme to precede the location. Although example (60) is consistent with this observation, there are not enough examples from text to draw a firm conclusion. From elicited examples, however, it emerges that the order of the theme and the location is conditioned by what is old and new information in the discourse. For example, in the following elicited examples, only (63) and (64) are acceptable answers to (62). Sentence (65) is an answer to the question ‘Where is your brother?’ So, basically, the new information, underlined below, goes before the old information.

(62) 

\[
\text{ulaya} \ i \ \text{manay} \ i \ \text{abak}
\]

exist SG.NOM who LOC inside

‘Who’s inside?’

(63) 

\[
(\text{ulaya}) \ i \ \text{baeli}
\]

exist SG.NOM my.older.sibling

‘My brother.’

(64) 

\[
\text{ulaya} \ i \ \text{baeli} \ i \ \text{abak}
\]

exist SG.NOM my.older.sibling LOC inside

‘My brother is inside.’

(65) 

\[
\text{ulaya} \ i \ \text{abak} \ i \ \text{baeli}
\]

exist LOC inside SG.NOM my.older.sibling

‘My brother is inside.’

However, when the location is manifested by the interrogative pronoun *isuwa* ‘where’, the word order is *ulaya, isuwa*, and then the nominative argument. For instance:

(66) 

\[
\text{ulaya} \ \text{isuwa} \ \text{tu} \ =kiaedreng \ kana \ \text{yawan}
\]

exist where 3.PSR=bed DF.OBL leader

‘Where is the leader’s bed?’

(67) 

\[
\text{ulaya} \ \text{isuwa} \ \text{nadru} \ \text{na} \ \text{lalak}
\]

exist where those.NOM DF.NOM child

‘Where are those kids?’

### 10.4.4 Possessive clauses

Clark (1978:87) distinguishes two types of predicative possessive construction: the ‘have’ possessive (e.g. Tom has a book) and the ‘be’ possessive (e.g. The book is Tom’s). The difference between the two lies in the definiteness of the theme. In Puyuma, too, the two
possessives are manifested by different constructions. The Puyuma equivalent of ‘be’ possessive is expressed as an equational sentence, as in (68).

(68) \[\text{nanku \, ruma’ \, idrunu}\]
\[\text{DF.NOM/1S.PSR \, house \, that.NOM}\]
‘That is my house.’ OR: ‘That house is mine.’

The Puyuma equivalent of the ‘have’ possessive construction resembles the existential construction, but unlike the existential construction, the possessive construction also contains a possessor. The possessor is manifested as a nominative proclitic pronoun (denoting the possessor) in an affirmative clause (69), but as a nominative enclitic pronoun in a negative clause (70).

(69) \[\text{ulaya \, ku=idrus} \, \text{a} \, \text{k<em>adri}\]
\[\text{exist \, 1S.PSR=spoon \, ID.NOM \, <ITR>here}\]
‘I have this kind of spoon.’

(70) \[\text{unian=ku} \, \text{dra} \, \text{dalran \, m-uka \, i \, taywan}\]
\[\text{not.exist=1S.NOM \, ID.OBL \, road \, ITR-go \, LOC \, Taiwan}\]
‘I have no way to go to Taiwan.’

From (69) and (70), we see that the possessorum is definite in an affirmative sentence (i.e. idrus ‘spoon’ is preceded by ku=, a definite nominative possessor), and is indefinite in a negative sentence (i.e. dalran ‘road’ is marked by an indefinite oblique noun phrase marker).

Clark (1978:89) argues that the possessor in possessive constructions is an ‘animate place’. In possessive constructions, the place happens to be an animate being. However, in Puyuma, an inanimate possessor is possible. For example:

(71) \[\text{ulaya \, nantu \, pauwayan}\]
\[\text{exist \, DF.NOM/3.PSR \, regulation}\]
‘It has its regulations.’

(72) \[\text{uliya \, tu=legian} \, \text{dra} \, \text{masalak \, kema?}\]
\[\text{exist \, 3.PSR=taboo \, ID.OBL \, hunting.festival \, say}\]
‘Does the hunting festival have its taboos?’

While the definiteness of the theme can serve to distinguish existentials from locatives, sometimes it is not easy to distinguish a possessive construction from an existential or a locative construction. For example, when the possessor is a third person argument, there is no syntactic property to distinguish a possessive from an existential. In those cases, we have to seek for the meaning from the context. Compare (73) and (74).

(73) \[\text{an \, ma’idrang=la} \, \text{a} \, \text{trau \, aw \, unian=la} \, \text{dra}\]
\[\text{when \, old=PERF \, ID.NOM \, person \, and \, not.exist=PERF \, ID.OBL}\]
\[\text{kedrang \, ki-karun \, i, \, tu=atel-anay \, i \, drena-drenan}\]
\[\text{strength \, get-job \, TOP \, 3.GEN=throw-TR3 \, LOC \, RED-mountain}\]
‘When people got old and without strength to work, they were thrown away in the mountains.’

(74) \[\text{saya \, a} \, \text{dalran \, kemay \, i \, timulr, \, ba<sika>sikaw}\]
\[\text{one \, ID.NOM \, road \, from \, LOC \, south \, <RED>bamboo}\]
idru na dalran, unian dra dalran da druma
that.NOM DF.NOM road not.exist ID.OBL road ID.OBL other
‘There’s one road from south, and the road was full of bamboos, there’s no other road.’

From the context, it is clear that there is a possessor in (73). But because it is not overtly manifested the construction looks the same as the one in (74). Furthermore, even if a pronoun is explicitly expressed, sometimes it is still not easy to determine which category a given construction belongs to. Consider the following sentence.

(75) \textit{ta=tiril kandru kana yawan, ulaya tu=ngalrad}

\textit{kandru kana tayban?}

that.OBL DF.OBL Tayban

‘In our records about the leaders, is there Tayban’s name?’

This sentence can be interpreted as locative or possessive. The third person pronoun \textit{tu=} may refer to \textit{ta=tiril} ‘our record’ or to \textit{tayban}.

10.4.5 A comparison of existential, possessive and locative clauses

Examples (76)–(81) exemplify existential, possessive and locative constructions, in both affirmative and negative forms. We see that the affirmative possessive sentence looks exactly the same as its locative counterpart.

(76) \textit{ulaya a paisu i papadraran}

exist ID.NOM money LOC table

‘There is money on the table.’ (Existential)

(77) \textit{unian dra paysu i papadraran}

not.exist ID.OBL money LOC table

‘There is no money on the table.’ (Existential)

(78) \textit{ulaya ku=paysu}

exist 1S.PSR=money

‘I have money.’ (Possessive)

(79) \textit{unian=ku dra paysu}

not.exist=1S.NOM ID.OBL money

‘I don’t have money.’ (Possessive)

(80) \textit{ulaya ku=paysu (i papadraran)}

exist 1S.PSR=money LOC table

‘My money is there (on the table).’ (Locative)

(81) \textit{unian ku=paysu (i papadraran)}

not.exist 1S.PSR=money LOC table

‘My money is not there (on the table).’ (Locative)

A summary of the case and definiteness of the theme in the three constructions is given in Table 10.1.
Table 10.1: The case and definiteness of the theme

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Existential</th>
<th>Locative</th>
<th>Possessive</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>affirmative</td>
<td>negative</td>
<td>affirmative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>case</td>
<td>NOM</td>
<td>OBL</td>
<td>NOM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>definiteness</td>
<td>ID</td>
<td>ID</td>
<td>DF</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 10.4.6 Two more possessive/existential/locative predicates

#### 10.4.6.1 kadru ‘there’

The spatial deictic (§4.5.3.3) kadru ‘there’ has a similar function to ‘there’ in the English existential construction. In (82) kadru is used as a demonstrative.

(82) m-alrak=ta kadru dra ki-a-beray-an dra bini’

ITR-take=1P.NOM there ID.OBL PASS-a-lend-NMZ ID.OBL seed

‘We took there the seeds that we asked for.’

In (83) kadru appears twice. The first kadru is a verb, meaning ‘live’ or ‘be there’. The second kadru is a locative.

(83) kadru=mi=la kadru

there=1P.NOM=PERF there

‘We then stayed/lived there.’

A similar usage is seen in (84).

(84) kadru=ku i saninin i,...

there=1S.NOM LOC neighbouring TOP

‘I was next to it, …’

Zeitoun et al. (1999:21), following Tan (1997), say that kadru only occurs in a locative construction. This claim is contradicted by the following sentences. In (85) kadru introduces new information to the discourse, and in (86) it asserts the occurrence of a saying.

(85) kadru a miadrua a malru-wadi

there ID.NOM two ID.NOM RECIP-younger.sibling

‘There were two brothers.’

(86) kadru=la a ngai “t<em>engedr=ta dra k<em>adrini

there=PERF ID.OBL word <ITR>kill=1P.NOM ID.OBL <ITR>here

na unan i, ma-legi m-u-drekal”

DF.NOM snake TOP ITR-taboo ITR-go-village

‘There is a saying, “We killed the snake, so it is a taboo for us to enter the village”.’

Like ulaya/unian, when kadru asserts the existence of a theme, the theme is indefinite; when it indicates the location of a theme, the theme is marked definite.
Clause types

(87) *adru i, kadru=la na palrakuan na ne-nem-a?*
*then TOP there=PERF DF.NOM men’s-house DF.NOM RED-six-NPRS*
‘At that time, were the six men’s houses already there?’

(88) *kadru=la a ma’idrang me-na’u dra maka-tralru-tralrun*
*there=PERF ID.NOM old ITR-see ID.OBL along-RED-grass*
‘There’s an old man who saw their wandering around.’

However, *kadru* seldom expresses possessive meaning, and it may only express abstract and inanimate possession. Only a few examples are found in the corpus.

(89) *an kadru naniam ka-kualreng-an*
*if there DF.NOM/1P.PSR ka-sick-NMZ*
‘If we have difficulties.’ (If our difficulties are there.)

When *kadru* has a possessive meaning, the sentence structure is similar to the locative construction introduced by *ulaya/unian*, in which the theme is definite, and the possessive meaning is an extension of the locative.

The corpus contains a single example in which *kemadrini* ‘here’ expresses a possessive meaning. In this example the theme is marked as indefinite oblique. More examples are needed to clarify the status of *kemadrini* as an existential predicate.

(90) *k<em>adrini</em>=mi=driya dra ka-kualreng-an*
*<ITR>here=1P.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL ka-sick-NMZ*
‘We still have difficulties.’

10.4.6.2 *mi*– ‘have’

There is a class of construction in which the verb is formed by prefixing *mi*- to the nominal stem to mean ‘have N’. Unlike *kadru*, which is used in existential/locative/possessive constructions, *mi*- verbs carry possessive/existential but not locative meaning.

For example:

(91) *mi-walak dra mia-pat dra walak*
*have-child ID.OBL PRS-four ID.OBL child*
‘She had four children.’

(92) *an mi-asuwa=ku ...
when have-child.in.law=1S.NOM*
‘When I have a son/daughter-in-law …’

(93) *maumau tu=ruma’ a mi-a-puran*
*only 3.PSR=house ID.NOM have-a-betelnut*
‘Only in her house, there are betelnut trees.’

Unlike *ulaya/unian* and *kadru*, verbs with *mi*- can have a voice alternation, as shown in (94) and (95). In transitive clauses *mi*- is changed to *pi*- . However, when it occurs in a transitive sentence, a *mi*- verb does not carry possessive meaning.

(94) *adri mi-kataguin i, ...
NEG have-spouse TOP*
‘She didn’t have a spouse, …’
Chapter 10

(95)  \textit{tu=pi-kataguin-ay} \textit{kan lregelrege}

\begin{tabular}{l}
3.Gen=have-spouse-TR2 & SG.OBL Lregelrege
\end{tabular}

‘He was married to Lregelrege.’

Verbs prefixed with $\textit{mi}$- to express ‘have N’ may be infixed with $<a>$ (§6.4.1 and §6.5.6) to indicate ‘many, plentifulness’.

(96)  $\textit{mi-a-ruma}=\textit{ku}$

\begin{tabular}{l}
have-a-house=1.S.NOM
\end{tabular}

‘I have lots of houses.’

When a possessive $\textit{mi-a}$- construction is negated, it is the meaning of ‘many’ that is negated, not the possessum.

(97)  \textit{adri mi-a-kuraw idri na kali}

\begin{tabular}{l}
NEG have-a-fish this.NOM DF.NOM brook
\end{tabular}

‘There are not many fish in the brook.’

In addition to the usages discussed above, $\textit{mi}$- verbs can denote instruments. This example contains a serial verb construction.

(98)  $\textit{mi-idrus}=\textit{ku m-ekan}$

\begin{tabular}{l}
have-spoon=1.S.NOM ITR-eat
\end{tabular}

‘I eat with a spoon.’

Other meanings carried by $\textit{mi}$- verbs include: ‘wearing’, ‘growing (body parts)’, ‘keeping (a pet)’, and ‘having a kinship relation’. Some examples are given below.

\begin{itemize}
  \item $\textit{mi-kiping}$ ‘to wear clothes’
  \item $\textit{mi-kabung}$ ‘to wear a hat’
  \item $\textit{mi-seki}$ ‘to grow nails’
  \item $\textit{mi-su'ang}$ ‘to grow horns’
  \item $\textit{mi-suan}$ ‘to keep a dog’
  \item $\textit{mi-walak}$ ‘to have a child, to bear a child’
  \item $\textit{mi-kataguin}$ ‘to have a spouse, to be married’
\end{itemize}
11 Negative constructions

11.1 Introduction

This chapter deals with negative constructions. Payne (1997:282) distinguishes three types of negation: lexical, morphological, and analytic. In lexical negation the concept of negation is part of the lexical semantics of a particular verb. In morphological negation a morpheme is attached to verbs to express clausal negation. Finally, analytic negation may be marked by a negative particle, or a finite negative verb. In Puyuma, no morphological negation is found. Instead, various forms of analytic and lexical negation occur.

Miestamo (2003) distinguishes two types of relationship between negative and non-negative clauses. He calls them symmetric and asymmetric, according to whether there is a structural difference between the negative and its non-negative counterpart. In symmetric negation, negatives do not differ structurally from affirmatives except for the presence of the negator, and the correspondences between the members of affirmative and negative paradigms are one-to-one. In asymmetric negation, there are structural differences between affirmatives and negatives in addition to the presence of the negator, and the correspondences between the members of affirmative and negative paradigms are not one-to-one; very often grammatical distinctions in asymmetric paradigms are neutralised. In Puyuma, constructions with the negators *adri* and *unian* are asymmetric, as shown in (1) and (3). The structural differences are in clitic order, verb form, case marking and definiteness of the theme.

The four negators discussed in this chapter are exemplified below.

(1) a. *inaba*  
   good  
   ‘It’s good.’

b. *adri inaba*  
   NEG  
   good  
   ‘It’s not good.’

c. *trekelr*  
   drink  
   ‘Drink!’
d. *adri* tra-trekelr
   NEG RED-drink
   ‘Don’t drink!’

(2) a. *a* trau *a* inaba
   ID.NOM person ID.NOM good
   ‘He is a good person.’

   b. *ameli* a trau *a* inaba
   NEG ID.NOM person ID.NOM good
   ‘He is not a good person.’

(3) a. *ulaya* a akan-an
   exist ID.NOM eat-NMZ
   ‘There’s food.’

   b. *unian* dra akan-an
   not.exist ID.OBL eat-NMZ
   ‘There’s no food.’

(4) a. *ma-ladram=mi* dratu ngalrad kandru kana suan
   ITR-know=1P.NOM ID.OBL/3.PSR name that.OBL DF.OBL dog
   ‘We knew that dog’s name.’

   b. *ma-ulrid=mi* dratu ngalrad
   ITR-don’t.know=1P.NOM ID.OBL/3.PSR name
   ‘We didn’t know its name.’

As can be observed from the above sentences, of the four negators discussed in this chapter, *adri* and *ameli* are instances of analytic negation, whereas *unian* and *maulrid*, which are the negative counterparts of *ulaya* ‘exist’ and *maladram* ‘know’, are examples of lexical negation.

In Chapter 10, three clause types are distinguished (verbal clauses, nominal clauses, and existential/possessive/locative clauses). The above sentences show that different negators are used in different clause types: *adri* is used in verbal clauses; *unian* is used to introduce a negative existential/possessive/locative sentence; and in sentences with a nominal predicate, *ameli* is used. Because negative constructions with *ameli* and *unian* are also discussed in §10.3 and §10.4, in this chapter the focus will be on the constructions introduced by *adri*.

In the following sections, §11.2 deals with the negator *adri* in verbal clauses, and §11.3 treats the negator *ameli* in nominal clauses. The use of the lexical negators *unian* and *maulrid* is described in §11.4 and §11.5 respectively.

### 11.2 Negative verbal clauses

Negative verbal clauses differ from their non-negative counterparts in two ways besides the presence or absence of a negator: in the order of pronominal clitics and in their verbal morphology.

While different orders of pronominal clitics are related to whether a given clause is transitive or intransitive (§11.2.1), the different sets of verbal affixes in negative clauses have to do with the indicative/non-indicative and realis/irrealis distinctions (§11.2.2).
11.2.1 Negation and transitivity

In §8.3 it was shown that while a transitive verb has a genitive proclitic and a nominative enclitic, an intransitive verb only has a nominative enclitic. This contrast can be represented as in (5a) and (5b).

(5)  a. VERB$^{TR}(=\text{PRO}$\text{NOM})

b. PRO$^{GEN}$=VERB$^{TR}(=\text{PRO}$\text{NOM})

In the negative intransitive construction, the negator adri precedes the verb, as shown in (6). If there is a nominative proclitic, it is attached to the negator, not the verb, as shown in (7).

(6)  a. ingdan dra suan
afraid ID.OBL dog
‘He is afraid of dogs.’

b. adri ingdan dra suan
NEG afraid ID.OBL dog
‘He is not afraid of dogs.’

(7)  a. ingdan=ku dra suan
afraid=1S.NOM ID.OBL dog
‘I am afraid of dogs.’

b. adri=ku ingdan dra suan
NEG=1S.NOM afraid ID.OBL dog
‘I am not afraid of dogs.’

In the negative transitive construction, however, the nominative enclitic does not attach to the negator adri but remains encliticised to the verb, as in (8b) and (9b).

(8)  a. tu=pa-ka-ladram-aw=ku
3.GEN=CAUS-ka-know-TR1=1S.NOM
‘She let me know.’

b. adri tu=pa-ka-ladram-i=ku
NEG 3.GEN=CAUS-ka-know-TR2=1S.NOM
‘She didn’t let me know.’

(9)  a. tu=beray-ay=ku dra paisu kan nanali
3.GEN=give-TR2=1S.NOM ID.OBL money SG.OBL my.mother
‘My mother gave me some money.’

b. adri tu=beray-i=ku dra paisu
NEG 3.GEN=give-TR2=1S.NOM ID.OBL money
‘She didn’t give me money.’

The negative verbal clauses can be summarised by the following templates:

(10)  a. adri (=\text{PRO}$\text{NOM}$) VERB$^{TR}$

---

1 There is no third person nominative enclitic pronoun.
11.2.2 Negation and mood

The negative verbal construction is also different from the affirmative construction in terms of verbal morphology.

In §6.3 it was shown that a basic distinction between indicative and non-indicative can be made, and within the indicative category, there is a realis/irrealis distinction. A summary of the morphology of verbs in affirmative clauses was given in Table 6.1 and is repeated (with the omission of the aspectual and hortative paradigms) in Table 11.1. Table 11.2, a list of verb forms in negative constructions, is given below for a comparison.

Table 11.1: Puyuma verbal morphology (affirmative clauses)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ITR</th>
<th>TR1</th>
<th>TR2</th>
<th>TR3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Indicative</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Realis (Neutral)</td>
<td>M-V</td>
<td>V-aw</td>
<td>V-ay</td>
<td>V-anay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrealis</td>
<td>Ca-V</td>
<td>Ca-V-i</td>
<td>Ca-V-an</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Non-indicative (Imperative)</td>
<td>V</td>
<td>V-u</td>
<td>V-i</td>
<td>V-an</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 11.2: Puyuma verbal morphology (negative clauses)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ITR</th>
<th>TR1</th>
<th>TR2</th>
<th>TR3</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Indicative</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Realis (Neutral)</td>
<td>M-V</td>
<td>-i</td>
<td></td>
<td>V-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrealis</td>
<td>Ca-V</td>
<td>Ca-V-i</td>
<td>Ca-V-an</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Non-indicative (Imperative)</td>
<td>Ca-V</td>
<td>Ca-V-i</td>
<td>Ca-V-an</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Comparing Table 11.1 with Table 11.2, we find that verb forms used in negative constructions are very different from those in affirmatives.

Realis constructions were exemplified in (6) to (9). In intransitive clauses the verb forms are the same in affirmative and negative sentences, as in (7a) and (7b). In transitive clauses, however, different transitive affixes are used. As shown in (8), the same verb *pakaladram* ‘let somebody know’ takes -aw in an affirmative clause but -i in a negative clause. In (9) *beray* ‘give’ takes the affix -ay in an affirmative clause, but -i in a negative sentence. Examples (8) and (9) also show that the morphological distinction between TR1 and TR2 collapses in the negative construction.

Examples of irrealis constructions are given in (11) and (12). Unlike the realis, irrealis verb forms do not change when negated.

(11) a. *pa-pulang=ku*
RED-help=1S.NOM
‘I will help.’

b. *adri=ku pa-pulang*
NEG=1S.NOM RED-help
‘I am not going to help.’
Examples (13) and (14) are imperative clauses. In negative clauses, verbs undergo \textit{Ca-reduplication}, as shown in (13b) and (14b). As in the realis construction, the distinction between TR1 and TR2 collapses in the negative construction.

(13) a. \begin{verbatim}
an tu=pa-trekelr=ay=mu dra enay i, trekelr
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
if 3.GEN=CAUS-drink-TR2=2P.NOM ID.OBL  water TOP drink
\end{verbatim}

‘If she makes you drink water, drink it.’

b. \textit{adri} \begin{verbatim}
tra-trekelr
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
NEG RED-drink
\end{verbatim}

‘Don’t drink.’

(14) a. \begin{verbatim}
pilang-u m-u-ruma’
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
bring-TR1 ITR-go-house
\end{verbatim}

‘Bring her home.’

b. \textit{adri} \begin{verbatim}
pa-pilang-i m-u-ruma’
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
NEG RED-bring-TR2 ITR-go-house
\end{verbatim}

‘Don’t bring her home.’

It was observed in §6.2 and §8.4.4 that TR1 is used when the nominative argument is more affected by the action. This explains why TR1 is missing from negative and irrealis sentences, since a nominative argument in negative or irrealis sentences is less affected than one in an affirmative realis sentence.

It is not clear if \textit{Ca-reduplication} in negative imperatives is obligatory, or whether it brings a change of meaning. Verbs in negative imperative sentences usually undergo \textit{Ca-reduplication}, as in (13) and (14) above. However, in some cases, such verbs are not prefixed by a reduplicated affix, as in (15) and (16).

(15) \textit{adri} \begin{verbatim}
bangabang-i=ku
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
NEG bother-TR2=1S.NOM
\end{verbatim}

‘Don’t bother me.’

(16) \textit{adri} \begin{verbatim}
p-u-k-issatr-an=ku
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
NEG CAUS-go-ka-up-TR3=1S.NOM
\end{verbatim}

‘Don’t lift me up.’

\subsection*{11.2.3 The lexical category of \textit{adri}}

This section addresses the lexical categorisation of the negator \textit{adri}. Is \textit{adri} a noun, a verb, or an adverb? I will show that \textit{adri} does not fit into any of the these categories.

The negator \textit{adri} cannot be a noun, because a noun must be preceded by a noun phrase marker or a pronominal element to indicate its case role. It is never preceded by such an element.
On the other hand, *adri* is not a verb either, as is shown by the following two pieces of evidence. First, unlike verbs, *adri* does not change its form for different aspects or moods. In a negative clause realis or irrealis mood is manifested by the main verb. For instance, in (17), the form of the negator does not change, but the partial reduplication on the verb in (17a) indicates irrealis mood, and the intransitive marker on the verb in (17b) indicates realis mood.

(17) a. *adri ra-rengay dra sadru*
   NEG RED-say ID.OBL many
   ‘He won’t say too much.’

b. *adri ma-rengay*
   NEG ITR-say
   ‘He didn’t say.’

Second, if *adri* were a verb, then the combination of *adri* and the following verb would be a serial verb construction, and we would expect the verb following to be manifested in intransitive form (cf. §13.2). However, this is not the case, as shown in (15) and (16).

In §4.5.5 a small adverbial category is proposed, whose members differ somewhat from each other in their behaviour. Like *adri*, these adverbial elements have a constant form (they do not take affixes). They are grouped together in an adverbial category because their function is to modify the predicate or the whole clause. Functionally, *adri* would fit into this category quite well. However, *adri* can host pronominal clitics (§11.2.1) and aspectual clitics, such as =*la* ‘perfective’, =*dar* ‘frequentative’ and =*driya* ‘imperfective’, whereas none of the adverbs discussed in §4.5.5 attracts clitics.

(18) *tu=k<in>a-rareger-an i, adri=la makeser mare-beliyas*
   3.PSR=<PERF>-frighten-NMZ TOP NEG=PERF strong RECIP-turn
   *m-uka i uma’*
   ITR-go LOC farm
   ‘Because of her being frightened, she didn’t have the strength to return to the farm.’

(19) *adri=driya t<em>alam me-ranak dra trau*
   NEG=IMPF <ITR>try ITR-attack ID.OBL person
   ‘It has never tried to attack people.’

The evidence indicates that *adri* is neither a noun, a verb, nor an adverb. It forms a morpheme category of its own.

### 11.3 Negative nominal clauses

Let us now turn to the negation of nominal clauses. In §10.3 two types of nominal clauses were distinguished according to whether the predicate NP is definite or indefinite. Although the two subtypes of nominal clause utilise the same negator, they nevertheless display two different negative construction types. (20b) is a negative classifying clause, while (21b) is a negative identifying clause.
Negative constructions

(20) a. \( a \) tipul=ku
   ID.NOM Tipul=1S.NOM
   ‘I am a Tipul.’

 b. ameli=ku a tipul
   NEG=1S.NOM ID.NOM Tipul
   ‘I am not a Tipul.’

(21) a. amau ta=ngai tu=ni-ladra-ladram-an
   COP 1P.PSR=language 3.PSR=PERF-RED-know-NMZ
   ‘What they’ve learned is our language.’

 b. ameli tu=ni-ladra-ladram-an ta=ngai
   NEG 3.PSR=PERF-RED-know-NMZ 1P.PSR=language
   ‘Our language is not what they’ve learned.’

In a classifying clause, where the predicate NP is indefinite, the negator ameli is added to the beginning of the sentence to negate the association between the two nominals, as in (20b). In an identifying clause, which has a definite predicate NP, ameli replaces the copula amau in the corresponding negative construction, as in (21b).

In the case of identifying clauses there are no structural differences between affirmative and negative except for the replacement of the negative copula verb amau by ameli, as shown in (21a) and (21b). Thus this is symmetric negation in Miestamo’s (2003) terms. On the other hand, in classifying clauses, negation is asymmetric. The clitic moves from the position after the predicate (20a) to the position after the negator ameli (20b).

Like adri, ameli can attract a nominative clitic. In such cases, the order of predicate and subject is rearranged, as shown in (20) and (22).

(22) a. \( a \) payran=ta
   ID.NOM Taiwanese=1P.NOM
   ‘We are Taiwanese.’

 b. ameli=ta a payran
   NEG=1P.NOM ID.NOM Taiwanese
   ‘We are not Taiwanese.’

Furthermore, ameli can also be used as a negative response to a yes/no question. Usually, there is a pause after ameli. For instance:

(23) Q: \( mi\text{-}walak kandri tangaw? \)
   have-child this.OBL Tangaw
   ‘She had a baby with Tangaw?’

A: aiwa, adri=ta=driyan mulralriaban
   yes NEG=1P.NOM=IMPF sea.worship
   ‘Yes, because we haven’t done sea-worship.’

\(^2\) For a positive response, aiwa is used. For example:

Q: \( an \) adri=ta=driya p-u-patraran dra bekalr-an i,
   when NEG=1P.NOM=IMPF CAUS-go-outside ID.OBL new-NMZ TOP
   adri=ta m-u-ami k<em>a?\)
   NEG=1P.NOM ITR-go-north <ITR>say
   ‘If we haven’t taken our new rice, we can’t go north?’

A: aiwa, adri=ta=driyan mulralriaban
   yes NEG=1P.NOM=IMPF sea.worship
   ‘Yes, because we haven’t done sea-worship.’
A: *ameli, mi-walak kan tangawlranges*
   NEG have-child DF.OBL Tangawlranges
   ‘No, she had a baby with Tangawlranges.’

However, sometimes informants use *adri*, and according to them both are acceptable if the question has a verbal predicate. If the question is manifested as a nominal clause, then only *ameli* is acceptable in the response.

Unlike *adri*, which does not encode mood, *ameli* may be prefixed with *ka-* to indicate irrealis.

(24) *ka-ameli a trau a inaba*
   *ka*-NEG ID.NOM person ID.NOM good
   ‘He won’t be a good person.’

### 11.4 Negative existential/possessive/locative

The existential/possessive/locative construction that begins with *ulaya* ‘exist’ is described in §10.4. The negative construction introduced by *unian* is lexical negation, because the negation is part of the lexical meaning of the verb *unian* ‘not exist’. I argued in §10.4.1 that *ulaya* and *unian* are verbs, and I have also shown how we can distinguish among three constructions on the basis of asymmetries in case marking and the definiteness of the theme. These asymmetries were summarised in Table 10.1, repeated here as Table 11.3. The asymmetries are marked in grey.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Existential</th>
<th>Possessive</th>
<th>Locative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ID</td>
<td></td>
<td>OBL</td>
<td>Aff.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>ID</td>
<td>Def.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Definiteness</td>
<td>NOM</td>
<td>DF</td>
<td>NOM</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ID</td>
<td>DF</td>
<td>NOM</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Here I only present examples. (25a-b) are existential constructions; (26a-b) are possessive constructions; (27a-b) are locative constructions. The reader is referred to Chapter 10 for more detailed description.

(25) a. *ulaya a drekal*  
       exist ID.NOM village  
       ‘There was a village.’

b. *unian dra akan-an*  
   not.exist ID.OBL eat-NMZ  
   ‘There was no food.’

(26) a. *ulaya nantu pauayan*  
   exist DF.NOM/3.PSR regulation  
   ‘It has its regulations.’
b. \textit{unian}=\textit{ta} \quad \textit{dra} \quad \textit{lawlaw}  \\
not.\text{exist}=\text{1P.NOM} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{lamp}  \\
‘We didn’t have lamps.’

(27) a. \textit{ulaya} \quad \textit{i} \quad \textit{temuu} \quad \textit{i} \quad \textit{puyuma}  \\
exist \quad \text{SG.NOM} \quad \text{your.grandparent} \quad \text{LOC} \quad \text{Puyuma}  \\
‘Your grandmother is in Puyuma.’

b. \textit{unian}=\textit{ku} \quad \textit{i} \quad \textit{kiadedrengan}  \\
without.\text{tot.exist}=\text{1S.NOM} \quad \text{LOC} \quad \text{bed}  \\
‘I wasn’t in bed.’

11.5 The negative item \textit{maulrid}

The last negative item discussed in this chapter is \textit{maulrid} ‘not know’. Like \textit{unian} ‘not exist’, \textit{maulrid} is a lexical item which incorporates negation into its meaning. In an affirmative clause, \textit{maladram} ‘know; understand’ is used. For instance:

(28) \textit{daw} \quad \textit{ma-ladram}=\textit{ku} \quad \textit{dra} \quad \textit{kemay} \quad \textit{isuwa}  \\
\text{why} \quad \text{ITR-know}=\text{1S.NOM} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{from} \quad \text{where}  \\
‘How did I know where it was from?’

(29) \textit{ma-ulrid}=\textit{ku} \quad \textit{dra} \quad \textit{amuna} \quad \textit{i<suwa>suwa} \quad \textit{na}  \\
\text{ITR-don’t.know}=\text{1S.NOM} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \quad \text{but} \quad \text{<RED>where} \quad \text{DF.NOM} \quad \text{kinguayan} \quad \text{before}  \\
‘I didn’t know which was first.’

(30) \textit{ma-ulrid}=\textit{ta} \quad \textit{d<em>away}  \\
\text{ITR-don’t.know}=\text{1P.NOM} \quad \text{<ITR>produce}  \\
‘We didn’t know how to build (a boys’ house).’

The word \textit{maulrid} has imperative/irrealis forms \textit{ka-ulrid}/\textit{ka-a-ulrid}. Like \textit{maladram} ‘know’, \textit{maulrid} can have a sentence-like complement (as in (29)) or form an SVC with the verb following it (as in (30)). Thus, \textit{maulrid} is clearly a verb. Serial verb constructions and complementation are described respectively in Chapters 13 and 14.

Compared with the other negative items, the distribution of \textit{maulrid} is rather restricted. Indeed, the same meaning can be expressed by the negator \textit{adri} and \textit{maladram} ‘know’, as (31) and (32) show.

(31) \textit{adri}=\textit{mi} \quad \textit{ma-ladram} \quad \textit{dratu} \quad \textit{ngalrad}  \\
\text{NEG}=\text{1P.NOM} \quad \text{ITR-know} \quad \text{ID.OBL/3.PSR} \quad \text{name}  \\
‘We didn’t know its name.’

(32) \textit{ma-ulrid}=\textit{mi} \quad \textit{dratu} \quad \textit{ngalrad}  \\
\text{ITR-don’t.know}=\text{1P.NOM} \quad \text{ID.OBL/3.PSR} \quad \text{name}  \\
‘We didn’t know its name.’
11.6 Summary

Table 11.4 is a summary of the main grammatical characteristics of the negative items discussed in this chapter.

Table 11.4: Grammatical characteristics of negative items

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word class</th>
<th>Host of clitics</th>
<th>Lexical or analytic</th>
<th>Symmetric or asymmetric</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>adri</em></td>
<td>realis particle (§11.2.3)</td>
<td>only nominative actor clitics and aspectual clitics</td>
<td>analytic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>irrealis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>imperative</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ameli</em></td>
<td>classifying verb (§10.3.3)</td>
<td>yes</td>
<td>lexical</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>identifying</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>unian</em></td>
<td>existential verb (§10.4.1)</td>
<td>yes</td>
<td>lexical</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>possessive</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>locative</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>maulrid</em></td>
<td>verb (§11.5)</td>
<td>yes</td>
<td>lexical</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
12 Non-declarative clause types

12.1 Introduction

Speakers use sentences to perform speech acts. They use them to make an assertion or a request, to give a command or an instruction. Searle (1977) points out that ‘languages typically have different morphosyntactic devices that express what kind of speech act is being performed’. Sadock and Zwicky (1985:115) write that ‘for some of these uses of sentences a language will have specific syntactic constructions, or even specific forms, reserved for just these uses’.

One clarification is necessary. There is quite often a ‘mismatch’ between sentence type and the speech act that is performed. Speakers can and often do use a sentence type for other than its prototypical function. For instance, in both English and Chinese, interrogatives are often used in order to get something done, not to ask for information. The addressee is expected to make a pragmatic inference about the speaker’s intention. Such mismatches are largely beyond the scope of the discussion here. It is the typical uses of a given sentence type that I am discussing in this chapter.

The most frequent sentence types reflecting the grammaticalisation of speech acts are declaratives, imperatives, and interrogatives. Of the three, the declarative is often regarded as the unmarked sentence type, for example Payne (1997:294) claims that, ‘if there are special markings for speech act types, declarative is usually expressed via a zero marker’.

Imperative and interrogative constructions are discussed together in this chapter because they can be grouped together as non-declarative speech acts. In the following sections, I will discuss the general morphosyntactic characteristics of imperative constructions and interrogative constructions respectively.¹ Some minor sentence types will be discussed at the end of this chapter.

12.2 Imperative constructions

12.2.1 General characteristics

In an imperative clause, the addressee is commanded by the speaker to perform an action or is prohibited from performing it. The clause indicates the speaker’s desire to influence future events. It is used principally to give orders or instructions, and also to make requests

¹ Verbal morphology of imperative constructions is also briefly mentioned in §11.2.2.
or to give suggestions. In an imperative construction, the addressee is not overtly manifested, whether in intransitive or transitive clauses, as shown in (1) and (2).

(1) \textit{an} \ tu=\textit{pa-trekelr-ay}=\textit{mu} \ draku \ la'ub

\begin{verbatim}
when 3.GEN=CAUS-drink-TR2=2P.NOM ID.OBL/1S.PSR ladle
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
i, \ trekelr=la
TOP drink=PERF
\end{verbatim}

‘If she makes you drink with my ladle, then drink.’

(2) \textit{aw} \ i \ sabak \ kana \ pa-trungtrung-an \ i, \ \textit{puka-i}

\begin{verbatim}
and LOC inside DF.OBL CAUS-sound-NMZ TOP put-TR2:IMP
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
dra \ tidrul \ dra \ samaya, \ aw \ \textit{pa-treketr-i=la}
ID.OBL wasp ID.OBL some and CAUS-stick-TR2:IMP=PERF
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
dra \ kadepu
ID.OBL paper
\end{verbatim}

‘And inside the drum, put some wasps, and seal it with paper.’

An imperative verb is typically not inflected for most of the grammatical categories associated with verbs, especially tense and person. Over half of the languages examined by Sadock and Zwicky (1985) have an imperative verb with fewer affixes than non-imperatives. Sadock and Zwicky (1985:173) suggest that imperatives are ‘notionally future, so tense contrasts are unlikely, and the subject naturally refers to the addressee, so second person inflection of the verb becomes redundant’. They also find that languages that inflect for mood either have no mood inflection in the imperative, or, more often, a special sign for the imperative. In Puyuma, however, the manifestation of person and the verbal affixation of an imperative verb differ from Sadock and Zwicky’s observations concerning the majority of the languages they discuss.

First, Sadock and Zwicky (1985:171–172) claim that all ergative languages they have studied follow a pattern whereby it is the absolutive argument that is the addressee of an imperative, whether the verb is transitive or intransitive. They give examples from Dyirbal and Eskimo, which are reputed to be among the most ergative languages in the world, and they conclude that the addressee of an imperative must be the absolutive argument (the subject). However, this is not the case in Puyuma. In a transitive clause like (3) or (4), the nominative case is reserved for the undergoer argument, not for the addressee.

(3) \textit{pilang-u} \ \textit{i} \ \textit{temuu} \ \textit{m-uka} \ \textit{i} \ \textit{drena-drenan}

\begin{verbatim}
take-TR1:IMP SG.NOM your.grandmother ITR-go LOC RED-mountain
\end{verbatim}

‘Take your grandmother to the mountains.’

(4) \textit{adri} \ ka-pa-paru-i=\textit{ku}

\begin{verbatim}
NEG ka-RED-forget-TR2:IMP=1S.NOM
\end{verbatim}

‘Don’t forget about me.’

In an intransitive imperative, of course, the addressee is the omitted potential nominative argument, as in (1) and (5).

(5) \textit{adri} \ a-uka

\begin{verbatim}
NEG RED-go
\end{verbatim}

‘Don’t go.’
Second, unlike most of the languages that Sadock and Zwicky studied, the number of affixes in Puyuma is not always reduced in the imperative. As indicated in Table 12.1 and Table 12.2, only in intransitive affirmative imperatives is the verb inflected with fewer affixes. In transitive affirmative constructions the declarative transitive subject-choice suffix is replaced by an imperative subject-choice suffix. Thus the number of affixes remains the same. In negative constructions (§11.2.2) imperative verbs have Ca- reduplication, which in negative declarative sentences occurs only in the irrealis. Thus negative imperative verbs, which have Ca- reduplication and transitive affixes, have more affixes than negative declarative verbs, which only take transitive affixes. Puyuma goes against the tendency observed by Sadock and Zwicky for mood not to be indicated on imperative verbs.

### Table 12.1: Affirmative declarative vs affirmative imperative

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Intransitive</th>
<th>Affirmative declarative</th>
<th>Affirmative imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>d&lt;em&gt;irus</td>
<td>dirus</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transitive 1</td>
<td>dirus-aw</td>
<td>dirus-u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transitive 2</td>
<td>dirus-ay</td>
<td>dirus-i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transitive 3</td>
<td>dirus-anay</td>
<td>dirus-an</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Table 12.2: Negative declarative vs negative imperative

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Intransitive</th>
<th>Negative declarative</th>
<th>Negative imperative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>d&lt;em&gt;irus</td>
<td>da-dirus</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transitive 1</td>
<td>dirus-i</td>
<td>da-dirus-i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transitive 2</td>
<td>dirus-i</td>
<td>da-dirus-i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transitive 3</td>
<td>dirus-an</td>
<td>da-dirus-an</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 12.2.2 Requests, commands and instructions: imperatives and politeness

Two things need to be mentioned about the use of imperative sentences. First, in the texts collected, affirmative imperative clauses are usually used when the speaker is in a higher social position than the addressee, but for negative imperatives, no such restriction exists. In (6) and (7), which are affirmative, the speakers are the addressee’s grandmother and mother respectively; but in the negative example (8), the addressee is the leader of the village, and even though the speaker is of lower rank, the negative imperative is acceptable.

(6) *aw i sabak kana pa-trungtrung-an i, puka-i dra and LOC inside DF.OBL CAUS-sound-NMZ TOP put-TR2:IMP ID.OBL tidrul dra samaya, aw pa-treke-tr-i=la dra kadepu’ wasp ID.OBL some and CAUS-stick-TR2:IMP=PERF ID.OBL paper ‘And inside the drum, put some wasps, and seal it with papers.’

(7) *ua u<tra>trangi go <RED>play ‘Go visit her!’
adri ka-dra-dreki-i=ku  
NEG ka-RED-scold-TR2:IMP=1S.NOM  
‘Don’t scold me.’

However, it seems that in prayers this generalisation does not hold. Speakers often use imperatives when they give their petitions. Nevertheless, in these cases, there is usually an imperfective clitic =driya, as in (9) or the addressee is topicalised and marked by an addressing clitic marker =a, as in (10).

beray-i=driya dranu ni-ranger-an idru  
give-TR2=IMPF ID.OBL/2S.PSR PERF-thought-NMZ that.NOM  
na kur-dikes kandri kana ki-a-karun-an  
DF.NOM kur-hold this.OBL DF.OBL get-a-work-NMZ  
‘Give your thoughts to that person who is responsible for this business.’

ama=a, beray-i=mi dra ma-ruwa-a=mi  
father=VCT give-TR2:IMP=1P.NOM COMP ITR-can-PJ=1P.ECL.NOM  
atrebung dra lalak dra ka-ruwa kurenang kaniam  
find ID.OBL child ID.OBL ka-can follow 1P.OBL  
‘Father, give us (ability) to find a child who can go with us.’

When addressing a person of higher social rank, the speaker often uses a declarative sentence instead to make a request. For instance, in (11), the speaker is asking a senior to explain where a leader usually sleeps in a young men’s meeting house; in (12), the speaker is asking a senior to build a traditional building.

ba-bati=yu=driya dra ulaya isuwa tu=kiaedreng-an  
RED-tell=2S.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL exist where 3.PSR=sleep-NMZ  
‘You tell (us) where his sleeping place is.’

pa-ra-ragan=yu dra manay=driya dra belretrenganan  
CAUS-Ca-up=2S.NOM ID.OBL what=IMPF ID.OBL ancient  
‘You build something traditional.’

Unlike clauses which are formally imperative, where the addressee is omitted, in the declarative sentences in (11) and (12) the addressee, who is the potential actor, is overtly expressed. Also, the imperfective marker =driya ‘yet’ adds a more polite flavour to these sentences.

Another more indirect or polite way of giving instructions is to use declarative clauses with the first person inclusive pronoun ta= or =ta. For example, in a story, when the grandmother is teaching her grandson how to answer an invader’s questions, a first person inclusive pronoun is used, as in (13).

i temutaw=la i, “idru na kawi i,  
SG.NOM grandmother=PERF TOP that.NOM DF.NOM wood TOP

---

2 Christian speakers of Western languages also conventionally address God with familiar forms.
3 Sadock and Zwicky (1985:170) point out that ‘it is not logically necessary that an imperative sentence type be available in a language. The effect of an imperative sentence could be obtained by declarative sentences meaning ‘I want you to …’ or ‘you should/must …’, or by interrogative sentences’.
Similarly, in a text where the speaker is giving instructions about how to make a traditional dish, the first person inclusive pronoun is used through the whole text. An excerpt is shown in (14).

\[(14)\]
\[\begin{align*}
\text{na driketran } i, & \quad \text{ta}=\text{ilrang-aw dra enay, aw} \\
\text{DF.NOM sticky.rice TOP 1P.ICL.GEN=grind-TR1 ID.OBL water and} & \\
\text{ta}=\text{lrubuk-aw dra lrubuk, aw } & \quad \text{ta}=\text{tra-tre’el-aw} \\
\text{1P.ICL.GEN=sack-TR1 ID.OBL sack and 1P.ICL.GEN=RED-press-TR1} & \\
\text{dra barasa } i, & \quad \text{mu-teres } tu=enay \\
\text{ID.OBL stone TOP ACAUS-filter 3.PSR=water} & \\
\end{align*}\]

‘The sticky rice, we grind it with water, and we pack it in a sack, and we press it with a stone, and then the water is filtered out.’

In some contexts where we might expect imperative sentences to be used, such as in teaching the younger generation how to help their elders in (15), the speakers use the declarative construction with the actor ta=.

\[(15)\]
\[\begin{align*}
\text{ane kir-trebung=ta } dra & \quad \text{ma-’idrang-an dra} \\
\text{when get-encounter-1P.ICL.NOM ID.OBL ITR-old-NMZ ID.OBL} & \\
\text{ma-sangal dra basak } i, & \quad \text{ta}=\text{araw-ay,} \\
\text{ITR-carry ID.OBL bag TOP 1P.ICL.GEN=grab-TR2} & \\
\text{ta}=\text{pulang-ay} & \\
\text{1P.ICL.GEN=help-TR2} & \\
\end{align*}\]

‘When we encounter any elders who carry bags, we take (the bags) from them and help them.’

In these examples, although the speaker uses the inclusive pronoun =ta/ta= ‘we’ to indicate that the actors include both the speaker and the addressees, the speaker does not intend to carry out the action with the addressees; the potential actors are the addressees alone. This ta= construction is not restricted to use by a speaker of a lower social rank. On the contrary, in all the examples I have, these declarative constructions with the inclusive pronoun =ta/ta= occur when the speaker is of higher rank than the addressee.

To sum up: true affirmative imperative sentences are used when the speaker is of a higher rank than the addressee, and two declarative clause types are often used to get the addressee to act when politeness is a consideration. No such a restriction occurs regarding negative imperatives.
12.2.3 A subtype of command: the prohibitive

The negative imperative, or prohibitive, is discussed separately because it is quite different morphosyntactically and pragmatically from an affirmative imperative. Morphosyntactically, as mentioned in §11.2.2, verbs in prohibitive sentences usually undergo Ca-reduplication to indicate irrealis mood, and the undergoer voice forms of such verbs are somewhat different from those in basic imperatives.

(16)  
{
  trekelr \\
  drink \\
  ‘Drink!’
}

(17)  
{
  adri tra-trekkelr \\
  NEG RED-drink \\
  ‘Don’t drink!’
}

(18)  
{
  pilang-u m-u-ruma’ \\
  bring-TR1:IMP ITR-go-house \\
  ‘Bring her home!’
}

(19)  
{
  adri pa-pilang-i m-u-ruma’ \\
  NEG RED-bring-TR2:IMP ITR-go-house \\
  ‘Don’t bring her home.’
}

Unlike an affirmative imperative, the use of which is restricted due to politeness considerations, a prohibitive sentence does not have a politeness restriction.

12.3 Interrogative constructions

An interrogative construction is a grammatical form that is prototypically used to ask a question. Three types of question are distinguished in Puyuma: yes/no questions, alternative questions, and information or question-word questions. Their common feature is that they all have a rising-falling pattern of intonation, which makes them distinct from declarative sentences.

12.3.1 Yes/no questions

12.3.1.1 Types of yes/no speech acts

Yes/no questions are used to seek a response about the truth of the questioned proposition. For example:

(20)  
{
  Q: nu=ruma’ i, adalep i takesi-an? \\
  2S.PSR=house TOP close.to LOC study-NMZ \\
  ‘Is your house close to the school?’
}

A:  
{
  aiwa, adalep i takesi-an \\
  yes, close.to LOC study-NMZ \\
  ‘Yes, it is close to the school.’
}

Carletta et al. (1995) classify yes/no questions into three different types of speech act: ‘align’, ‘check’ and ‘query-yes/no’. 

An align ‘checks the attention or agreement of the listener, or his/her readiness for the next move’, as in English Right? or Okay? Can you do that? No align examples are found in my corpus, probably because little of it is conversational.

A check ‘requests the listener to confirm information the speaker has some reason to believe, but is not entirely sure about’, as in English You do have a graveyard, don’t you? or You don’t have a graveyard, do you? This is Moravcsik’s (1971) ‘biased question’, which a speaker uses to express his/her belief that a particular answer is likely to be correct and to request assurance from the addressee.

A yes/no query is any other question that requests an answer of ‘yes’ or ‘no’, as in English Do you have a fenced meadow? or Are we going to go below the picket fence? I call this type ‘neutral yes/no questions’ to distinguish them from biased yes/no questions.

12.3.1.2 Neutral yes/no questions

A neutral yes/no question is a question that expects an answer ‘yes’ or ‘no’. It is the most productive type of yes/no question.

In Puyuma, declarative sentences end with a falling contour, and the stress of the final word falls on the last syllable. The major difference between a neutral yes-no question and a declarative sentence is that in a neutral yes-no question the stress of the final word is shifted from the last syllable to the penultimate. This also brings a change of pitch pattern; there is a rise before the fall, as indicated in the following examples.

(21) kadru=yu i ruma’ ma-lrinay?
    live=2S.NOM LOC house ITR-play
    ‘Did you play at home?’

(22) aiwa, kadru=ku i ruma’ ma-lrinay
    yes live=2S.NOM LOC house ITR-play
    ‘Yes, I played at home.’

As can be observed from the above sentences, the structure of a neutral yes/no question is the same as that of a declarative one. The only difference between them is the pitch/stress pattern.

12.3.1.3 Biased yes/no questions

A biased yes/no question is signified by adding the copula verb amau (§ 10.3.3) to the end of the sentence as a question tag. I infer that the function of amau is to express the speaker’s

4 Typologically, a neutral yes-no question is often characterised by a special intonation pattern which is different from the intonation pattern of declarative sentences. Sadock and Zwicky write (1985:181), ‘the most striking property of yes/no questions is their characteristic rising final intonation contour’. They also indicate that in some languages, the rising final intonation is ‘the only feature that distinguishes yes/no questions from declarative sentences’.
desire for agreement. It requests the listener to confirm the information, which the speaker has some reason to believe but is not totally certain about. Phonologically, a biased yes/no question ends with rising intonation. For instance:

(23) Q:  *idru nu=ngalrad i, a  kialrikudran=la*

\[
tu=p<\text{in}>u-ngalrad \quad \text{amau?}
\]

3.PSR=put<PERF>-name COP

‘Your name, isn’t it given afterwards?’

A:  *a lrikudran a p<\text{in}>u-ngalrad kandru*

ID.NOM afterwards ID.NOM put<PERF>-name that.OBL

‘It’s a name given after that.’

In mid-discourse a speaker may seek the addressee’s confirmation with the tag *maku* (§4.5.6), as shown in (24) and (25).

(24)  *adri=ku karuwa m-u-isatr, maku? aw,*

NEG=1S.NOM can ITR-go-up tag and

*ti=pa-karun-ay i baeli*

1S.GEN=CAUS-work-TR2 SG.NOM my.older.sibling

‘I cannot get up, can I? So I’ll ask my brother to do the work (for me).’

(25)  *mara-asatr na pasara’adr, maku? aw tu=alrak-aw*

SUP-high DF.NOM Pasara’adr tag and 3.GEN=take-TR3

‘The Pasara’adr family is in a higher position, isn’t it, and so they took it.’

12.3.1.4 Answers to yes/no questions

Across languages there are basically three kinds of system for short answers to yes/no questions: yes/no systems, agree/disagree systems, and echo systems (Sadock and Zwicky 1985:189–191). Basically, Puyuma has a yes/no system, with *aiwa* ‘yes’ standing for a positive answer (26), and *adri* ‘not’ standing for a negative answer (27), but sometimes other material (an echo verb) is added, as shown in (26).

(26) Q:  *nadri na palrakuan i, *mu<kasa>kasa m-uka?*

these.NOM DF.NOM men’s.house TOP <RED>together ITR-go

‘Do people from these men’s houses go together?’

---

5 Huang et al. (1999:645) and Tan (1997:107) also briefly discuss this type of question. Tan indicates that ‘*amau* conveys an implication of strong doubt’, but she does not say what the differences are between a question with *amau* at the end and a question without it. The elicited examples she gives do not support the claim that *amau* conveys strong doubt. Huang et al. also do not say much about this construction, except that its intonational pattern is different from neutral yes-no questions.

6 In a yes/no system, a positive particle stands for a positive answer and a negative particle stands for a negative answer. In an agree/disagree system, a positive particle is used when the answer agrees with the question in polarity (positive vs negative), and a negative particle is used when the answer disagrees with the question in polarity. In an echo system, simple positive and negative responses to questions involve repeating the verb of the question.
A: *aiwa. an m-u-ruma’ i, mukasa.*

yes when ITR-go-house TOP together
‘Yes. When they go home, they go together.’

(27) Q: *tu=kurutr-ay=yu?*

3.GEN=rub-TR2=2S.NOM
‘Did he rub you?’

A: *adri, tu=pa-pulri-pulrin-ay=ku*

NEG 3.GEN=CAUS-RED-cast.out-TR2=1S.NOM
‘No, he cast (the demon) out from me.’

The situation is more complicated when a negative question is asked. In such cases, both *aiwa* ‘yes’ and *adri* ‘no’ are acceptable, but an echo answer is needed. For example:

(28) Q: *adri=yu a-uka?*

NEG=2S.NOM RED-go
‘Won’t you go?’

A1: *aiwa, a-uka=ku*

yes RED-go=1S.NOM
‘Yes, I’ll go.’

A2: *adri, a-uka=ku*

NEG RED-go=1S.NOM
‘Yes, I’ll go.’

This seems to indicate that Puyuma is simultaneously a yes/no language, and an agree/disagree language. However, it is very possible that A2 in (28) is the result of interference from Mandarin Chinese, which is an agree/disagree language, and that Puyuma was originally a yes/no language.

12.3.2 Alternative questions

In an alternative question the addressee is asked to make a choice among possible alternatives. In Puyuma an alternative question is usually formed by juxtaposing two alternatives and optionally connecting them with *andri*7 ‘if not’. The two alternatives are each marked with a rising-falling pattern, and the stress is again shifted from the last syllable to the penultimate syllable. For example:

(29) Q: *an m-uka mulralriaban nadru na*

when ITR-go sea.worship those.NOM DF.NOM

*a-pakan dra dawa?*

ITR-go-north TOP Ca-feed ID.OBL millet

*andri, dra lrumay?*

if.not ID.OBL rice

‘When those who do the sea-worship went north, they offered millet, or, was it rice?’

---

7 The word *andri* is evidently formed from *an adri*, ‘when not’. 
Chapter 12

A: **brumay**
   rice
   ‘Rice.’

12.3.3 Information questions

The purpose of information questions is to elicit a specific piece of information, and they cannot be answered with a ‘yes’ or ‘no’ alone. In Puyuma they are indicated by the use of interrogative proforms and rising-falling intonation. Other grammatical devices, such as inversion or special morphology, are not used. These interrogatives can be subgrouped into four categories on the basis of the part of speech the interrogative proform belongs to, namely, whether it is nominal, adverbial, verbal, or numeral.

12.3.3.1 Nominal interrogatives

The interrogative noun *manay* can be glossed as either ‘what?’ or ‘who?’. It is preceded by a common or personal noun phrase marker depending on whether it denotes a common noun or a personal noun (§4.3.1.2.3). It can be the grammatical subject in a verbal sentence, as in (30), or the nominal predicate in a classifying sentence (§10.3.2), as in (31). In a classifying/nominal sentence, *manay* occurs as expected in the initial position, which is the default predicate position and usually reserved for the new information.

(30) *mi-walak i manay?*
  have-child SG.NOM who
  ‘Who gave birth to a child?’

(31) *a manay tu=edad kana kutrem*
  ID.NOM what 3.PSR=colour DF.OBL cloud
  ‘What color is the cloud?’

In information questions *manay* stays in the usual noun phrase position. For example:

(32) ‘ta=pu-ngalrad-anay kan manay?’ *<em>k</em>*
  1P.GEN=put-name-TR3 DF.OBL what  <ITR>say
  ‘They said, ‘what name should we give him?’’

(33) *a lalak=ku=driyan i, ma-ladram=ku dra manay?*
  ID.NOM child=1S.NOM=IMPF TOP ITR-know=1S.NOM ID.OBL what
  ‘I was still a child, what did I know?’

Another interrogative noun *isuwa* can be glossed as ‘which?’ in some contexts. When it expresses the meaning ‘which?’, it must be preceded by a noun phrase marker. For instance:

(34) *amau na isuwa nu=kalipang*
  COP DF.NOM which 2S.PSR=umbrella
  ‘Which one is your umbrella?’

---

8 However, *manay* cannot be the genitive actor of a transitive verbal clause. The question ‘Who has eaten my rice’ will be a nominal clause, ‘*i manay na mekan draku tinalek*’ — ‘who’s the one that has eaten my rice’.
Non-declarative clause types

225

Its use and position are very similar to that of manay. Both of them must be in the initial position in a nominal sentence, and after the verb in a verbal sentence. However, unlike manay, isuwa cannot take an indefinite noun phrase marker. This is predictable, because the referent has to be definite for a ‘which’ question to be asked.

The interrogative word isuwa also means ‘where’ in Puyuma. However, when isuwa means ‘where?’, it is not preceded by a noun phrase marker. I suspect that the locative noun phrase marker i is actually incorporated into this word, at least historically, as it contrasts with asuwa ‘at what time?’

(35) ulaya=yu isuwa?
exist=2S.NOM where
‘Where are you?’

(36) ulaya=ku i balrangaw
exist=1S.NOM LOC Taitung
‘I’m in Taitung.’

The question word used to ask about time is asuwa ‘when, at what time?’ It is always preceded by the subordinating conjunction an ‘when’ (§15.2.1), as illustrated below.

(37) u-a-ruma’ an asuwa?
go-a-house when what.time
‘When will he come home?’

It seems that asuwa consists historically of a noun phrase marker a and a noun suwa.

12.3.3.2 Adverbial interrogative

The adverbial question word daw ‘why?’ is used to ask for a reason. The criteria that single it out as an adverb are that, unlike verbs, it has a constant form, and it does not attract pronominal clitics as verbs do. In addition, the verb following it is not necessarily an intransitive one, as it would be if this were a serial verb construction (§13.2.2.1). For example:

(38) daw tu=pu-ngalrad-ay=ku dra lruba’ib?
why 3.GEN=put-name-TR2=1S.NOM ID.OBL Lruba’ib
‘Why did they give me the name Lruba’ib?’

12.3.3.3 Verbal interrogatives

Puyuma has two verbal interrogatives: kuda ‘how?’ and muama ‘why?’.

Like an ordinary verb, kuda occurs in sentence-initial position, has a voice alternation, and takes aspectual and modal inflections. In Puyuma, manner-adverbial concepts are typically expressed with a verb in an SVC (§13.4.3), and kuda occurs in the interrogative version of that construction, as in (39).

---

9 It is noted by Huang et al. (1999:663) that in many other Formosan languages, the interrogative word ‘which’ also means ‘where’.
In (39) the root is reduplicated to indicate repetition of action, and is marked by the intransitive infix \textless em\textgreater{}. In (40) \textit{kuda} undergoes reduplication to express the irrealis meaning, and in (41) it is marked by the undergoer subject-choice suffix -\textit{aw}.

(40) \textit{ka-kuda}=\textit{ku}=\textit{la} an kemadru
\text{RED-how=1S.NOM=PERF if such}
‘If such things happen, what shall I do?’

(41) \textit{ta=}\textit{kuda-aw} na balri na makeser
\text{1P.GEN=how-TR1 DF.NOM wind DF.NOM strong}
‘How can we stand the strong wind?’

The stative/dynamic distinction is also indicated by different intransitive markers. For example, in (39) it is \textless em\textgreater{}, which conveys the more dynamic meaning, while in (42) the verb is prefixed by \textit{ma-}, which indicates a stative meaning.

(42) \textit{ma-kuda}=yu?
\text{ITR-how=2S.NOM}
‘How are you? (Are you alright?)’

The question word \textit{kuda} is not always used to ask about the way of dealing with something. Sometimes its dynamic form is used to ask about degree (as in (43)) or about kinds (as in (44)).

(43) \textless em\textgreater{}\textit{uda-kuda} tu=alrudran-an na barasa?
\text{<ITR>RED-how 3.PSR=heavy-NMZ DF.NOM stone}
‘How heavy is the stone?’

(44) \textit{sagar}=yu dra \textless em\textgreater{}\textit{uda-kuda} dra uaduan
\text{like=2S.NOM ID.OBL <ITR>RED-how ID.OBL exercise}
‘What kind of exercise do you like?’

The verbal interrogative \textit{muama} ‘why’ differs in syntactic behaviour from the question word \textit{daw} ‘why’, discussed in §12.3.3.2. First, while \textit{daw} has a constant form, \textit{muama} can undergo reduplication to indicate iterative aspect, as in (45). Second, whereas \textit{daw} cannot attract clitics, \textit{muama} can, as shown in (46). Third, the verb following \textit{muama} is always intransitive (as in (46)), but there is no such restriction on verbs following \textit{daw}. Thus, \textit{muama}, like \textit{kuda}, is clearly a verb, whereas \textit{daw} is an adverb.

(45) \textit{mu<ama>}ama idri na bangsaran?
\text{<RED>why this.NOM DF.NOM man}
‘Why is this man always here?’

(46) \textit{muama}=yu=la drau kire<\textup{trupu}>trupung-a
\text{why=2S.NOM=PERF come <RED>meet.and.greet-PJ}
‘Why did you come to meet and greet?’
12.3.3.4 Interrogative numeral

In §4.5.4.2 it was pointed out that a distinction is made between modifiers of personal and non-personal nouns in the Puyuma numeral system. This distinction also applies to interrogative numerals. Different question words are used to ask 'how many' of personal and non-personal nouns, respectively. For nouns denoting humans *miasama* is used, as in (47); for non-human nouns *munuma* is used, as in (48).

(47) miasama nu=wadi na babayan?
    how.many 2S.PSR=younger.sibling DF.NOM female
    ‘How many sisters do you have?’

(48) munuma a basikaw-an
    how.many ID.NOM bamboo-COL
    ‘How many bamboos are there?’

Questions like ‘how old’ and ‘what time’ also utilise *munuma*. For instance:

(49) munuma=la nu=ami garem?
    how.many=PERF 2S.PSR=year now
    ‘How old are you?’

(50) munuma tuki=la garem?
    how.many clock=PERF now
    ‘What time is it now?’

The question word *munuma* can also be used to ask about degree, as illustrated in (51).

(51) munuma bekas ina basikaw?
    how.many long this.NOM bamboo
    ‘How long is this bamboo?’

The word *samaya*, otherwise ‘some’, is sometimes used in the sense of ‘how many’ to ask about number as well.

(52) samaya tu=dapal dra garang?
    some 3.PSR=foot ID.OBL crab
    ‘How many feet does a crab have?’

(53) samaya wari-an an sa-lriyus-an
    some day-COL when one-circle-NMZ
    ‘How many days are there in a week?’

12.4 A minor sentence type: the hortative

A hortative sentence expresses an exhortation (e.g. ‘let me/let’s’) or a strong wish to perform an action (e.g. ‘I/we want to’). In Puyuma, the hortative is encoded by a subcategory of non-indicative mood (§6.3.2). Hortative sentences are usually formed by suffixing -a ‘projective’ (§6.3.2.1), as in (54), (55) and (57), or by cliticising the first person inclusive pronoun *ta/=ta*, as in (54), (55) and (56), or by both. For example:

(54) mare-babulras-a=ta
    RECIP-borrow-PJ=1P.ICL.NOM
    ‘Let’s exchange!’
The verb in a negative hortative sentence undergoes *Ca-* reduplication, as in sentence (58). However, the form is not the same as the one that occurs in an irrealis sentence, as in (59). In (59) no intransitive affix is attached to the verb, but in sentence (58) the verb *ma-ra-rengay* ‘tell’ is affixed with the intransitive affix *ma-*. Furthermore, the negative sentences and the transitive sentences can have two different readings. For example, in addition to the hortative meanings provided, (56) can also denote ‘We left him’, and (58) can also denote ‘We are not saying anything’. Thus the interpretation of these sentences is based on the context and on intonation.

(58) \[ \text{adri}=ta \quad \text{ma-ra-rengay} \]
\[ \text{NEG=1P.ICL.NOM} \quad \text{ITR-RED-tell} \]
\[ \text{‘Let’s not tell.’} \]

(59) \[ \text{adri}=ta \quad \text{ra-rengay} \]
\[ \text{NEG=1S.ICL.NOM} \quad \text{RED-tell} \]
\[ \text{‘We won’t tell.’} \]
13 Serial verb constructions

13.1 Introduction

This chapter deals with serial verb constructions (SVCs). While there is much literature on SVCs, many linguists, e.g. Sebba (1987:1), Lord (1993:11–20), and Crowley (2002:10), have pointed out that there is a lack of consistency among different scholars’ definitions of serial verbs. The inconsistencies can be summarised as follows: first, different names have been used by different writers to describe similar phenomena; second, while some authors give a relatively loose definition and simply treat any verb-verb sequence as serialised verbs, some authors are more strict about what counts as an SVC.1

In my analysis, not all verb-verb sequences are SVCs. As a starting point, I adopt Crowley’s (2002:10) definition and take SVCs to be ‘syntactic constructions involving what can be analysed at the surface level as single clauses, but which are nevertheless expressed by means of multiple predicates’. Such a definition helps us to distinguish SVCs from constructions in which verbs belong to separate clauses. Accordingly, some criteria for qualifying a multiple predicate construction as an SVC are given below.2

(i) There is no overt marker of coordination, subordination, or syntactic dependency of any sort;3 in other words, no verb in the verb-verb sequence is subordinate/coordinate to another verb.4

(ii) The verbs share one or more arguments.

(iii) The verbs together have just one tense, aspect, mood and polarity value.

1 In Huang (1995), Huang et al. (1997a), Wu (1995) and Teng (1997), SVCs are verb-verb sequences in which verbs share the same subject, which is obligatorily the actor. If the shared argument is the actor of one verb and the undergoer of the other, the construction does not count as an SVC, but is said to be a ‘pivotal construction’, but for most other scholars these are also SVCs.

2 These criteria are also the most often mentioned characteristics of SVCs in the literature (Foley and Olson 1985, Sebba 1987, Durie 1997, Crowley 2002, Bril and Ozanne-Rivierre 2004, Aikhenvald 1999, 2006).

3 In Paiwan (a neighbouring Austronesian language), SVCs have a linker a, but they are otherwise formally and functionally similar to Puyuma SVCs. Because there is no evidence that the linker a signals coordination, subordination or modification, I would not wish to exclude Paiwan SVCs under my definition.

4 One of Y.L. Chang’s (2006b, 2006c) defining properties of an SVC is the ‘subordination condition’, by which he states that ‘the structural relationship between component verbs or verb phrases is one of subordination rather than coordination’. This defining feature runs counter to most linguists’ definitions of an SVC (Crowley 2002:12, Bril and Ozanne-Rivierre 2004:2, Durie 1997:291, Aikhenvald 1999:470).
All the verbs must be lexical verbs, i.e. they must be able to function as verbs in their own right.

These features differentiate an SVC from other constructions on the basis of its morphosyntactic properties. Phonological/intonational features that distinguish SVCs from other multi-clausal constructions are touched on in §13.3.

The number of verbs that can be serialised is not restricted to two. If one verbal slot in one SVC is occupied by a second SVC, a three-verb serialisation will occur. In the corpus, the maximum number of serialised verbs is four. Examples of three-verb serialisation and four-verb serialisation are given in (1) and (2).

(1)  
\[
\text{\textit{kabekas paanun m-u-dare'}}  \\
\text{run decline ITR-go-earth}  \\
\text{‘She ran downhill.’}
\]

(2)  
\[
\text{\textit{kabekas}=ta m-uka pulang-a m-asal}  \\
\text{run=1P.ICL.NOM ITR-go help-PJ ITR-again}  \\
\text{‘We ran to help again.’}
\]

In §13.2, I will describe how features (i) to (iv) are realised in Puyuma SVCs, and in §13.3, I will show how SVCs can be distinguished from multi-clausal verb-verb sequences, such as complement clauses, adverbial clauses, and coordinate clauses. In §13.4, I investigate different subtypes of SVCs.

13.2 Argument sharing and verbal categories in SVCs

Features (i) and (iv) in §13.1 are straightforward, and so this section deals with (ii), argument-sharing, and (iii), sharing of tense, aspect, mood and polarity value.

13.2.1 Argument sharing in SVCs

This section concerns the argument sharing in SVCs, subclassifying SVCs according to the syntactic/semantic role of the shared argument and its position in the clause.

As we will see in §13.2.2, non-initial verbs in an SVC are always intransitive, and so the shared argument must be their subject/actor. This shared argument is either the subject (actor or undergoer) or the non-subject actor of the first verb. In other words, the shared argument is either the nominative or the genitive argument of the first verb. SVCs can be subcategorised into three types according to the relationship of the shared NP with each of the verbs in the SVC. The subtypes of SVCs are summarised in Table 13.1.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type</th>
<th>role/case in V1</th>
<th>role/case in V2</th>
<th>Example</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>same-subject</td>
<td>ACT/NOM</td>
<td>ACT/NOM</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>switch-subject</td>
<td>ACT/GEN</td>
<td>ACT/NOM</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inclusory</td>
<td>ACT and UG</td>
<td>ACT/NOM</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 13.1: The manifestation of the shared argument in SVCs
In a same-subject I SVC, the shared argument is a nominative NP and is the actor of both V1 and V2, as shown in (3). In a same-subject II SVC, the shared argument is the undergoer/nominative NP and the actor of V2, as in (4). In a switch-subject SVC, the shared argument is the actor of V1 and V2, but it receives the genitive case from V1, and is by implication in a nominative relation to V2. An example of switch-subject SVC is given in (5). Finally, in an inclusory SVC, the undergoer and the actor of V1 are both the actor of V2, as exemplified in (6). Note that each non-initial verb in the three subtypes takes an actor subject.

(3)  
\[ m-u-ami=ta \quad pa-kan \]
ITR-go-north=1P.NOM CAUS-eat\(^5\)
‘We went north to worship.’

(4)  
\[ lriyus-u=ku \quad pia-lraudr \]
turn-TR1:IMP=1S.NOM face-east
‘Turn me to face the east.’

(5)  
\[ tu=tra-trual-ay \quad me-na’u \quad i \quad sabak \]
3.GEN=RED-open-TR2 ITR-see LOC inside
‘They open it to look inside.’

(6)  
\[ tu=pilang-aw \quad i \quad temutaw \quad m-u-ruma’ \]
3.GEN=bring-TR1 SG.NOM his.grandparent ITR-go-home
‘He brought his grandmother home.’

The shared argument can be manifested as a clitic pronoun (as in (3)–(6)) or a full NP. If the shared argument is expressed as a clitic pronoun, nominative or genitive, it attaches only to the first verb.

(7)  
\[ a. \quad kurerutung=ku \quad m-iедreng \quad kana \quad tutuy \]
be.next.to=1S.NOM ITR-sleep DF.OBL puppy
‘I leant against the puppy to sleep.’

\[ b. \quad *kurerutung \quad m-iедreng=ku \quad kana \quad tutuy \]

(8)  
\[ a. \quad tu=udalep-ay \quad me-na’u \quad i, \ldots \]
3.GEN=close.to-TR2 ITR-see TOP
‘He went close to see, …’

\[ b. \quad *udalep \quad tu=na’u-ay \quad i \]

As shown in (7) and (8), the pronominal enclitic =ku/tu= can only attach to the first verb. If it is manifested twice, as in (9), the construction is not an SVC and has a different meaning.

(9)  
\[ a. \quad kurerutung=ku, \quad m-iедreng=ku \quad kana \quad tutuy \]
‘I leant, and I slept with the puppy.’

\[ b. \quad tu=udalep-ay, \quad tu=na’u-ay \]
‘He went close to it, and he saw it.’

---

\(^5\) The word pakan means ‘feed’, but it has the sense of ‘worship’ in this context.
The different translations given in (7)–(8) as opposed to (9) show that the single pronominal clitic marking of SVC indicates that the verb-verb sequence is coded as monoclausal.

If the shared argument is manifested as a full noun phrase, the position of the shared argument differs from construction to construction. In most cases, the subject of a same-subject I SVC can appear either between the two verbs or after V2. For instance:

(10) a. *drua-drua me-na’u-a a trau
   RED-come ITR-see-PJ ID.NOM person
   ‘Many people come to see.’

b. *drua-drua a trau me-na’u-a

However, while both sentences in (10) are acceptable, in the corpus, the subject more often occurs after V2. The only situation in which the shared argument is not allowed to intervene between the verbs is when V1 acts as an intensifier and expresses the meaning ‘very’. For instance:

(11) a. pakameli ma-sepel na walak kandru
   very ITR-sorry DF.NOM child that.OBL
   ‘The child is very sorry about that.’

b. pakameli na walak ma-sepel kandru

In a same-subject II SVC, the shared arguments can appear either between two verbs or after V2, as shown in (12).

(12) a. tu=’etr’etr-anay mu-sulrud na katengadrawan
   3.GEN=jostle-TR3 ACAUS-push DF.NOM chair
   ‘The chair was jostled and pushed away.’

b. tu=’etr’etr-anay na katengadrawan mu-sulrud

In a switch-subject SVC, the shared argument (the oblique-marked actor) must appear before V2, otherwise the SVC has a different reading. Compare (13a) and (13b).

(13) a. tu=tra-trual-ay kana walak me-na’u i sabak
   3.GEN=RED-open-TR2 DF.OBL child ITR-see LOC inside
   ‘The child was opening it to look inside.’

b. tu=tra-trual-ay me-na’u kana walak i sabak
   3.GEN=RED-open-TR2 ITR-see DF.OBL child LOC inside
   ‘S/he was opening it to see the child inside.’

In (13a) the oblique NP kana walak ‘the child’ is the actor of both events and is crossreferenced by the clitic pronoun tu=, but in (13b) kana walak is the undergoer of V2. Again, in (14), if the shared argument (the actor of V1) moves to the position after the verb-verb sequence, the SVC has another meaning.

(14) a. tu=kibulras-aw dra trau i pabulu m-uka m-alup-a
   3.GEN=borrow-TR1 ID.OBL person LOC Pabulu ITR-go ITR-hunt-PJ
   ‘People from Pabulu borrow it (the dog) to go hunting.’
b. $tu=kibulras$-aw $m$-uka $m$-alup-a $dra$ $trau$ $i$ $pabulu$
   ‘They borrowed it to go and hunt people from Pabulu.’

However, not all oblique-marked actors of V1 must appear before V2. In an inclusory
SVC, the actor seems to be able to move to the position after V2, as shown in (15) and (16).
Notice that the case marking of NPs does not change when the NPs appear after V2, and the
noun phrase markers show that the case role is assigned by V1.

(15) a. $tu=pilang$-aw $i$ $temutaw$ $kana$ $walak$
   $3$-GEN=bring-TR1 SG.NOM his.grandparent DF.OBL child
   $drua$ $i$ $timulr$
   ITR.come LOC south
   ‘The child brought his grandmother here to the south.’

b. $tu=pilang$-aw $kana$ $walak$ $drua$ $i$ $timulr$ $i$ $temutaw$

c. $tu=pilang$-aw $i$ $temutaw$ $drua$ $i$ $timulr$ $kana$ $walak$

(16) a. $tu=pulang$-ay $i$ $nanali$ $kan$ $pilay$ $b<en>$ase
   $3$-GEN=help-TR1 SG.NOM my.mother SG.OBL Pilay $<$ITR>wash
   ‘Pilay helped my mother wash clothes.’

b. $tu=pulang$-ay $b<en>$ase $kan$ $pilay$ $i$ $nanali$

c. $tu=pulang$-ay $i$ $nanali$ $b<en>$ase $kan$ $pilay$

Arguments not shared by the verbs cannot be moved around. For instance, in (17), $enay$
‘water’ is the argument of the second verb $ki$-pa-trekelr-a, not of the first verb, and it must
remain in its normal position after the verb. The sentence becomes ungrammatical if $enay$
moves before the second verb, as shown in (17b). In (18), $tubil$ ‘skirt’ is not a shared
argument, and its appearance in different positions gives different readings.

(17) a. $m$-uka $ki$-pa-trekelr-a $dra$ $enay$
   ITR-go get-CAUS-drink-PJ ID.OBL water
   ‘They went to ask for water to drink.’

b. $*m$-uka $dra$ $enay$ $ki$-pa-trekelr-a

(18) a. $tu$-lrugas-ay $druat$ $tubil$ $me$-na$’u$
   $3$-GEN=lift-TR2 ID.OBL/3.PSR skirt ITR-see
   ‘She lifted her skirt to see.’

b. $tu$-lrugas-ay $me$-na$’u$ $druat$ $tubil$
   ‘She lifted it up to see her skirt.’

13.2.2 Manifestation of verbal categories

This section describes the manifestation of verbal categories in SVCs, such as transitivity,
aspect, mood, and negation. The main findings are summarised in Table 13.2.
### Table 13.2: The manifestation of verbal categories in SVCs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Transitivity</th>
<th>Mood</th>
<th>Aspect</th>
<th>NEG</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TR</td>
<td>ITR</td>
<td>Realis</td>
<td>Irrealis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V1</td>
<td>✔</td>
<td>✔</td>
<td>✔</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V2</td>
<td>✗</td>
<td>✔</td>
<td>✔</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 13.2.2.1 Transitivity

The most striking feature of Puyuma SVCs is that non-initial verbs are always in the intransitive (AV) form.\(^6\)

In sentence (19), there is a definite undergoer *unan* ‘snake’. In an independent clause with a simple verb phrase, the verb *barsa* ‘to slash’ would be manifested as transitive (undergoer voice) and *unan* ‘snake’ would be its subject, as exemplified in (20). But in the SVC in (19), *unan* is marked as a definite oblique and *barsa* is in the intransitive form.

(19) \(ka\text{-}ruwa=ta=la\ b<en>arsa\ kana\ unan\)
\(ka\text{-}can=1P.NOM=PERF\ <ITR>\text{-}slash\ DF.OBL\ snake\)
‘We can slash the snake.’

(20) \(ta=barsa\text{-}aw\ na\ unan\)
\(1P.GEN=slash\text{-}TR1\ DF.NOM\ snake\)
‘We slashed the snake.’

Aikhenvald (2006:80) notes that all serial verbs operate on a nominative-accusative principle, and never on an ergative-absolutive principle. This is an interesting observation, and it seems that Puyuma SVCs follow this principle. Thus, only actor voice (or intransitive, in the case of Puyuma) is allowed for V2, and the implicational actor of V2, which is also the shared argument, is always either S or A, but never O. Hence, the construction patterns accusatively in this sense.

### 13.2.2.2 Mood

Irrealis mood may not be marked on the second verb, as shown in the following sentences. In (21), *Ca*-reduplication marks V1 as irrealis, and (22) is ungrammatical because of the irrealis marking *a*- on V2.

(21) \(dra\text{-}drua=mu\ ki\text{-}pa\text{-}ladram\text{-}a\ dra\ kakuayanan\)
\(RED\text{-}come=2P.NOM\ PASS\text{-}CAUS\text{-}know\text{-}PJ\ ID.OBL\ tradition\)
‘You will come to get knowledge about traditions.’

---

\(^6\) The same feature (that the non-initial verbs must be in AV form) has also been reported in other Formosan languages, for instance, Amis (Wu 2000:126), Atayal (Huang 2000c:143), Thao (Huang 2000d:124), Kavalan (Y.L. Chang 2004) and Saisiyat (Yeh 2000a:134). However, contrary to Huang’s observation concerning Thao, Wang (2004:293), citing examples from Blust (2003a:907, 952), finds that in Thao verbs in the V2 slot are not restricted to actor voice verbs.
Serial verb constructions

(22) *dra-drua ki-a-pa-ladram-a
    RED-come PASS-a-CAUS-know-PJ

In the imperative construction, only V1 appears in the imperative form, as shown in (23) and (24).

(23) lriyus-u piya-lraudr
    turn-TR1:IMP face-east
    ‘Turn it to the east!’

(24) adri pa-pilang-i m-u-ruma’
    NEG CAUS-lead-TR1:IMP ITR-go-house
    ‘Don’t bring her home.’

V2 in an SVC denoting ‘come/go’ is always affixed with the projective marker -a, as in (25).

(25) m-uka=dar tr<em>akaw -a dra asepan
    ITR-go=FREQ < ITR>steal-PJ ID.OBL sugarcane
    ‘They often went to steal sugarcane.’

13.2.2.3 Aspect

Huang (2000b:164–165) and Teng (1997:26) state that in Puyuma aspectual and modal frames in SVCs are indicated via V1 exclusively. However, I have found quite a few examples in which V2 is marked with either durative or progressive aspect (§6.4.1.2 and §6.4.1.3). In (26), V2 ‘walk’ is in the progressive aspect (marked by Ca- and the ITR marker), and in (27), a repetitive meaning is signalled by CVCA- reduplication.

(26) puari k<em>kawang tu=wadi
    slow < ITR>RED-walk 3.PSR=younger.sibling
    ‘Their younger sister was walking slowly.’

(27) g<em>g<em>ilgil m-u-ngwaya-ngwayan
    <ITR>slow.run ITR-go-RED-front
    ‘They slowly run forward.’

Aspectual markers generally appear after V1. However, the perfective marker =la is sometimes attached to V2, as shown in (28) and (29).

(28) aw sa<‘eru>’eru mi-sasa=la taytaw
    and <RED>laugh ITR.have-one=PERF 3S.NEU
    ‘And she laughed and laughed by herself.’

(29) karuwa m-ubii=la
    can ITR-fly=PERF
    ‘He can fly already.’

13.2.2.4 Negation

The negator adri never precedes the second verb in an SVC. In other words, it is impossible for V2 to be negated separately.
13.3 SVCs vs multi-clausal constructions

In this section, the differences between SVCs and multi-clausal constructions are discussed. Verbs in the examples are underlined.

13.3.1 SVCs vs complement clauses

Complementation is discussed in Chapter 14. Differences between a complement clause and an SVC are that: (i) a complement clause is always introduced by the complementiser dra, as shown in (31), but there is no marker of subordination/coordination in an SVC; (ii) unlike V2 of an SVC, the verb in a complement clause does not necessarily share any argument with the verb in the matrix clause, and it can attract pronominal clitics, as shown in (31) and (32); (iii) unlike V2 of an SVC, there is no restriction on subject choice, mood/aspect, and negation for the verb in a complement clause, as shown in (32)–(34).

(31) ma-ladram [dra ala m-inatray tu=walak]
    ITR-know COMP maybe ITR-die 3.PSR=child
    ‘She knew that maybe her child was dead.’

(32) tu=pa-lradam-aw
    3.GEN=CAUS-know-TR1 those. NOM DF.NOM child COMP
    nadru na lalak [dra
    tu=pa-trekelr-ay=mu
    3.GEN=CAUS-drink-TR2=2P.NOM ID.OBL water TOP NEG RED-drink
    dra enay i, adri tra-trekelr]
    ‘She (the mother) reminded those children that “if she (the grandmother) has you drink water, don’t drink”.’

(33) pakameli ma-sepel kan temutaw [dra aru
    very ITR-sorry SG.OBL his.grandparent COMP
    ki<a>natray=la i, ma-ulrep k<em>iyanger]
    <a>die=PERF TOP ITR-tired <ITR>think
    ‘He was very sorry for his grandmother that she still worried about him when she was going to die.’

(34) igelra=ku=dar
    1S.NOM=FREQ COMP NEG=1S.NOM can
    [dra adri=ku maruwa b<en>a’aw]
    embarrassed=1S.NOM=FREQ COMP NEG=1S.NOM can <ITR>save
    ‘I often felt embarrassed that I couldn’t save it.’

13.3.2 SVCs vs adverbial clauses

Adverbial clauses are discussed in Chapter 15. An adverbial clause is usually signalled by its occupying the topic position and being followed by the topic marker i. It is often introduced by the subordinator an ‘when, if’. Like complement clauses, there is no restriction on the manifestation of the verb in an adverbial clause.
(35) \[ an \ sayma=ta \ i, \ ta=ka-kiteng-aw \]
when few=1P.NOM TOP 1P.GEN=ka-small-TR1
‘If we are small in number, we make it small.’

13.3.3 SVCs vs coordinate clauses

Coordinate clauses are conjoined with or without the coordinator `aw` ‘and’. When there is no coordinator, the main distinctions between a coordinate construction and an SVC are that in a coordinate construction the verbs can belong to two separate intonation contours, with (or without) an intervening pause, and clitic pronouns (if any) appear obligatorily on each verb. In (36) and (37), a pause can occur between the two verbs, regardless of whether there is a coordinator or not. The second verb in a coordinate construction has a pronominal clitic attached to it, and there is no restriction on subject choice and mood.

(36) \[ tu=tikus-ay, \ (aw) \ tu=keret-ay \ tu=pa’a \]
3.GEN=tie-TR2 and 3.GEN=cut-TR2 3.PSR=leg
‘They (the Puyuma) tied them (the Tipul), and they (the Puyuma) cut their (the Tipul’s) legs.’

(37) \[ ka-si<a>kasik=mi=la, \ p<en>a-padan=mi=la \]
ka-<a>set.off=1P.ECL.NOM <ITR>RED-prepare=1P.NOM=PERF
\[ draniam \ a-uka-an \]
ID.OBL/1P.PSR RED-go-NMZ
‘We are setting off, and we are preparing for our journey.’

13.4 Functional types of SVCs

In this section different types of SVC are distinguished on the basis of the semantic/functional relationship between the verbs in the series. There may be further subtypes not discussed here. There are some instances where it is difficult to determine which category an SVC belongs to.

13.4.1 Modal SVCs

In this type of SVC V1 encodes a modal meaning, expressing intention, attempt, or ability to do the action denoted by the following verb. In many languages similar functions are carried out by an auxiliary, but in Puyuma such words are not distinguished morphosyntactically from other verbs. For example:

(38) \[ adri \ m-ua’i \ m-iedreng \]
NEG ITR-willing.to ITR-sleep
‘It (the dog) was not willing to lie down.’

(39) \[ adri=driya \ t<em>alam \ k<em>aratr \ dra \ lalak \]
NEG=IMPF <ITR>try <ITR>bite ID.OBL child
\[ naniam \ suan \]
DF.NOM/1P.PSR dog
‘Our dog has never tried to bite kids.’
(40) **karuwa b<en>u’utr dra aru a-araw kanta drekal**
can &lt;ITR&gt;stop COMP will RED-rob DF.OBL/1P.PSR village
‘It can stop them robbing our village.’

As mentioned above, while there is no restriction on mood for the first verb, the second verb can only appear in realis mood, but it can be marked with different aspects, such as durative (41), and progressive in (42).

(41) **adri m-ua’i mu-pesi-pesik dratu**
NEG ITR-willing.to ACAUS-RED-apart ID.OBL/3.PSR

`k<in>abekas-an kan nanali`
<PERF>run-NMZ SG.OBL my.mother
‘It (the dog) didn’t want to be away from the road my mother ran along.’

(42) **adri=driyan i, maruwa=la k<em>a-kawang**
NEG=IMPF TOP can=PERF &lt;ITR&gt;RED-walk
‘Some time later, she could walk.’

### 13.4.2 Phasal SVCs

In phasal SVCs V1 codes the inception or termination of the state/event of V2. For example:

(43) **p<en>iya7=ta pa-ragan**
&lt;ITR&gt;finish=1P.NOM CAUS-up
‘We finish building it up.’

(44) **m-ungsal=la pu-rawak**
ITR-start=PERF CAUS-cultivate
‘They started to make them cultivate the wasteland.’

There are no examples showing progressive or durative/repetitive aspect in V2.

### 13.4.3 Modificational SVCs

SVCs in this category have one common feature: one of the verbs (usually V1) is used to modify the other verb that expresses the action.

It has been observed by a number of linguists (Starosta 1988; Huang 1995; and Chang 2006a, 2006b) that concepts that would be encoded as adverbial modifiers in other languages are often encoded as verbs in Formosan languages. Usually these verbs occur as

---

7 The word *peniya* in (43) is also used as a floating quantifier, meaning ‘all’ (§8.4.1.4). In those cases, it does not occur in the clause-initial position; it can either precede or follow the NP it modifies.

a. **karuwa t<em>u>ubang na lalak peniya**
can &lt;ITR&gt;answer DF.NOM child all
‘All the children can answer.’

b. **ta=kan-aw=la peniya na kuraw**
1P.GEN=eat-TR1=PERF all DF.NOM fish
‘We have eaten all the fish.’

8 Van Klinken (1999:250) says that SVCs are not modification constructions in Tetun (an Austronesian language of West Timor), but in Puyuma modification of events is often expressed by SVCs.
part of an SVC in which V2 denotes the main event and V1 the modifying concept. In §4.5.5, a closed word class, ‘adverbs’, is distinguished. I have demonstrated how these adverbs are syntactically different from verbs because they do not attract clitics, they have constant forms, the verb following them can be transitive, and they cannot stand in their own right.

Although the lexical items discussed in this section are semantically parallel to adverbs in other languages (e.g. English), they are nevertheless verbs from a morphosyntactic perspective; i.e. they can attract clitic pronouns, some can have a voice alternation, they can be affixed for aspect and/or mood, and the verb following them is obligatorily intransitive, as expected in an SVC.

The modificational category of SVCs is the most heterogeneous. It can be subdivided into several subtypes on semantic grounds, but even within the same subtype there may be constructional properties associated with individual ‘adverbial’ verbs.

‘Adverbial’ V1s encode: the degree to which V2 is true, e.g. salraw ‘very’ in (45) and pulabus ‘almost’ in (46); or the internal temporal structure of the event denoted by V2, e.g. marayas ‘often’ in (47), payas ‘immediately’ in (48), masal ‘again’ in (49), and paatreng ‘for a long time’ in (50); or the actor’s attitude towards the action of V2, e.g. pasiesi ‘reluctantly’ in (51) and paseket ‘seriously’ in (52).

\[(45) \quad \text{salraw}^9 = \text{ta ma-ulrep} \quad \text{very}=1\text{P.NOM ITR-tired}
\]
\[\text{‘We were very tired.’} \]

\[(46) \quad \text{pula-pulabus} = \text{ku m-inatray} \quad \text{RED-almost}=1\text{S.NOM ITR-die}
\]
\[\text{‘I almost died.’} \]

\[(47) \quad \text{marayas} = \text{ku t}<\text{em}>\text{engedr dra dripung} \quad \text{often}=1\text{S.NOM }<\text{ITR}>\text{attack ID.OBL Japanese}
\]
\[\text{‘I often attacked the Japanese.’} \]

\[(48) \quad \text{pa-payas} = \text{yu m-inatray} \quad \text{RED-immediately}=2\text{S.NOM ITR-die}
\]
\[\text{‘You will die immediately.’} \]

\[(49) \quad \text{m-asal}^{10} = \text{la druа i, ku}<\text{a}>\text{renang=ku} \quad \text{ITR-again}=\text{PERF ITR.come TOP }<\text{a}>\text{follow}=1\text{S.NOM}
\]
\[\text{‘When they come again, I will follow.’} \]

---

9  The root salraw has two meanings; in addition to conveying the meaning ‘very’, it also means ‘surpass, overtake’. For example:

\[\text{salraw-i na palridrin} \quad \text{overtake-TR2_IMP DF.NOM car}
\]
\[\text{‘Overtake the car!’} \]

10  The root asal also has two meanings. In addition to meaning ‘again’, it can also mean ‘move, change’. For instance:

\[\text{tu=asal-aw nanku ngalrad kan namali} \quad 3\text{GEN}=\text{change-TR1 DF.NOM/1S.PSR name SG.OBL my.father}
\]
\[\text{‘My father changed my name.’} \]
‘He asked me for a long time.’

‘We ate reluctantly.’

‘He worked seriously.’

Notice that if the subject of a sentence such as (46) is manifested as a free NP, as in (53), this NP cannot intervene between salraw and V2 (see also §13.2.1).

The order of masal ‘again’ and the event verb seems to be flexible, as shown in (49) and (54). Similarly, paseket ‘seriously, completely, carefully’ can also occur as a non-initial verb, as shown in (55) and (56). The ability of these two items to move around makes them exceptional among the other modificational SVCs, and indicates that they are possibly (becoming) adverbs.\[11\]

While the data show that masal and paseket are verbs when they occur in the first position or stand independently (because they can be used transitively and can occur in an irrealis situation), I cannot exclude the possibility of them being grammaticalised as adverbs when they occur in a non-initial position, because they must be intransitive in that case (like an SVC), and therefore there is no way to tell whether the construction is an SVC or a verb with an adverbial modifier.

Notice that if the subject of a sentence such as (46) is manifested as a free NP, as in (53), this NP cannot intervene between salraw and V2 (see also §13.2.1).

The order of masal ‘again’ and the event verb seems to be flexible, as shown in (49) and (54). Similarly, paseket ‘seriously, completely, carefully’ can also occur as a non-initial verb, as shown in (55) and (56). The ability of these two items to move around makes them exceptional among the other modificational SVCs, and indicates that they are possibly (becoming) adverbs.\[11\]

However, given that masal has both transitive/intransitive forms (asal-aw vs m-asal) and has all the other characteristics of SVCs (the verb following it must be intransitive and realis, and this V2 does not attract a pronominal clitic), I treat it as a verb. Likewise, paseket is different from the adverbs in that it can undergo reduplication to indicate irrealis, as in (57); can be used transitively, as in (58); can attract clitics, as in (57); and can stand on its own.

\[11\] While the data show that masal and paseket are verbs when they occur in the first position or stand independently (because they can be used transitively and can occur in an irrealis situation), I cannot exclude the possibility of them being grammaticalised as adverbs when they occur in a non-initial position, because they must be intransitive in that case (like an SVC), and therefore there is no way to tell whether the construction is an SVC or a verb with an adverbial modifier.
Serial verb constructions

(57) \textit{pa<sa>seket=ku dra ruma’} \\
\textit{<RED>}seriously=1S.NOM ID.OBL house \\
‘I will concentrate on (building) the house.’

(58) \textit{tu=paseket-ay nantu kiakarunan} \\
3.GEN=seriously-TR2 DF.NOM/3.PSR job \\
‘He concentrated on his job.’

In fact, all the V1s in this section have irrealis forms, as shown below, and all of them can be used as independent verbs. Some examples are given in (58), (59) and (60).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Realis</th>
<th>Irrealis</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>salraw</td>
<td>sasalraw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pulrabus</td>
<td>pulralrabus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>marayas</td>
<td>kararayas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>payas</td>
<td>papayas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>masal</td>
<td>aasal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>paetreng</td>
<td>paaetreng</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>paseket</td>
<td>pasaseket</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(59) \textit{tu=asal-aw=driya} \\
3.GEN=again-TR1=IMPF \\
‘He did/tried it again.’

(60) \textit{adri=ta p<en>a<a>etreng} \\
NEG=1P.NOM <ITR><a>a.long.time \\
‘Let’s not stay for a long time.’

In addition to \textit{paseket} ‘seriously’ in (58) and \textit{asal} ‘again’ in (59), \textit{paetreng} ‘for a long time’ in (61) and \textit{pulabus} ‘almost’ in (62) can take transitive forms.

(61) \textit{tu=paetreng-ay=ku kiumal} \\
3.GEN=a.long.time-TR2=1S.NOM ITR.ask \\
‘I was asked (by him/her/them) for a long time.’

(62) \textit{ku=pulabus-aw p-inatray} \\
1S.GEN=almost-TR1 CAUS-die \\
‘I almost killed him.’

In the above sentences, we see that the action is expressed by V2. V1 only denotes its length or degree. However, subject choice, mood, and even the arguments are marked on V1. Sometimes, when the context is clear, V2 can be left out. Compare the following two sentences.

(63) a. \textit{ku=paetreng-ay na kiruan mi-kiruan} \\
1S.GEN=a.long.time-TR2 DF.NOM clothes have-clothes \\
‘I have worn the clothes for a long time.’

b. \textit{ku=paetreng-ay na kiruan} \\
1S.GEN=long.time-TR2 DF.NOM clothes \\
‘I have worn the clothes for a long time.’ \\
‘I have owned the clothes for a long time.’
Sometimes V1 can be either transitive or intransitive without causing much difference in meaning. For example, in (64) and (65) the same translation is provided, but according to the informant there are different emphases in these two sentences. In (64) the attitude is emphasised; in (65) the job is emphasised.

(64)  
\textit{paseket} \textit{ki-karun}  
\text{seriously get-job}  
‘He worked seriously.’

(65)  
\textit{tu=paseket-ay} \textit{ki-karun}  
\text{3.GEN=seriously-TR2 get-job}  
‘He worked at it seriously.’

13.4.4 Directional SVCs

In a directional SVC, the verb denoting the direction typically occurs as V2. These verbs can be divided into two subcategories: one denotes static direction and the other motion.

13.4.4.1 Static direction

The static directional verbs are formed by a bound morpheme \textit{piya-} ‘to face’ and a morpheme denoting either a cardinal compass point or a direction relative to the actor, for example \textit{piya-draya} ‘face west’, \textit{piya-isatr} ‘face up’, and \textit{piya-traran} ‘face out’. Examples are shown in (66) and (67).

(66)  
\textit{tu=riap-anay} \textit{piya-timulr i, m-utu-kekeng}  
\text{3.GEN=scatter-TR2 face-south TOP ITR-become-plain}  
‘He scattered it to the south, and it became a plain.’

(67)  
\textit{lriyus-u} \textit{piya-lraudr}  
\text{turn-TR1:IMP face-east}  
‘Turn it to the east!’

13.4.4.2 Motion

Motion directional verbs are formed with a motional affix \textit{u-} ‘go’, and a root denoting the destination (§6.5.1). For example, \textit{ruma} ‘house’, and \textit{u-ruma} ‘go home’; \textit{sabak} ‘inside’, and \textit{u-sabak} ‘get into’; \textit{ami} ‘north’, and \textit{u-ami} ‘go north’; \textit{dare} ‘earth’, and \textit{u-dare} ‘get down’. Examples are given in (68) and (69).

(68)  
\textit{adri=ta k<em>a-kasu dra bekalr-an m-u-ami}  
\text{NEG=1P.NOM <ITR>RED-bring ID.OBL new-NMZ ITR-go-north}  
‘We are not bringing new (rice) to the north.’

(69)  
\textit{tu=padrek-aw} \textit{tu=wadi m-u-ruma’}  
\text{3.GEN=carry.on.back-TR1 3.PSR=younger.sibling ITR-go-house}  
‘He (the elder) carried his younger brother on his back and went home.’

13.4.5 Purposive SVCs

There are three subtypes of purposive SVCs: directional, postural, and instrumental.
13.4.5.1 Directional-purposive

In a directional-purposive SVC, V1 expresses the motion, and V2 expresses the purpose. The verbs that occur as V1 here are all directional, and include verbs of static direction and directed motion. For instance:

(70) \[ p<en>angutr dra dare’, aw piya-draya me-riap i, ... \]
\[ <ITR>\text{grab} \quad \text{ID.OBL} \text{ earth and face-west ITR-scatter} \quad \text{TOP} \]
‘He grabbed some earth, and faced the west to scatter it, …’

(71) \[ m-u-ami=ta pa-ekan \]
\[ \text{ITR-go-north=1P.NOM} \quad \text{CAUS-eat} \]
‘We went north to worship.’

(72) \[ m-u-ruma’=ku i ruma’ k<em>irungutr kan nanali \]
\[ \text{ITR-go-home=1S.NOM} \quad \text{LOC home} \quad <\text{ITR}>\text{take.care} \quad \text{SG.OBL my.mother} \]
‘I went home to take care of my mother.’

The two verbs muka ‘go’ and druа ‘come’ behave differently from the other directional purposive SVCs in that V2 takes a projective marker -a (§6.3.2.1).

(73) \[ aw adri=ku karuwa m-uka b<en>a’aw-a i, ... \]
\[ \text{and NEG=1S.NOM} \quad \text{can} \quad \text{ITR-go} \quad <\text{ITR}>\text{-save-PJ} \quad \text{TOP} \]
‘And I couldn’t go to save it, …’

(74) \[ dra-druа=mu ki-pa-ladram-a dra kakuayanan \]
\[ \text{RED-come=2P.NOM} \quad \text{get-CAUS-know-PJ} \quad \text{ID.OBL tradition} \]
‘You will come to get knowledge about traditions.’

Like English ‘go’ and ‘come’, muka ‘go’ and druа ‘come’ also denote deictic meaning, indicating the action is to be carried out ‘away from’ or ‘toward’ the speaker.

(75) \[ payas mar-belrias m-uka m-aya-a kantu \]
\[ \text{immediately RECIP-turn ITR-go ITR-find-PJ DF.OBL/3.PSR} \]
\[ \text{wadi} \]
\[ \text{younger.sibling} \]
‘They returned immediately to go find their sister.’

(76) \[ druа=dar i takesi-an m-aya-a kanku \]
\[ \text{come=} \text{FREQ LOC study-NMZ ITR-seek-PJ 1S.OBL} \]
‘It often came to the school to look for me.’

Durative aspect may occur in V2, but the projective marker -a still cannot be omitted. For example:

(77) \[ muama=yu=la druа kire-trepu-trupung-a \]
\[ \text{why=} \text{2S.NOM=PERF come get-RED-meet-PJ} \]
‘Why do you come to welcome us?’

13.4.5.2 Postural-purposive

In the second subtype of purposive SVCs, V1 expresses posture.
Chapter 13

13.4.5.3 Instrumental-purposive

In this subtype of purposive SVC, V1 indicates the instrument of carrying out the purpose denoted by V2.

(80)  
\[ tu=tara-payran-anay=ta \quad t<em>ubang \]

3.GEN=use-Taiwanese-TR3=1P.NOM <ITR>answer

‘They use Taiwanese to answer us.’

(81)  
\[ mi-tratringalr=ku \quad m-ekan \]

have-chopstick=1S.NOM ITR-eat

‘I ate with chopsticks.’

13.4.6 Simultaneous action SVCs

In the SVCs discussed hitherto, one of the verbs comes from a restricted class. In simultaneous SVCs, both verbs come from an open class.

A simultaneous SVC denotes two actions happening simultaneously to make a single event. For example:

(82)  
\[ idru \quad na \quad walak=la \quad i, \quad kurenang=la \quad s<em>anga \]

that.NOM DF.NOM child=PERF TOP follow=PERF <ITR>make

‘That child did as she said.’

(83)  
\[ ti=pa-matra’-ay=yu \quad ma-rengay \]

1S.GEN=CAUS-eye-TR2=2S.NOM ITR-tell

‘I (want to) tell you face to face.’

13.4.7 Causative SVCs

Aikhenvald (2006) points out that in many languages there is no clear-cut boundary between cause-effect SVCs and causative SVCs. According to her study, cause-effect SVCs tend to be symmetrical (both verbs come from an open class) while causative SVCs tend to be asymmetrical (one of the verbs comes from a closed class).

Morphologically, two types of causative verbs can be distinguished in Puyuma. The first type comes from a closed class; this is marked by a causative affix \( pa-/p-/pu- \) (§9.2), as in (84) and (85). Semantically, this type encodes simple causation. The second type comes from an open class and has a lexical meaning which includes information about manner of causation, as in (86) and (87). Morphosyntactically, in both types, V1 is coded with an undergoer subject, which is also the subject of V2.
Serial verb constructions

13.4.8 SVCs instead of complements

Complementation is discussed in Chapter 14. An SVC replaces complementation with certain complement-taking verbs such as psych verbs (88) knowledge verbs (89) and desiderative verbs (90) when both verbs share the same subject, mood, and polarity value. In such constructions the complement-taking verb occurs as V1.

(88) sagar m-ekan drata b<in>eray dra akan-an
like ITR-eat ID.OBL/1P.PSR <PERF>give ID.OBL eat-NMZ
‘They like to eat the food we gave.’

(89) ka-ulrid=mu kirelabak kana ala’
ka-don’t.know=2P.NOM confront DF.OBL enemy
‘You will not know how to confront the enemy.’

(90) maranger=ku m-uka i katipul
want=1S.NOM ITR-go LOC Katipul
‘I want to go to Katipul.’

13.4.9 Idiomatic and lexical uses of SVCs

It is apparently common across languages to find idiomatic and lexical uses of SVCs, but I have found only a single instance of each in Puyuma.

Example (91) shows how mi-trepa ‘have an aim’ is used in its non-idiomatic (purposive) sense. However, it is also used productively in an idiomatic SVC meaning ‘work in a certain occupation’. When it is used in this way the verb following it is usually marked for repetitive aspect, as shown in (92) and (93).

(91) mi-trepa pa-kan kandru kan drarungaw
have-aim CAUS-eat that.OBL SG.OBL Drarungaw
‘It was aiming to worship Drarungaw.’

(92) payas=ku m-uka i taybak ki-karun-a dra
right.away=1S.NOM ITR-go LOC Taipei get-job-PJ ID.OBL
mi-trepa  k<em>_me>uru-kurutr dra seikitan
have-aim  <ITR>RED-dig ID.OBL coal
‘I went to Taipei right away to work as a mineworker.’

(93)  a  mi-trepa  b<en>_a-base  i  nanali
ID.NOM have-aim  <ITR>RED-wash SG.NOM my.mother
‘My mother worked as a cleaner.’

Durie (1997:322) mentions that ‘verb serialisation is universally characterised by heavy lexicalisation of particular verb combinations’. However, lexicalisation seems not to be very productive in Puyuma, and (94) is the only idiomatic lexicalisation I have found. Here the sequence of ma-ulrep ‘tired’ and ki-anger ‘have a thought’ has been lexicalised in the sense of ‘worry (that something might happen)’.

(94)  ma-ulrep=driya  k<em>_me>i-anger  dratu  kasanan-an
ITR-tired=IMPF  <ITR>get-thought ID.OBL/3.PSR ka-stray-NMZ
‘She’s still worrying that he might get lost.’
14 Complement clauses

14.1 Subordination

Subordinate clauses are usually divided into three types according to their propositional function: the adverbial clause (as in (1)), which acts as a modifier of a main clause predicate; the relative clause (as in (2)), which functions as a modifier of a noun phrase; and the complement clause (as in (3)), which functions as an argument of a predicate. The subordinate clauses are underlined in the following sentences.

(1) \textit{an \_ unian=yu \_ dra \_ angadr-an \_ i, geti\_r \_ kadrini}  
if \not.exist=2S.NOM ID.OBL breathe-NMZ TOP pinch here  
‘If you are out of breath, pinch here.’

(2) \textit{ala \_ m-inatray \_ tu=walak \_ na \_ mi-a-wali \_ nantaw}  
maybe ITR-die 3.PSR=child DF.NOM have-a-tooth DF.NOM/3.PSR  
‘Maybe (one of) her children who has teeth in her (pudendum) was dead.’

(3) \textit{ma-ladram \_ dra \_ ala \_ m-inatray \_ tu=walak}  
ITR-know COMP maybe ITR-die 3.PSR=child  
‘She knew that maybe her child was dead.’

Adverbial clauses are described in Chapter 15 and relative clauses are discussed in §5.6. This chapter deals with Puyuma complement clauses. A standard definition of ‘complementation’ is given by Noonan (1985:42), who defines it as ‘the syntactic situation that arises when a notional sentence or predication is an argument of a predicate’.

14.2 Types of complementation strategy

Noonan (1985:42) subcategorises complementation by syntactic behaviour into sentence-like complement types, paratactic complements, infinitival complements, participle complements, and nominalised complements.

Dixon (2004) distinguishes between complement clauses (or ‘sentence-like complements’ in Noonan’s terms) and complement strategies (which includes Noonan’s other kinds of complement). He says that in every language, there is a restricted set of verbs (complement-taking verbs), and each of its members may or must have another verb as one of its arguments. If this verb is the predicate of a clause which functions as an argument of
the complement-taking verb, then this clause is a complement clause; on the other hand, if a verb relates in some other way to an argument of a complement-taking verb, this is a complementation strategy. The most common complementation strategies include nominalisations, relative clauses, and serial verb constructions. While complement clauses can only function as complements, complementation strategies are characterised by the fact that they can have other functions.

In Puyuma, there are three ways of expressing complementation. The first is the complement clause (as in (4)), and the other two are, in Dixon’s terms, complementation strategies: nominalisation (as in (5)), and SVC (as in (6)).

(4) \textit{ma-ladram dra ala m-inatray tu=walak}  
ITR-know COMP maybe ITR-die 3.PSR=child  
‘She knew that maybe her child was dead.’

(5) \textit{ma-ulrep=driya k<em>i-anger dratu ka-sanan-an}  
ITR-tired=IMPF <ITR>get-thought ID.OBL/3.PSR ka-stray-NMZ  
‘She’s still worrying about his possibly getting lost.’

(6) \textit{ma-ranger m-araw kandru kana drekal}  
ITR-want ITR-rob that.OBL DF.OBL village  
‘They wanted to rob that village.’

Of the three, SVCs and nominalisations are lower in frequency and more restricted in distribution than complement clauses. For instance, the SVC strategy is used only when the complement predicate and the main predicate share the same subject, mood, aspect, and polarity value (§13.4.8).

It must be emphasised that structurally the nominalisation strategy is not different from other types of nominalisation, and the SVC complementation strategy is not different from other SVCs; they are mentioned here because they are used in situations where many languages would use a dedicated complement construction. Nominalisations and SVCs are treated in Chapter 7 and Chapter 13 respectively.

I will first describe the syntactic structure of complement clauses in §14.2.1, then in §14.2.2 and §14.2.3 I will discuss the two less productive strategies of nominalisation and SVCs. Section 14.3 discusses types of complement-taking verb.

14.2.1 Complement clauses

14.2.1.1 Complementiser \textit{dra}

A complementiser is usually a word, particle, affix, or clitic, the function of which is to help identify as a complement the construction it associates with. A sentence-like complement is always introduced by \textit{dra} in Puyuma, which is also an indefinite oblique

---

1 Dixon (2004) gives two criteria for a constituent to be recognised as a complement clause: it must have the internal constituent structure of a clause, and it must function as an argument of the main clause, typically in O function, sometimes also in A and/or S functions. A complement clause may sometimes also function as E (extension to core), but may never have a non-core function.

2 Noonan (1985:47) points out that complementisers are often derived from pronouns, conjunctions, adpositions or case markers.
noun phrase marker (§4.3.1.2.2).\(^3\) Compare the uses of *dra* in the following sentences. In (7) *dra* precedes a noun, and in (8) it precedes a clause. It is glossed as ‘ID.OBL’ when it precedes a noun, and ‘COMP’ when it precedes a clause.

(7) \(k_<em>urudr\) *dra* buwang i sabak kantu ruma’

\(<\text{ITR}>\text{dig} \text{ ID.OBL} \text{ hole} \text{ LOC} \text{ inside} \text{ DF.OBL}/3.\text{PSR} \text{ house} \)

‘He dug a hole inside his house.’

(8) *ma-ladram* *dra* ala *m-inatray* tu=walak

\(<\text{ITR}>\text{know} \text{ COMP} \text{ maybe} \text{ ITR-die} \text{ 3.PSR=child} \)

‘She knew that maybe her child was dead.’

Unlike the traditional definition of complement clauses, which requires the complement to be a subject or object argument of the predicate (or S, A, O functions in Dixon’s terminology), in Puyuma a sentence-like complement is never an S, A, or O argument. In other words, the complement clause is an argument but not a core argument of the complement-taking verb. The truth of this statement can be demonstrated from the voice marking of the complement-taking verb and the case marking of the complement. For example, in (7) and (8) both verbs are intransitive; the only core argument in each sentence is the actor, and thus the elements marked by *dra* in both sentences are oblique. This is not to say that the matrix verb has to be intransitive; if the matrix verb is manifested as a transitive verb, there must be an argument other than the actor and the oblique complement. For instance:

(9) \(tu=\text{sulrud-anay}=ta\) *dra* kurenang=la *dra* trau matrina

\(<3.\text{GEN}=\text{push-TR3}=1\text{P.NOM} \text{ COMP} \text{ follow}=\text{PERF} \text{ ID.OBL} \text{ person} \text{ big} \)

‘They pushed us to grow up with others.’

In this sentence the verb is transitive, and the two core arguments are the genitive actor *tu*= and the nominative undergoer =*ta*; the complement clause introduced by *dra* is oblique.

### 14.2.1.2 The behaviour of verbs in complement clauses

There is no restriction on the voice of the verb in a complement clause, unlike the second verb of an SVC. As in an independent clause, the verb in a sentence-like complement is manifested intransitively if there is no definite undergoer, and is manifested transitively if the undergoer is definite. Compare the transitivity of the verbs in the complements in the following two sentences.

(10) *ma-dra-drayar* nadru na miadrua na mar-kataguin

\(<\text{ITR-RED-discuss} \text{ those.NOM} \text{ DF.NOM} \text{ two} \text{ DF.NOM} \text{ RECIP-marry} \)

\(<[\text{dra} \text{ m-u-dawil-a}=ta]=la \text{ kadrini}] \text{ COMP} \text{ ITR-go-far-PJ}=1\text{P.NOM}=\text{PERF} \text{ here} \)

‘The couple were saying to each other, “Let’s get away from here”.’

(11) \(tu=\text{pa-lradam-aw}\) nadru nantu lalak \(/dra\)

\(<3.\text{GEN}=\text{CAUS-know-TR1} \text{ those.NOM} \text{ DF.NOM}/3.\text{PSR} \text{ child} \text{ COMP} \)

\(^3\) As well as Puyuma a number of other Formosan languages, such as Paiwan (A.H. Chang 2006, Tang 1999), Mayrinax Atayal (Huang 1995), Labuan Rukai (Zeitoun pers.comm.), and Kavalan (Liao 2004) also use the oblique noun phrase marker as the complementiser.
In (10) both the matrix verb madradrayar ‘discuss’ and the verb in the complement mudawil ‘go away’ are intransitive. The complement is introduced by an indefinite noun phrase marker and it has no undergoer. However, in (11) both the matrix verb palradamaw ‘to let know’ and the verb in the complement clause patrekelray ‘to let drink’ are manifested as transitive because both of them have a definite undergoer (walak ‘child’ in the matrix clause, and =mu ‘you’ in the complement clause).

As for the manifestation of aspect and modality, from the examples below it is clear that verbs in the complements are free to have their own aspect and mood. Thus, even when the matrix verb is manifested as realis mood, a verb in the complement can be manifested as irrealis.

\[(12)\] idru na walak=la i, pameli ma-sepel kan
that.NOM DF.NOM child=PERF TOP very ITR-sorry SG.OBL
temutaw dra aru k-i<\textgreater a>natray=la i, ma-ulrep=driya
his.grandma COMP will ka-<\textgreater a>die=PERF TOP ITR-tired=IMPF
\[k<em>i\textgreater-anger dratu ka-san-an\]
\[<\text{ITR}>\text{get-thought ID.OBL/3.PSR ka-stray-NMZ}\]
\[‘\text{That child, he was very sorry for his grandma that she was going to die, but she was still worrying that he might get lost.’}\]

\[(13)\] tu=kiumal-ay dra wa-wa’i=yu mi-kataguin kanku?
3GEN=ask-TR2 COMP RED-willing.to=2S.NOM have-spouse 1S.OBL
\[‘\text{He asked (her), “Are you willing to marry me?”’}\]

Negation is also allowed in a sentence-like complement,\(^4\) as illustrated in (14):

\[(14)\] adri ka-a-ulrep k<\textgreater em>i-anger dra adri=yu
NEG ka-RED-tired \[<\text{ITR}>\text{get-thought COMP NEG=2S.NOM}\]
\[ka-ruwa ki-kadru kandru kana ruma’\]
\[ka-can get-live that.OBL DF.OBL house\]
\[‘\text{Don’t worry that you cannot live in the house.’}\]

Examples (12) to (14) illustrate the fact that the form of sentence-like complements is like that of independent clauses when the complementiser is removed. In Givon’s (1980) terms, they are less bound than other complement types by their main predicate.

14.2.1.3 Equi-deletion, raising and clitic climbing

Equi-deletion deletes subjects of complements when they are coreferential with some argument in the main clause. Noonan (1985:68) points out that equi-deletion is especially

\(^4\) However, not all verbs can take a negative sentence-like complement; for example, semantically speaking, it will be more difficult for perception verbs such as ‘see’ or ‘hear’ and desiderative verbs like ‘want’ and ‘hope’ to take a negative sentence-like complement than utterance verbs ‘say’ and ‘tell’, or acknowledgement verbs ‘know’ and ‘understand’.
Complement clauses

common when it is conditioned by the coreference of the complement subject with the main clause agent or experiencer, and when it occurs, it is usually obligatory. However he does not discuss how this process works in an ergatively aligned language.

In Puyuma, equi-deletion is only applicable to bound pronouns, because they are the only NPs that need to be overtly expressed. If the shared argument is a full NP it is difficult to tell whether there is equi-deletion. For example, in (15) suan ‘dog’ is both the subject of the main predicate na’u ‘see’ and the complement predicate pinatray ‘kill’. Recall that there is no third person nominative bound pronoun, and thus there is no relevant deletion for us to detect.

(15) $ku=na’u-naru=ay$ $na$ suan $[dra$ $tu=p-inatray-aw$

1S.GEN=RED-see-TR2 DF.NOM dog COMP 3.GEN=CAUS-die-TR1

dra ki-a-suan]
ID.OBL get-a-dog
‘I watched the dog being killed by dog-hunters.’

In order to describe how these syntactic processes apply to Puyuma, it is useful to distinguish four types of argument encoding: nominative actor, nominative undergoer, oblique-marked actor, and oblique-marked undergoer.

Only a few examples of equi-deletion are found in the corpus, and it is always the nominative actor of the complement clause that is deleted. In (16) the bound pronoun =ta is both an argument in the matrix clause and in the complement clause.

(16) $tu=sulrud-anay=ta$ $[dra$ $kurenang=la$ $dra$ $trau$ $ma-trina]$

3.GEN=push-TR3=1P.NOM COMP follow=PERF ID.OBL person ITR-big
‘They pushed us to grow up with others.’

Noonan (1985:66) says that the application of equi-deletion always results in a non-sentence-like complement type, but the complement in (16) is still sentence-like. As an independent clause it would mean ‘They/she/he followed others in growing up’.5

Puyuma equi-deletion is not obligatory. For instance in (17) the shared nominative NP appears both in the matrix and the complement clause. The second =ku can be omitted.

(17) $igelra=ku=dar$ $kandri$ $kana$ suan $[dra$

embarrassed=1S.NOM=FREQ this.OBL DF.OBL dog COMP

adri=$ku$ $ma-ruwa$ $b<en>a’aw]$
NEG=1S.NOM ITR-can <ITR>save
‘I often felt embarrassed that I couldn’t save this dog.’

The syntactic process of raising is much more common than equi-deletion in Puyuma. Unlike equi-deletion, where the deleted NP is a shared argument, raising is a phenomenon whereby an argument of the complement clause is raised to the main clause, and the NP involved is not a shared argument. A nominative NP, whether actor or undergoer, may optionally be raised to the main clause, where it is oblique. For example, in (18) pilay is the nominative actor of the complement clause, and in (19) kuraw ‘fish’ is the nominative undergoer of the complement clause.

---

5 This is the case because of the lack of third person nominative bound pronouns.
An oblique-marked NP cannot be raised to the main clause unless it is the actor and has a clitic pronoun coreferential with it (i.e. is a core argument). Thus, while the oblique-marked argument nanali ‘my mother’ can be raised to the main clause in (20), in (21), the oblique-marked undergoer kuraw ‘fish’ cannot be raised.

Another syntactic process which looks similar to raising is clitic climbing. Clitic climbing occurs when a clitic appears in a higher clause than the one in which it is an argument. Again not many examples are found in the corpus.

Table 14.1 is a summary of the above discussion.

### Table 14.1: Syntactic processes in complementation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ACT\textsuperscript{NOM}</th>
<th>ACT\textsuperscript{OBL}</th>
<th>UG\textsuperscript{NOM}</th>
<th>UG\textsuperscript{OBL}</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Equi-deletion</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>×</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>×</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Raising</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>×</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clitic climbing</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>×</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>×</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
14.2.2 Nominalisation as a complementation strategy

Only certain complement-taking verbs can use the complementation strategy of nominalisation (cf. Table 14.2 in §14.3), and these verbs can always also take a complement clause. Very few examples are found in the corpus. Notice that nominalisation complements are all oblique.

(23) ma-ulrep=driya k<em>i-anger dratu ka-san-an-an
ITR-tired=IMPF <ITR>get-thought ID.OBL/3.PSR ka-stray-NMZ
‘She’s still worrying about his getting lost.’

(24) ma-ulri-ulrid=ta [dra ka-kuda-an drata
ITR-RED-don’t.know=1P.NOM ID.OBL RED-how-NMZ ID.OBL/1P.PSR
ki-a-ma-drayar-an dra trau]
get-a-ITR-talk-NMZ ID.OBL person
‘We don’t know how to make a conversation with others.’

The only verbal category that nominalised complementation retains is mood/aspect/voice.6 For example, in (23) the complement is prefixed by ka- (§6.6), which is usually associated with irrealis mood; in (24) the affixation of <a> in kiamadrayaran ‘make a conversation’ also gives an irrealis reading. In (25) the infix <in> (§7.3.1) and Car-reduplication (§3.4.2) give a perfective and irrealis reading respectively.

(25) pakumau dratu s<in>a-salrem aw dratu
confirm ID.OBL/3.PSR RED<PERF>sow and ID.OBL/3.PSR
ika-u<lra>lrane
ika<-RED>fat
‘They (the women) confirmed how the seeds are being sown and how they will grow.’

Negative nominalised complementation is rare. A pair of examples are given in (26) and (27). When we compare these two sentences, we see that when a nominalised complement is negated it is the negator that is nominalised, and then the verb following it is manifested as an intransitive verb, not a nominalised form.

(26) tu=rengarengay-aw=ku dra (pa)-tra-trekelr-an dra eraw
3.GEN=persuade-TR1=1S.NOM ID.OBL CAUS-RED-drink-NMZ ID.OBL wine
‘He persuaded me to drink wine.’

(27) tu=rengarengay-aw=ku dra pa-ka-adri-an7 tr<em>ekelr
3.GEN=persuade-TR1=1S.NOM ID.OBL CAUS-ka-NEG-NMZ <ITR>drink
dra eraw
ID.OBL wine
‘He persuaded me not to drink wine.’

6 Unlike a verbal construction, in which there are four voices, in a nominalisation construction there is only an alternation between actor voice and undergoer voice (which is also signalled by <in>). For a discussion of mood and aspect in nominalisation, see §7.3.3.

7 In §11.2.3 I have shown that morphosyntactically adri is neither a verb nor a noun when it appears in a negative verbal construction. In (27), adri takes a nominaliser -an, and is also marked by ka- and pa-. From the corpus, it seems that adri only takes -an when it is also marked by ka-. There is no *ka-adri nor *adri-an.
The actor of a nominalised complement is usually manifested as a possessive pronoun (§4.5.1), as shown in (28) and (29). The patient of a nominalised predicate is usually marked by an oblique noun phrase marker but without a genitive pronoun, as shown in (30).

(28) *me-nga-ngara draku ka-inaba-an*
    ITR-RED-wait ID.OBL/1S.PSR ka-good-NMZ
    ‘He was waiting for my getting well.’

(29) *me-nga-ngara=ku dratu ka-inaba-an kan pilay*
    ITR-RED-wait=1S.NOM ID.OBL/3.PSR ka-good-NMZ SG.OBL Pilay
    ‘I was waiting for Pilay’s getting well.’

(30) *ma-rengay-a=ku=diya dra tua-abay-an dra binariyaw*
    ITR-tell-PJ=1S.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL make-rice.cake-NMZ ID.OBL binariyaw
    sticky.rice.cake
    ‘I’ll tell about the making of binariyaw sticky rice cake.’

In (28), the actor of the nominalised complement is ‘I’, and is manifested as an oblique possessive pronoun *draku* ‘my’; in (29) the actor is ‘Pilay’, and in addition to an oblique possessive pronoun *drtu* ‘her/his/their’, the NP *kan pilay* follows the nominalised complement. The patient of the nominalised predicate in (30) is *binariyaw*, which is marked by the oblique noun phrase marker *dra*.

14.2.3 The SVC complementation strategy

Characteristics and types of SVCs are discussed in Chapter 13. Dixon (2004) notes that SVCs typically provide a complementation strategy for verbs denoting intention, such as ‘want’, ‘plan’, ‘intend’, or verbs denoting manipulation, such as ‘make’, ‘force’, or ‘help’. Those complement-taking verbs that can appear as the first verb of an SVC can always also take a *dra* clause complement. For instance:

(31) *ma-ranger m-araw kandru kana drekal*
    ITR-want ITR-rob that.OBL DF.OBL village
    ‘They wanted to rob that village.’

(32) *ma-ranger=ku dra tu=pukpuk-aw na walak*
    ITR-want=1S.NOM COMP 3.GEN=beat-TR1 DF.NOM child
    ‘I wanted him to beat the child.’

I mentioned earlier that for some complement-taking verbs (such as knowledge verbs, desiderative verbs and psych verbs), the SVC strategy is used when both predicates share the same subject, mood, aspect, and polarity value. Thus, in (31), the verb *maranger* ‘want’ appears in an SVC and the two predicates *maranger* ‘want’ and *maraw* ‘rob’ share the same subject. In (32), the same verb *maranger* takes a complement clause; the subject of *maranger* is =*ku*, and the subject of *pukpuk-aw* ‘beat’ is *na walak* ‘the child’.

In the corpus, there are no cases where a complement clause is used when the subject of both clauses is the same. Informants accept the use of a complement clause even when the subject of both clauses is the same, but they also think it is redundant.
14.3 Types of complement-taking verb

Since it is almost impossible to include all types of complement-taking-verb in this discussion, only those types that that are more productive in Puyuma and have been thoroughly discussed in the literature are examined. Table 14.2 is a summary of types of complement-taking verbs, following Noonan (1985), and their types of complementation strategy.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Perception verbs</th>
<th>dra clause</th>
<th>NMZ strategy</th>
<th>SVC strategy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Utterance verbs</th>
<th>✓</th>
<th>✓</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Propositional attitude verbs</th>
<th>dra clause</th>
<th>NMZ strategy</th>
<th>SVC strategy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>overt subject</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>covert subject</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Phasal verbs</th>
<th>dra clause</th>
<th>NMZ strategy</th>
<th>SVC strategy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>non-volitional</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>volitional</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Knowledge verbs</th>
<th>dra clause</th>
<th>NMZ strategy</th>
<th>SVC strategy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>different actor</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>same actor</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Desiderative verbs</th>
<th>dra clause</th>
<th>NMZ strategy</th>
<th>SVC strategy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>different actor</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>same actor</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Psych verbs</th>
<th>dra clause</th>
<th>NMZ strategy</th>
<th>SVC strategy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>different actor</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>same actor</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Manipulative verbs</th>
<th>dra clause</th>
<th>NMZ strategy</th>
<th>SVC strategy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
<td>✓</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

14.3.1 Perception verbs

Perception verbs, such as ‘see’, ‘watch’, ‘hear’ etc., describe the sensory situation where the actor perceives the event denoted by the complement. If a verb of this type takes a complement it is always a dra clause.

(33)  me-na'u dra ma-la-lemes=la nadru na lalak  
ITR-see COMP ITR-RED-disappear=PERF those.NOM DF.NOM child  
‘She saw the children were going to disappear.’

(34)  ku=na’u-na’u-ay na suan dra tu=p-inatray-aw  
1S.GEN-RED-see-TR2 DF.NOM dog COMP 3.GEN=CAUS-die-TR2  
    dra ki-a-suan  
    ID.OBL get-a-dog  
‘I watched the dog being killed by dog-hunters.’

The perceived events must be existing facts, and so irrealis and negation are not coded in the complements of these verbs.
14.3.2 Utterance verbs

Utterance verbs normally take a complement clause, but unlike other complement-taking verbs the complement is usually manifested as a direct quotation of the utterance. Notice the personal pronouns in the complement clauses in the following two sentences:

(35) \( tu=kiumal-ay \) dra \( wa-wa=i=yu \) mi-kataguin kanku
\[3.\text{GEN}=\text{ask-TR2} \text{ COMP} \text{ RED-willing.to=2S.NOM} \text{ have-spouse} \text{ 1S.OBL}\]
‘He asked her, “Will you marry me?”’

(36) \( ma-dra-drayar \) nadru na miadrua na mar-kataguin
\[\text{ITR-RED-discuss} \text{ those.NOM} \text{ DF.NOM two} \text{ DF.NOM RECIP-marriage}\]
\( \text{dra} \) \( m-u-\text{dawil-a=ta}=la \) kadrini
\[\text{COMP} \text{ ITR-go-far-PJ=1P.NOM=PERF} \text{ here}\]
‘The couple were discussing (and saying), “Let’s get away from here”.’

In (35) and (36), the addressees are third person arguments of the matrix verb, but in the complement clauses, the addressees are denoted by the second person pronoun \( =yu \), and first person inclusive pronoun \( =ta \) respectively.

The only utterance verbs found to take a nominalised complement are \( \text{bati} \) ‘tell (a story)’ and \( \text{marengay} \) ‘tell, recount’. For example:

(37) \( b<\text{en}>a-bati=ku=driya \) draku \( k<\text{in}>a-ba’aw-an \)
\[<\text{ITR}=\text{RED-tell}=1S.NOM=\text{IMPF} \text{ ID.OBL/1S.PSR} <\text{PERF}=\text{ka-live-NMZ}\]
‘I’m telling about my life.’

(38) \( ma-rengay-a=ku=driya \) dra tua-abay-an dra \( binariyaw \)
\[\text{ITR-tell-PJ=1S.NOM=IMPF} \text{ ID.OBL make-rice.cake-NMZ ID.OBL}\]
‘I’ll tell about the making of \( \text{binariyaw} \) sticky rice cake.’

The verb \( \text{kema} \) ‘say’ is a very productive utterance verb. It either denotes hearsay, as in (39), or a direct quotation, as in (40).

(39) \( \text{indang i sigasigaw, aw tu=pa-talam-anay a} \)
\[\text{afraid SG.NOM Sigasigaw and} \text{ 3GEN=CAUS-try-TR3 ID.NOM}\]
\( \text{suan i, payas m-inatray idru na suan k<em>a} \)
\[\text{dog TOP right.away ITR-die that.NOM DF.NOM dog} <\text{ITR}=\text{say}\]
‘Sigasigaw was afraid, and he made a dog try it, and it was said that the dog died right away.’

(40) \( \text{‘idri i, nu=ka-la-ladram-an m-u-ruma’} \)
\[\text{this.NOM TOP 2S.PSR=ka-RED-know-NMZ ITR-go-house}\]

---

8 There are some cases in which the complement clauses are not like a direct quote of the speech. For example:

\( \text{ma-dra-drayar a ma’inayan dra m-uka ma-salak-a} \)
\[\text{ITR-RED-discuss ID.NOM male ID.OBL ITR-go ITR-celebrate-PJ}\]
‘Males were discussing going to celebrate.’
i ruma’’ tu=ka-aw i, ...
LOC house 3.GEN=tell-TR1 TOP

“These, are these your signs for going home?” he said to her, …”

Unlike verbs taking complements, the verb kema ‘say’ is always put in the clause final position, and it seems that the verb and the direct quotation are in a juxtaposed relation, rather than a matrix-embedded relation.

14.3.3 Propositional attitude verbs

According to Noonan (1985:113–114), propositional attitude verbs express an attitude toward the truth value of the proposition denoted by the complement. The attitude may be positive, such as ‘believe’ or ‘think’, or it can be negative, such as ‘doubt’ or ‘deny’. In Puyuma, two types of verb can be distinguished within this category depending on whether there is an actor contributing the attitude. When there is, a complement clause is used, as in (41).

(41) pakupana’an=ku dra amau a trau a inaba
believe=1S.NOM COMP COP ID.NOM person ID.NOM good

‘I believe that he is a good man.’

Sometimes there is no overt human actor contributing the attitude, and the complement can be manifested as a clause, as in (42) and (43), or as a nominalised construction, as in (44).

(42) pana’an dra sagar s<em>enay aw m-uarak
true COMP like <ITR>sing and ITR-dance
‘It’s true that she likes to sing and dance.’

(43) kamawan dra tu=pa-ka-drua-aw m-inatray kaniam
resemble COMP 3.GEN=CAUS-ka-two-TR1 ITR-die DF.OBL/1P.PSR

trau i ruma’
person LOC house
‘It’s like it caused half of my family to die.’

(44) kamawan dra p<in>a-ldrada-ldradam
resemble ID.OBL <PERF>CAUS-RED-learn
‘It’s like having been trained.’

14.3.4 Phasal verbs

According to Noonan (1985:129), phasal verbs refer to ‘the phase of an act or state; its inception, continuation, or termination’. All Puyuma phasal verbs, except palu ‘demarcate’, use only an SVC strategy. Compare:

(45) p<en>iya9=ta pa-ragan
<ITR>finish=1P.NOM CAUS-erect
‘We finished building (a building).’

(46) na adri pu<a>raket i, palu dra ma-‘idrang,
DF.NOM NEG <a>concentrate TOP demarcate COMP ITR-old

9 The verb peniya is also used as a floating quantifier. See also § 13.4.2.
adri=driya ma-ladram
NEG=IMPF ITR-know
‘Those who don’t concentrate, until they are old, they still
don’t know (how do to it).’

The complement taking-verb *palu* ‘demarcate’ is different from the other phasal verbs semantically and syntactically. For other phasal verbs, the inception or termination of an action is initiated by a volitional animate/human actor, but *palu* is used to describe a termination/initiation of an event due to the intervention of another event when it is used intransitively, and there is no volitional actor.

The reader may suspect that *palu* is not a verb but a subordinator, but it can take pronominal clitics and voice/transitive markers, as shown in (47) and (48). Notice that in (47) there is clitic climbing, and the pronoun *=ku* is an argument of *meretra* ‘put down; finish’.

(47) *palu=ku* dra me-retra i takesian
demarcate=1S.NOM COMP ITR-put.down LOC school
‘until I finished my study’

(48) *ku=palu-anay=driya kadri ku=ngai*
1S.GEN= demarcate-TR3=IMPF here 1S.PSR=word
‘This is what I want to say at this moment.’ (lit. ‘I let my words stop here.’)

### 14.3.5 Knowledge verbs

Knowledge predicates (Noonan 1985:118–119) describe a state of knowledge or a process of acquisition of knowledge concerning propositional content. Knowledge verbs, desiderative verbs, and psych verbs can take either the complement clause or the SVC strategy. Different morphosyntactic devices are used depending on whether the actors of the complement predicate and the main predicate are the same, as shown in (49) and (50).

(49) *ma-ladram dra ala m-inatray tu=walak*
ITR-know COMP maybe ITR-die 3.PSR=child
‘She knew that maybe her child was dead.’

(50) *ma-ladram=ta ki-karun*
ITR-know=1P.NOM get-job
‘We know how to work.’

### 14.3.6 Desiderative verbs

Noonan (1985:121) characterises a desiderative verb as a verb that has an experiencer argument expressing a desire that the complement proposition be realised. He subclassifies desiderative verbs into three categories: the *hope*-class, the *wish*-class, and the *want*-class. He argues that all languages share the three-way classification, but do not all make the same formal distinctions. However, in Puyuma, ‘hope’ and ‘want’ are expressed by the same verb *maranger* ‘want’, with either the complement clause or the SVC strategy.

---

10 If there is a volitional actor, *palu* has to be used transitively, as in (48).
Complement clauses

(51) *ma-ranger dra pa-ku<en>renang dra trau*
    ITR-want COMP CAUS-<en>follow ID.OBL person
    ‘They hope that they can catch up with others.’

(52) *ma-ranger m-araw kandru kana drekal*
    ITR-want ITR-rob that.OBL DF.OBL village
    ‘They wanted to rob that village.’

A very different device is used to encode wishes. Normally they are manifested as a direct quotation which denotes the proposition that is wished, and the verb is suffixed with a projective marker (§6.3.2.1) to convey the non-indicative mood. There is no complement-taking verb, as the wish is encoded by the projective marker on the main verb.

(53) *ma-ruwa-a=ku m-ulra’esi*
    ITR-can-PJ=1S.NOM ITR-succeed
    ‘(I wish) I can succeed.’

(54) *adri-a drua na ala’*
    NEG-PJ come DF.NOM enemy
    ‘(I/We/They wish) The enemies won’t come.’

14.3.7 Psych verbs

Psych verbs express the experiencer’s psychological attitude towards the events described by the complements. All three complementation strategies are used with these verbs. When the actor of the complement predicate is identical with the actor in the main predicate the SVC strategy is used, as shown in (55). When the actor of the complement predicate is different from the actor in the main predicate, the complement clause or nominalisation strategy is chosen, as in (56) and (57).

(55) *sagar ku<ren>renang kantu wadi*
    like <RED>follow DF.OBL/3.PSR younger.sibling
    ‘She liked going along with her brothers.’

(56) *pameli ma-sepel kan temutaw dra aru*
    very ITR-sorry DF.OBL his.grandmother COMP will
    ki<en>natray=la i, ma-ulrep k<em>i-anger
    <en>die=PERF TOP ITR-tired <ITR>get-thought
    ‘He was very sorry for his grandmother that she was going to die,
    but was still worrying (about him).’

(57) *ma-ulrep=driya k<em>i-anger dra tu ka-san-an-an*
    ITR-tired=IMPF <ITR>get-thought ID.OBL/3.PSR ka-stray-NMZ
    ‘She was still worrying that he might get lost.’

14.3.8 Manipulative/causative verbs

Manipulative or causative verbs usually denote situations in which the agent manipulates the undergoer into performing some action or causes the undergoer to perform it. As Noonan (1985:126) has pointed out, manipulative verbs may encode simple cause or they may in
addition denote information about the manner of causation (force, make, persuade, threaten, let) which may be an illocutionary act (command, order, request, ask).

In Puyuma, simple causation is expressed by prefixing a causative affix *pa-* (cf. §9.2.1) to the verb, such as in (58). There is also a range of manipulative verbs that have a lexical meaning, as in (59). All three complementation strategies can be used with a manipulative verb: a full clause, an SVC or a nominalisation. An example of the SVC strategy is given in (59). The manipulative complement-taking verb is always transitive when it appears in an SVC.

(58) \[ ta=pa-drua-aw \quad kanta \quad ruma’ \]
\[
1P.GEN=CAUS-come-TR1 \quad DF.OBL/1P.PSR \quad house
\]
‘We let them come to our house.’

(59) \[ tu=bau-baii-aw=ku \quad m-uka \quad i \quad takesi-an \]
\[
3.GEN=RED-push-TR1=1S.NOM \quad ITR-go \quad LOC \quad study-NMZ
\]
‘She kept pushing me to go to school.’

Sentence (60) is an example of the nominalisation complementation strategy.

(60) \[ pa-ladram-u=ku \quad dra \quad ta-iiril-an \]
\[
CAUS-know-TR1:IMP=1S.NOM \quad ID.OBL \quad RED-write-NMZ
\]
‘Teach me to write.’

Sentence (61) and (62) exemplify full clause complements. As in an SVC, the main verb is transitive. In (61) the complement is a direct quotation, as the actual words uttered by the speaker are given in the complement. Thus (61) denotes an illocutionary act. In (62) there is equi-deletion, as described in §14.2.1.3.

(61) \[ tu=pa-kradam-aw \quad nadru \quad nantu \quad lalak \quad dra \]
\[
3.GEN=CAUS-know-TR1 \quad those.NOM \quad DF.NOM/3.PSR \quad child \quad COMP
\]

\[ tu=pa-trekler-ay=mu \quad dra \quad enay \quad i \quad adri \quad tra-trekler \]
\[
3.GEN=CAUS-drink-TR2=2P.NOM \quad ID.OBL \quad water \quad TOP \quad NEG \quad RED-drink
\]
‘She reminded her children, “If she asks you to drink water, don’t drink”.’

(62) \[ tu=sulrud-anay=ta \quad dra \quad kurenang=la \quad dra \quad trau \quad matrina \]
\[
3.GEN=push-TR3=1P.NOM \quad COMP \quad follow=PERF \quad ID.OBL \quad person \quad big
\]
‘They pushed us to grow up with others.’
15 Adverbial clauses

15.1 Introduction

According to Thompson and Longacre (1985:171), an adverbial clause is used to ‘modify another clause in a way similar to the way in which an adverb modifies a proposition’. Cristofaro (2003:155) defines an adverbial clause as one that encodes the circumstances under which the main clause event takes place. In Puyuma both adverbial and coordinate constructions can code causal, conditional, temporal, and sequential relations between two events, so it is important to distinguish adverbial and coordinate clauses on the basis of formal and not simply semantic features.

In Puyuma, coordinate clauses are usually conjoined by the coordinator aw, which also coordinates two noun phrases (Chapter 16). Adverbial clauses are often signalled by the subordinator an and often occupy the topic position, being followed by the topic marker i. The following examples serve to illustrate coordinate (1) and adverbial clauses (2)–(3) in Puyuma.

(1) mara-asatr na pasara’adr, aw, tu=alrak-aw na barasa
more-high DF.NOM Pasara’adr and 3.GEN=take-TR1 DF.NOM stone
‘The Pasara’adr family has a higher status, so, they took the stone.’

(2) an adri=driya ma-ladram, sagar m-ekan drata
when NEG=IMPF ITR-know like ITR-eat ID.OBL/1P.PSR
b<in>eray dra akan-an i, m-ekan
<PERF>give ID.OBL eat-NMZ TOP ITR-eat
‘When they didn’t know and they liked the food we gave them, they ate.’

(3) a. ka-a<ra>re’etr=ta an kadruwan=ta
ka=<RED>crowded=1P.NOM when many=1P.NOM
‘It is very crowded for us if we are large in number.’

b. an kadruwan=ta i, ka-a<ra>re’etr=ta
when many=1P.NOM TOP ka=<RED>crowded=1P.NOM
‘If we are large in number, it is very crowded.’

Two features are said to be universal to all coordinate constructions and can be used as means to differentiate adverbial clauses from coordinate clauses. First, coordinate constructions are always tense-iconic when they are used to denote temporal or clausal relations. Thus in (1) the order of the two clauses is fixed; the clause which denotes the cause
precedes the clause which denotes the result. Second, the position of the coordinator is always between the two clauses it conjoins. The fact that the subordinator is not always between the two clauses and that adverbial clauses are not always tense-iconic is shown in (2) and (3). Sentence (3) shows that the order of the adverbial clause and the main clause is reversible. However, these two features are not used as diagnostics for distinguishing coordination from subordination in Puyuma. The occurrence of the subordinator or the topic marker (or both) in adverbial clauses plays a more important role.

In the following sections, I will first investigate the general characteristics of adverbial clauses in Puyuma and then discuss their different types. The verb forms and the word order of adverbial and main clauses will also be compared. The interclausal relations discussed include temporal, causal, and conditional relations.

15.2 General characteristics

Of the three devices listed by Thompson and Longacre (1985:172–173) as marking subordinate clauses,1 two of them, namely subordinating morphemes and word order, are frequently found in adverbial clauses in Puyuma.

15.2.1 Subordinating morphemes

The free morpheme an seems to be the only subordinator in Puyuma, and it signals temporal, causal, and conditional relations. In (4)–(6) an adverbial clause introduced by an stands in a relationship of subordination to the main clause. Basically, an codes a temporal relationship as in (4), and cause (5) and condition (6) are inferred from context.2

(4) an s<em>a-sanga=ta dra derederan i,
when <ITR>RED-produce=1P.NOM ID.OBL spear TOP
m-iwa-iway
ITR-RED-hunger.strike
‘When we were making spears, they started a hunger strike.’

(5) an tu=balri-anay i, mu-trereb
when 3.GEN =wind-TR3 TOP ACAUS-fall
‘The wind blew, (so) it fell.’

(6) an sayma=ta i, ta=ka-kiteng-aw
when small=1P.NOM TOP 1P.GEN=ka-small-TR1
‘If we are small in number, we make it (a boys’ house) small.’

1 The three devices are: subordinating morphemes, word order, and a special verb form used in subordinate clauses.
2 Cristofaro (2003:161) mentions that many languages neutralise the distinction between ‘if’ conditional and ‘when’ relations, and code the two relations with the same morphology. The semantics of the two are similar, because both imply that when a given event takes place, another event also takes place. Furthermore, she writes that the semantics of reason/cause relations partially overlap with those of ‘when’ and ‘after’ relations. Both imply that the event coded by the adverbial clause is factual, and if two events are both factual and continuous in time, they may be inferred to be causally related. Thus, the ‘when’ relation is closely related to reality condition relations on the one hand, and to reason/cause relations on the other. Thus it is not odd that the subordinator an codes temporal, causal, and conditional relations in Puyuma.
The subordinator *an* also has two free variants *kan* and *ane*, but of the three, *an* is the most common form. The form *ane* seems most often to be used when the speaker is still thinking about what to say and there is very often a pause between *ane* and the clause it is introducing. The form *kan* seems to be the least used. There are two possible reasons for this. First, it is not unusual for voiceless stops to be dropped in clause-initial position. Second, this form has the same pronunciation as a taboo word in Taiwanese, so it is possible that speakers avoid it and use *an* instead. I postulate that the original form was *kan*, grammaticalised from the noun phrase marker of the definite oblique case. Discussion of *kan* as a noun phrase marker is found in §4.3.1.2.2.

Not all adverbial clauses are introduced by *an*. In some cases, an adverbial clause is marked by the topic marker *i* alone, and its relation with the main clause is implied by the context. For example, the sentences below are all marked by *i* alone, but they have respectively a temporal (7), causal (8), and conditional (9) relation to the event in the main clause.

1. **(7)**
   
   $m-u-ruma'='la$ $i$, $unian$ $tu=walak$
   
   ITR-go-house=PERF TOP not.exist 3.PSR=child
   
   ‘When he went home, his children were not there.’

2. **(8)**
   
   $ta=ka-asatr-aw$ $i$, $indang=ta$ $dra$ $apuy$
   
   1P.GEN=ka-high-TR1 TOP afraid=1P.NOM ID.OBL fire
   
   ‘We made it high because we were afraid of fire.’

3. **(9)**
   
   $unian=driya$ $dra$ $trau$ $dra$ $mangusi$ $ki-karun=ta$
   
   not.exist=IMPF ID.OBL person ID.OBL sneeze get-job=1P.NOM
   
   $i$, $i$ $likudran$ $kadru='la$ $a$ $mangusi$ $i$,
   
   TOP LOC behind there=PERF ID.NOM sneeze TOP
   
   $adri=ta='la$ $m-indang$
   
   NEG=1P.NOM=PERF ITR-afraid
   
   ‘If we go to work under the condition that no one sneezes, then in the future, if there is a sneeze, we are not afraid of it anymore.’

The majority of adverbial clauses are marked by the topic marker only. In a sample of six different texts, 100 out of 149 adverbial clauses (67.1%) are marked with the topic marker alone; 38 out of 149 (25.5%) are marked by both *an* and *i*; and only 11 out of 149 (7.4%) are marked by *an* alone. About 92.6% of the adverbial clauses are marked by *i*, which outnumbers the clauses marked by *an* (32.9%).

### 15.2.2 Word order

Diessel (2001:433) points out that the ordering of main and adverbial clauses correlates with the position of the subordinator in the subordinate clause. He finds that in languages in which adverbial clauses have a final subordinator, the adverbial clause tends to precede the main clause, whereas in languages in which adverbial clauses are marked by an initial subordinator, adverbial clauses commonly occur sentence-initially or -finally. Concerning
languages in which adverbial clauses occur in both sentence-initial and sentence-final positions, he claims that conditional clauses precede the main clause more often than temporal clauses, which in turn precede the main clause more often than causal, result, and purpose clauses.

Puyuma has an initial subordinator, and in accordance with Diessel’s prediction, adverbial clauses occur in both sentence-initial and -final position. However, of the 149 tokens examined, only four adverbial clauses (around 2.7%) follow the main clause. Furthermore, when the adverbial clause follows the main clause, it usually denotes a temporal or conditional relation. For instance:

(10)  
    ma-trangis=ku an ma-rengay=ku kandru  
    ITR-cry=1S.NOM when ITR-tell=1S.NOM that.OBL  
    ‘I cried whenever I talked about this.’

(11)  
    ka-a<ra>re’etr=ta an kadruwan=ta  
    ka-<RED>crowded=1P.NOM when many=1P.NOM  
    ‘It is very crowded for us when we are many in number.’

(12)  
    na balrakenitr i, m-u-patraran kan ka-’udal pa-ka-nguayan  
    DF.NOM bat TOP ITR-go-outside when ka-rain CAUS-ka-front  
    ‘The bat, it shows up before it rains.’

Givón (1990:844) also notes that when both preposed and postposed adverbial clauses are allowed, their properties are different. In addition to the different semantic relations they have with main clauses, the preposed adverbial clauses in Puyuma possess more topical status, as indicated by the frequent occurrence of the topic marker i. There is always a pause between a preposed adverbial clause and the main clause, but there is no intonational break before a postposed clause. In this sense, postposed adverbial clauses appear to be more integrated into the main clause.

15.3 Types of adverbial clause

As we have seen, most adverbial clauses in the Puyuma corpus code one of three types of semantic relations, namely temporal, causal, and conditional.4

15.3.1 Clauses denoting temporal relations

Adverbial clauses that denote temporal relations can be subcategorised into several classes in terms of the kinds of temporal relations they express. Different verbs and different aspect/mood markers are used to express different kinds of temporal relation. The four temporal relations discussed below are based on Cristofaro’s (2003:156) classification, which includes temporal posteriority, temporal anteriority, temporal boundary and temporal overlap.

---

4 When linguists discuss types of adverbial clauses, they often include purpose clauses (see, for example, Thompson and Longacre (1985) and Cristofaro (2003)). However, in Puyuma the purpose relation is manifested as an SVC (§13.4.5).
15.3.1.1 Temporal posteriority (‘before’ clauses)

Relations of temporal posteriority involve two events occurring in a sequence. The event denoted by the adverbial clause follows in time the event denoted by the main clause, and serves as a temporal reference point for the event in the main clause. Zeitoun’s (1997b) mentions that three morphosyntactic devices are found in Formosan languages to indicate the relation of temporal posteriority: the occurrence of a particle, the use of a locative phrase ‘in front’, or the presence of a negator. In Puyuma such a relation is indicated either by a spatial expression, *pakanguayan* ‘to put it in the front’, as in (13) and (14), or by negation, as in (15).

Notice that the adverbial clause in (13) is introduced by *ka*, and it is an SVC construction, while in (14) the adverbial clause is in the topic position, and the event in the adverbial clause is expressed by *pakanguayan* plus a nominalisation construction.

(13)  
*na balrakenitr i, m-u-patraran kan ka-'udal pa-ka-nguayan*

DF.NOM bat TOP ITR-go-out when *ka-rain CAUS-ka-front*

‘The bats, they show up before it rains.’

(14)  
*pa-ka-nguayan dratu ba-burek-an kan nanali*

CAUS-ka-front ID.OBL/3.PSR RED-return-NMZ SG.OBL my.mother

*i, b<en>ase=ku=driya draku kiruan*  
TOP <ITR>wash=1S.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL/1S.PSR clothes

‘Before my mother’s return (home), I still have to wash my own clothes.’

It is always the case that the event in the adverbial clause has not happened by the time of the event manifested in the main clause. In (13) and (14), the verbs in the ‘before’ clauses are marked as irrealis, as indicated by the prefix *ka-* or reduplication of verb stem. In (13) the sentence conveys a habitual meaning, and in (14) it depicts an event that has not yet happened. However, if both the events in the ‘before’ clause and the main clause have happened, irrealis mood is unacceptable in the ‘before’ clause. In those cases, both predicates are marked realis.

Negation is another way of expressing the ‘before’ relation. For example:

(15)  
*adri=ku=driyan m-uka i balaka i, pa-takesi=ku*

NEG=1S.NOM=IMPF ITR-go LOC overseas TOP CAUS-study=1S.NOM

*dra tilrin*  
ID.OBL book

‘Before I went overseas, I was a teacher.’

Thompson and Longacre (1985:183) point out that ‘the semantic fact that the event in the ‘before’ clause is always incomplete with respect to the main clause event is reflected in many languages in the way negation shows up in the ‘before’ clause’. Puyuma exemplifies their assertion.

---

5 Zeitoun’s (1997b) relation of posteriority refers to the ‘after’ clauses, while the relation of anteriority corresponds to the ‘before’ clauses in the present study.
15.3.1.2 Temporal anteriority (‘after’ clauses)

Like relations of temporal posteriority, relations of temporal anteriority also involve two events occurring in a sequence. There are several ways of indicating relations of temporal posteriority. First, a spatial noun *lrikudran* expressing ‘behind’ is utilised to indicate ‘after’, as in (16).

(16) \( m-uarak=ta=driya \) kadru, aw \( m-u-ruma’=ta \),
\( \text{ITR-dance=1P.NOM=IMPF there and ITR-go-home=1P.NOM} \)
\( i \ lrikudran=la \ i, \ me-nga-ngara=ta \ dratu \)
\( \text{LOC behind=PERF TOP ITR-RED-wait=1P.NOM ID.OBL/3.PSR} \)
\( \text{itatubang kana makasatr} \)
\( \text{answer DF.OBL above} \)
\( \text{‘We danced there, and we went home, and after that we waited for answers from above (God).’} \)

Another method is to use an SVC beginning with *peniya* ‘finish’ (§13.4.2).

(17) \( p<en>\text{iya}=la \) pa-ragan i maka-dare’ i,
\( \text{<ITR>finish=PERF CAUS-up LOC along-earth TOP} \)
\( \text{pa-ragan}=la \ i \ makasatr} \)
\( \text{CAUS-up=PERF LOC above} \)
\( \text{‘After they built (the thing) below, they built (the thing) above.’} \)

Sometimes, speakers use the same verb, *piya*, but without the intransitive infix, as in (18). It is not clear whether the different forms of the verb cause any difference in meaning.

(18) \( \text{piya}^6 \ g<em>aatri} na \ pasara’adr i, \ payas \ g<em>aatri} \)
\( \text{finish <ITR>pick PL.NOM Pasara’adr TOP right.away <ITR>pick} \)
\( \text{na raera’} \)
\( \text{PL.NOM Raera’} \)
\( \text{‘After the Pasara’adr family pick (the plant), the Raera’ family pick right away.’} \)

Sometimes, the sequence of two successive events is not overtly specified. In the texts, such sequences are often conjoined by the coordinator *aw* or are simply juxtaposed. In a few examples, the successive events are linked by the topic marker *i*. For example:

(19) \( m-aya-aya \ i, \ tu=atrubung-ay=ku \)
\( \text{ITR-RED-search TOP 3.GEN=meet-TR2=1S.NOM} \)
\( \text{‘She searched everywhere, and then she found me.’} \)

15.3.1.3 Temporal boundary (‘since’ and ‘until’ clauses)

Relations of temporal boundary involve two events in which the event in the adverbial clause specifies the initiation or termination of the event in the main clause. The clause denoting the temporal boundary is usually indicated by *palu* ‘demarcate’ (see also §14.3.4).

---

6 There is a homophonous prefix *piya*- indicating ‘to face towards’ (§13.4.5.1), which attaches only to direction/location nouns, and appears not to be associated with *piya* ‘finish’. For example, *piya-draya* ‘to turn to the west; to face the west’. 
Whether a *palu* clause denotes an initiation or a termination of an event seems to depend on the context. In (20) the *palu* clause specifies the initiation of the event in the main clause, while in (21) it expresses the termination. The adverbial clause in both (20) and (21) consists of *palu* and its complement, and is marked as topic.

(20)  
*palu=*ku  dra  me-rettra  i  takesi-an  kana

demarcate =1S.NOM  COMP  ITR-give.up  LOC  study-NMZ  DF.OBL

*palibak  i,  ma-ulrep  k<em>i-anger  i  nanali

first  TOP  ITR-tired  <ITR>get-thought  SG.NOM  my.mother

‘At the time I graduated from primary school, my mother started to be very worried.’

(21)  
*palu=*ku  dra  m-uka  i  takesi-an  i,

demarcate=1S.NOM  COMP  ITR-go  LOC  study-NMZ  TOP

*adri=*ku  m-a-uka  isuwa

NEG=1S.NOM  ITR-RED-go  where

‘Until I went to school, I didn’t go out much.’

Notice that raising (§14.2.1.3) occurs in the *palu* clauses; the subject =*ku* is raised from the complement clause to attach to *palu* in (20) and (21).

Not all clauses denoting an initial boundary are marked by *palu*. In the following examples the perfective marker =*la* indicates sequence.

(22)  
*mu-asal=mi  drua  i  puyuma=*la  i,

ITR-go-change=1P.NOM  come  LOC  Puyuma=PERF  TOP

*adri=*mi=la  mar-pa-na’u

NEG=1P.NOM=PERF  RECIP-CAUS-see

‘Since we moved to Puyuma, we’ve never seen each other again.’

(23)  
*tu=dr<in>ua-an=*la  na  mar-kataguin  i,  mu-basuk

3.PSR=<PERF>come-NMZ=PERF  DF.NOM  RECIP-spouse  TOP  ACAUS-happen

*mar-ka-men-i-men-i  dra  manay=driya

ID.NOM  RECIP-ka-RED-different  ID.OBL  what=IMPF

‘Since the couple came, a lot of strange things happened.’

15.3.1.4 Temporal overlap (‘when’ and ‘while’ clauses)

Relations of temporal overlap involve two events which happen simultaneously or overlap for a certain period of time.

‘When’ clauses denoting temporal overlap are marked in the same way as ‘if’ clauses denoting conditions (§15.3.3); both of them are introduced by the subordinator *an/kan/ane* (§15.2.1). The difference between a ‘when’ clause and an ‘if’ clause lies in the manifestation of realis/irrealis mood in the main clause. In a ‘when’ clause depicting temporal overlap, the event in the main clause is in realis mood. Conditional clauses are further divided into clauses denoting a past/habitual (realis) event and clauses expressing a future/counterfactual (irrealis) event.

If the two events happen simultaneously/habitually, the verb in the ‘when’ clause is marked by progressive aspect, as shown in (24) and (25); on the other hand, if the two events
only overlap at a certain point of time, the verb in the ‘when’ clause is in non-progressive aspect, as in (26) and (27).

(24) **an** *ki*<a>bulras dra manay i, salraw ma-’itrilr pabulras*
    *when* <a>borrow ID.OBL what TOP very ITR-stingy lend*
    *dra trau*
    *ID.OBL person*
    ‘Whenever they were borrowing whatever things, people were very stingy in lending money.’

(25) **an** *m-a-ekan nadru na sa-ra’ip-an i,*
    *when ITR-RED-eat those.NOM DF.NOM one-work-NMZ TOP*
    *tu=kasu-aw tu=padrekan m-u-lasedr i tralru-tralrun*
    *3.GEN=take-TR1 3.PSR=backpack ITR-go-hide LOC RED-grass*
    ‘While those colleagues were eating, she took her backpack to hide it in the field.’

(26) **idri** *na barasa i, **an** m-u-asal a*
    *this.NOM DF.NOM stone TOP when ITR-go-change ID.NOM*
    *trau, tu=adras-aw, tu=kasu-aw i saninin*
    *person 3.GEN=lift-TR1 3.GEN=take-TR1 LOC neighbouring*
    ‘This stone, when people moved, they lifted it and took it to another place.’

(27) **ane** *adalep=ta=la kia-lrutung dra basibasi i,*
    *when close=1P.NOM=PERF hunt-monkey ID.OBL festival TOP*
    *adri m-ua’i m-ekan na lrutung*
    *NEG ITR-willing ITR-eat DF.NOM monkey*
    ‘When we are near the monkey-hunting festival, the monkeys are not willing to eat.’

### 15.3.2 Reason and result clauses

Reason and result relations involve two events, one of which represents the reason for the other. In Puyuma the relations of reason and result are more often expressed by a coordinate construction (Chapter 16) than a subordinate construction, exemplified in (28). The clause expressing the reason always precedes the clause expressing the result.

(28) **mara-ma’idrang na tipul, aw pa-sa-sata=ta**
    *more-old DF.NOM Tipul and CAUS-RED-tax=1P.NOM*
    ‘Tipul is older, so we will pay them tax.’

Sometimes the reason/result relation is marked by the topic marker *i*, and in those cases the adverbial may convey a reason or a result depending on the context. For example, in sentences (29) and (30) the adverbial clauses denote the result; but in (31) the adverbial clause denotes the reason.

(29) **ta=ka-asatr-aw i, indang=ta dra apuy**
    *1P.GEN=ka-high-TR1 TOP afraid=1P.NOM ID.OBL fire*
    ‘We lifted it, because we are afraid of fire.’
Adverbial clauses

15.3.3 Conditional clauses

Conditional relations involve two events, one of which is the condition for the occurrence of the other. Thompson and Longacre (1985:190) divide conditional clauses into two major categories in terms of the events depicted being real or unreal. Basically, all conditional clauses in Puyuma must be introduced by the general subordinator an/kan/ane, described in §15.2.1, which I will gloss ‘when’ (for real events) or ‘if’ (for unreal events).

15.3.3.1 Clauses denoting real events

Conditionals that denote real events are those that refer to ‘real’ present, habitual/generic, or past situations. For example, in (32) an elder is teaching the young ones about the traditions, which can be regarded as either past or habitual/generic situations. Sentence (33) also depicts a habitual/generic situation. Example (34) on the other hand expresses a ‘real’ present. As can be seen from the examples, the events are coded as realis.

(32) ane kirtrebung=ta dra ma-‘idrang-an dra ma-sangal when come.across=1P.NOM ID.OBL ITR-old-COL ID.OBL ITR-carry
    dra basak i, ta=araw-ay, ta=pulang-ay ID.OBL luggage TOP 1P.GEN=rob-TR2 1P.GEN=help-TR2
    ‘When we come across a senior carrying luggage, we take it over from him and help him.’

(33) an ma-trina i, sadru when ITR-big TOP many
    ‘If (the boys’ house) is big, (the bamboos we need) are many.’

(34) an unian=yu dra angadr-an i, getilr kadrini when not.exist=2S.NOM ID.OBL breath-NMZ TOP pinch here
    ‘If you are out of breath, pinch here.’

15.3.3.2 Clauses denoting unreal events

Thompson and Longacre (1985:191) distinguish various subtypes of unreal events, but Puyuma does not distinguish these morphosyntactically. All unreal events are indicated by an irrealis marker (usually Ca-reduplication (§3.4.2), ka-marking (§6.6), or affixation of <a> (§3.4.2.3)) on the verb.
(35) an maranger=yu mi-temuwan i, a manay ka-kua=ta
if want=2S.NOM have-grandchild TOP ID.NOM what RED-say=1P.NOM
‘If you want to have (adopt) a grandson, what can we say?’

(36) an ku<a>renang dra a-uka-an i tipul i, adri
if <a>follow ID.OBL RED-go-NMZ LOC Tipul TOP NEG
pa-pilang-i m-u-ruma’
RED-bring-TR2 ITR-go-house
‘If she wants to follow to go to Tipul, don’t bring her home.’

(37) an adri ta=trakra-trakraw-i i, ka-ulrid=ta
if NEG 1P.GEN=RED-frame-TR2:IMP TOP ka-don’t.know=1P.NOM
m-u-sabak
ITR-go-inside
‘If we don’t make a frame, we won’t be able to get in.’

(38) ka-a<ra>re’etr=ta an kadruwan=ta
ka-<RED>crowded=1P.NOM when many=1P.NOM
‘It is very crowded for us when we are many in number.’
16 Coordination

16.1 Introduction

This chapter deals with coordinate constructions. Coordination constructions are defined by Haspelmath (2004) as ‘syntactic constructions in which two or more units of the same type are combined into a larger unit and still have the same semantic relations with other surrounding elements’. This discussion of coordination is not confined to coordination of clauses, but also includes that of noun phrases. I will first present the general characteristics of coordination in Puyuma, and then explore how coordination is employed in different syntactic structures.

16.2 General characteristics of coordination

16.2.1 The intonation patterns

Mithun (1988:331–333) points out that, cross-linguistically, coordination is signalled intonationally in one of two ways: (i) the coordinate constituents may be combined with no intonation break, or, (ii) they may be separated by a pause and a special non-final pitch contour. In the case of Puyuma, the second strategy is employed. There is a pause between coordinated constituents, and all the non-final constituents in a coordinate sequence have a rising contour. If there is a conjunction, there may be a pause before it, and must be a pause after it. The constituent before the conjunction ends in a pitch rise. Both the conjunction and the final constituent end in pitch falls. Sentence (1) is an example of coordinate NPs, and (2) is an example of coordinate clauses.

(1) \( \text{<ITR>start RECIP-contact DF:OBL Westerner and DF:OBL Chin.dynasty} \)

‘They started to have contact with the Westerners and the Chin government.’

(2) \( \text{3.GEN=catch-TR1 3.GEN=slave-TR1 3.GEN=slap.in.the.face-TR1} \)

‘They caught them, made them slaves, slapped them in the face, made them work hard, and made them cleave bamboo.’
As can be seen from the examples, only the last constituent in a coordinate construction is marked by the final contour. The comma between the coordinate constituents indicates there is a pause between them.

16.2.2 Types and position of coordinators

Coordinate constructions may or may not have an overt coordinator. Those without one are termed asyndetic coordination, while those that have some overt marking are syndetic coordination.

16.2.2.1 Asyndetic coordination

According to Stassen (2000:8) and Mithun (1988:332), when a coordinate construction has no overt coordinator, it often indicates a ‘list-like’ enumeration, as in (3), or encodes pairs which habitually go together and can be said to form a conventionalised whole or a conceptual unit, as in (4).

(3) \( ta=puka-ay \) dra palrubelrub i sabak dra kalang.  
\( 1P.GEN=put-TR2 \) ID.OBL filling LOC inside ID.OBL crab  
\( dra \) patraka dra in-iyam-an dra ni-rames  
ID.OBL meat ID.OBL PERF-salt-NMZ ID.OBL PERF-pickled  
‘We put filling inside (made of) crab meat, meat, or pickled vegetables.’

(4) na ni-reput-an tu=lrudus tu=rami  
DF.NOM PERF-cut-NMZ 3.PSR=tail 3.PSR=root  
‘Both ends are cut.’

Asyndetic coordination not only occurs in noun phrase coordination, but also in clausal coordination.

Both Stassen (2000:10) and Mithun (1988:353–357) also say that zero-marked coordination tends to be marginalised into specific functions or becomes replaced by an overt marking strategy. Mithun suggests that this is due to increase in literacy. Zero-marked coordination, marked by intonation alone, is functionally well adapted to spoken language, but written language, which does not have the aid of intonation, requires a more overt marking.

In Puyuma the need for overt marking in written language is important also because of the difficulty of differentiating a modifying construction from a coordinate noun phrase construction without an overt coordinator. Compare (5) and (6).

(5) na sa-sunan na dawa na ni-resiyuk  
DF.NOM RED-offer DF.NOM millet DF.NOM PERF-cook  
‘the cooked millet for offering’

(6) maumau na pasara’adr na raera’ na miasama  
only DF.NOM Pasara’adr DF.NOM Raera DF.NOM one  
\( na \) temaramaw  
DF.NOM witch  
‘only the Pasara’adr family, the Raera’ family, and some witches’
Coordination

In the modifying construction in (5) all three (small) noun phrases are marked by the same case marker, but there is no pause between them, as they do not refer to three different entities but to one. Sentence (6) is a coordinate construction with three (large) noun phrases conjoined, and the first and second are separated by pauses, as is indicated by the commas. The last conjoined constituent is a (large) noun phrase consisting of two (small) noun phrases: a modifier miasama, and a PIBU temaramaw, and there is no pause between them.

Perhaps speakers are also aware of the possibility of ambiguity, since in the Puyuma textbook that a group of Puyuma people have edited, the editors tend to use an overt coordinator more often than most Puyuma speakers do in speech. For example, in the following sentence, from the textbook, the coordinator is used heavily.

(7) na puran i, tu=ale’el-an dra mumu-an, aw DF.NOM betelnut TOP 3.PSR=chew-NMZ ID.OBL grandparent-COL and tu=kalalegi dra trangkangkar, aw dra temaramaw, aw 3.PSR=offering ID.OBL priest and ID.OBL witch and tu=pa-ra-redek kana baeba-an na ma’ainayan 3.PSR=CAUS-RED-arrive ID.OBL older.sibling-COL DF.NOM male

‘The betelnuts, they are grandparents’ chewing gum, priests’ and witches’ sacrificial offering, and the elder brothers’ gifts to be sent to the brides when they get married.’

Although we come across zero-marked coordination often in speech, inserting a coordinator is always acceptable.

16.2.2.2 Syndetic coordination

There are two coordinators in Puyuma: aw ‘and’ and amuna ‘but’. While aw can be used in both nominal and clausal coordination, amuna occurs only in clausal coordination. For example, in (8) aw conjoins two locative noun phrases, and in (9) it coordinates two clauses. In (10), amuna conjoins two clauses. Both coordinators go between the constituents that are connected. The elements conjoined in the following sentences are underlined.

(8) adri=ku ra-rengay kandru kana ni-rebuwa-an NEG=1S.NOM RED-tell those.OBL DF.OBL PERF-origin-NMZ

kadri i panapanayan aw kadri i ma’idrang
here LOC Panapanayan and here LOC Ma’idrang

‘I won’t talk about the origin in Panapanayan and in Ma’idrang.’

(9) tu=ka-ladram-aw=la aw tu=kiumal-ay i temutaw 3.GEN=ka-know-TR1=PERF and 3.GEN=ask-TR2 SG.NOM his.grandparent

‘He knew about it, and he asked his grandmother.’

(10) uliya kadri i ami a salraw bulray, amuna exist here LOC north ID.NOM very beautiful but
mi-a-wali nantaw k<em>a
have-a-teeth DF.NOM/3.PSR <ITR>say
‘It was said that here in the north, there is a very beautiful (woman) but she has teeth (in her private parts).’

Haspelmath (2004:7) distinguishes two patterns of monosyndetic coordination where the coordinator occurs between constituents: A co-B, A-co B. That is, if languages employ a medial connective, the medial connective has greater structural cohesion either with the second constituent or with the first constituent. The two types can be distinguished by intonation, pauses, discontinuous order, or phonological alternations. In Puyuma, both aw and amuna have a greater cohesion with the second constituent. Although a pause may occur after aw/amuna, a pause before aw/amuna is obligatory.

When there are more than two coordinands, often only the last coordinator is retained. For example:

(11) pakumau dratu s<in>a-salrem, dratu teliu.
confirm ID.OBL/3.PSR <PERF>RED-sow ID.OBL/3.PSR bud
aw dratu ika-u<lra>lrane kana tralrun
and ID.OBL/3.PSR ika-<RED>fat DF.OBL grass
‘Check its sowing, its buds, and how the weeds grow.’

(12) pu-a-bini, me-la-latudr, aw me-re<a>ani’
put-a-seed ITR-RED-weed and ITR-<RED>reap
‘They are sowing, weeding, and reaping.’

In addition to functioning as a formal marker of syntactic coordination, aw can also serve as a pause filler to indicate that the sentence is not yet over. For example:

(13) ma-dra-drayar nadru na miadrua na mar-kataguin
ITR-RED-discuss those.NOM DF.NOM two DF.NOM RECIP-married

dra m-u-dawil-a=ta=la kadrini k<em>a, aw,
ID.OBL/3.PSR ITR-go-far-PJ=1P.NOM=PERF here <ITR>say and
tu=u-isatr-ay tu=in-u-isatr-an na taleb
3.GEN=go-up-TR2 ID.OBL/3.PSR=PERF-go-up-NMZ DF.NOM raft
‘The couple were discussing it (and saying), “Let’s get away from here” they said, and …, they went on the raft that they had come on.’

The coordinator also often follows the demonstrative verb kemadru (§4.5.3.5) and together they form a fixed expression. In this case, the pause is after aw, not before it.

(14) k<em>a-adru=la aw, mi-walak=la i, adri
<ITR>there=PERF and have-child=PERF TOP NEG

tu=pa-ka-ladram-i a trau
3.GEN=CAUS-ka-know-TR2 ID.NOM person
‘So it was, and she had a child, she didn’t let others know.’

Mithun (1988:356) and Chafe (1985) point out that in the usage of English, speakers use more sentence-initial coordinators than writers do to link new sentences to previous discourse. This seems to be true in the case of Puyuma too.
16.3 Types of coordination

Two types of coordination are distinguished: noun phrase coordination and clausal coordination.

16.3.1 Coordination of noun phrases

In most cases, coordinate noun phrases are marked by the same case, which may be indicated by an identical noun phrase marker (as in (15)–(18)) or by pronouns of the same case (as in (19)).

(15) \( \text{idru na m-u-am} \), aw \( \text{na m-u-timulr} \)
\( \text{those.NOM DF.NOM ITR-go-north and DF.NOM ITR-go-south} \)
\( \text{i, mukasa m-uka?} \)
\( \text{TOP together ITR-go} \)
‘Those who go north and those who go south, do they go together?’

(16) \( \text{i namali, aw i baeli} \)
\( \text{SG.NOM my.father and SG.NOM my.older.sibling} \)
‘my father and my brother’

(17) \( \text{k<em>asu=ta dra eraw, dra irupan} \)
\( \text{<ITR>bring=1P.NOM ID.OBL wine ID.OBL dishes} \)
‘We brought some wine and some dishes.’

(18) \( \text{kadri i panapanayan, aw kadri i m'ai'drang} \)
\( \text{here LOC Panapanayan and here LOC Ma'idrang} \)
‘here in Panapanayan and in Ma'idrang’

(19) \( \text{ta=bakbak-aw nantu are'etr-an, tu=sepal-an} \)
\( \text{1P.GEN=disentangle-TR1 DF.NOM/3.PSR squeeze-NMZ 3.PSR=sad-NMZ} \)
\( \text{nantu k<in>a-unian-an dratu trau i sabak} \)
\( \text{DF.NOM/3.PSR < PERF>ka-not.exist-NMZ ID.OBL/3.PSR person LOC inside} \)
‘We relieve (disentangle) their aching hearts, their sadness, and their loss of their family.’

Free pronouns can also be coordinated, and they too have the same case. For example:

(20) \( \text{kuiku aw taytaw i, mare-kataguin} \)
\( \text{1S.NEU and 3.NEU TOP RECIP-spouse} \)
‘He and I are husband and wife.’

However, I have found one example where \( \text{aw} \) does not connect two coordinands with the same case. Consider:

(21) \( \text{m-u-a-ruma'=mi kay nanali, aw i baeli} \)
\( \text{ITR-go-a-house=1P.ECL.NOM KAY my.mother and SG.NOM my.elder.sibling} \)
‘We went home with my mother and my elder sister.’

In this example, there are three coordinands, =mi, nanali, and baeli. While =mi and baeli are nominative, nanali is preceded by the marker kay.
The marker *kay* only precedes personal nouns. It is hard to decide whether *kay* is a linker conjoining two non-case-marked noun phrases or a comitative marker assigning oblique case to the noun phrase following it, like ‘with’ in English.¹

First, it could be a linker, which conjoins two nouns (XPs, in the terms of Chapter 5), as represented in (22). That is, the case role is assigned to the pair of coordinands by the noun phrase marker preceding the first coordinand. This hypothesis is reasonable when the coordinands are preceded by the noun phrase marker *na*, which indicates the personal noun is plural (§4.3.1.2.2). For example:

(22) \[ \text{tu}=\text{pu}^\text{-}\text{aputr}-\text{ay}, \quad \text{tu}=\text{pu}^\text{-}\text{kiping}-\text{ay}, \quad \text{tu}=\text{pu}^\text{-}\text{dare}-\text{ay} \]
\[
\begin{array}{l}
3.\text{GEN}=\text{CAUS-flower-TR2} & 3.\text{GEN}=\text{CAUS-clothes-TR2} & 3.\text{GEN}=\text{CAUS-earth-TR2} \\
\end{array}
\]
\[
\begin{array}{l}
da\text{ra akan-an} \quad \text{na} \quad \{\text{namali} \quad \text{kay} \quad \text{baeli}\} \\
\end{array}
\]
\[
\begin{array}{l}
it\text{id.OBL eat-NMZ PL.NOM my.father KAY my.elder.sibling} \\
\end{array}
\]

‘They offered my father and my brother flowers, put clothes on them, and put food on the ground for them.’

However, in some cases the first noun phrase is preceded by *i* (which marks a personal noun as singular) instead of *na*, as in (23), and this in turn suggests that *kay* is more like a comitative marker. For example:

(23) \[ \text{ta}=\text{temuwamuwan} \quad \text{i} \quad \text{adulrumaw} \quad \text{kay} \quad \text{adulrusaw} \]
\[
1P.PSR=\text{ancestor} \quad \text{SG.NOM} \quad \text{Adulrumaw} \quad \text{KAY} \quad \text{Adulrusaw} \\
\text{‘our ancestors Adulrumaw and Adulrusaw’} \]

In fact, even in the same text, the speaker sometimes uses *na* and *i* interchangeably in a *kay*-construction. For example, the following two sentences are taken from the same text; in (24) the first noun phrase is preceded by *na*, but in (25) the first noun phrase is preceded by *i*.

(24) \[ \text{na} \quad \text{demalasaw} \quad \text{kay} \quad \text{tayban} \quad \text{mi-anger} \ldots \]
\[
\begin{array}{l}
\text{PL.NOM} \quad \text{Demalasaw} \quad \text{KAY} \quad \text{Tayban} \quad \text{have-thought} \\
\text{‘Demalasaw and Tayban thought …’} \\
\end{array}
\]

(25) \[ \text{i} \quad \text{tayban} \quad \text{kay} \quad \text{demalasaw} \quad \text{tu}=\text{ki}-\text{anger}-\text{aw} \]
\[
\begin{array}{l}
\text{SG.NOM} \quad \text{Tayban} \quad \text{KAY} \quad \text{Demalasaw} \quad 3.\text{GEN}=\text{get-thought-TR1} \\
\text{idrini \quad \text{na} \quad \text{lemak} \\
\text{this.NOM} \quad \text{DF.NOM} \quad \text{thing} \\
\text{‘Tayban and Demalasaw remembered this thing.’} \\
\end{array}
\]

As well as being an additive conjunction, *aw* can connect two noun phrases to express alternation.² In such cases, the meaning is inferred from the context, as in (26). Notice that although the noun phrase marker *na* occurs three times, there are only two noun phrases. The

---

¹ There is one example suggesting that *kay* might be a verb. In this sentence, it appears in clause-initial position, and it attracts a pronominal clitic and an aspectual clitic, and expresses a comitative meaning.

\[ \text{andaman} \quad \text{i}, \quad \text{kay}=\text{ta}=\text{driya} \quad \text{pa-ka-ladram-a} \]
\[
\begin{array}{l}
days.later \quad \text{TOP} \quad \text{with}=1P.NOM=\text{IMPF} \quad \text{CAUS-ka-know-PJ} \\
\text{‘A few days later, we all went together to let people know (about this).’} \\
\end{array}
\]

² There are two other ways of indicating ‘or’. *Andri* ‘if not’ is typically used in alternative questions (§12.3.2), and the tag *nay* ‘or’ (§4.5.6) often cooccurs with *ala* ‘maybe’ to express uncertainty.
first coordinand is an NP with a modifier (in which there is no pause between the NP and the modifier).

(26) *driyama na ni-reani na dawa, aw na lrumay ...*

so DF.NOM PERF-reap DF.NOM millet and DF.NOM rice

‘So, the reaped millet or rice …’

16.3.2 Coordination of clauses

Unlike the coordination of noun phrases, in which the linear order of the coordinands is irrelevant in interpreting the meaning, coordination of clauses is of two types: (i) symmetrical, in which the reversing of the linear order of the coordinands has no semantic significance, and (ii) asymmetrical, in which reversing their order will cause a change in meaning.

16.3.2.1 Symmetrical coordination

This type of coordination is usually used to give list-like enumerations (as in (27)) or to describe simultaneous events (as in (28) and (29)). Sometimes the coordinands are simply synonyms, as in (30). In (27), there are four coordinands. The last three clauses do not involve ordered temporal or causal relationships.

(27) *mi-ka-kuwang-an=driyan a trau, aw tu=kuwang-aw have-RED-shoot-NMZ=IMPF ID.NOM person and 3.GEN=shoot-TR1

a trau, aw tu=patrepel-aw a trau, aw

ID.NOM person and 3.GEN=mistake-TR1 ID.NOM person

*tu=patrepel-aw t<em>akis a trau 3.GEN=mistake-TR1 <ITR>chop ID.NOM person

‘People still owned guns, and they shot people, and they mistook people, and they chopped people mistakenly.’

(28) *ina leap i, *tralinrin, aw ulingul

DF.NOM straw.mat TOP cool and fragrant

‘The straw mat is cool and fragrant.’

(29) *ama=a, *nu=na’u-ay=mi, *nu=kilengaw-ay

father=VCT 2S.GEN=see-TR2=1P.NOM 2S.GEN=listen-TR2

*naniam kia’anum*

DF.NOM/1P.PSR petition

‘Father, you look after us, and you listen to our petitions.’

(30) *ta=banban-aw, ta=bakbak-aw nantu

1P.GEN=release-TR1 1P.GEN=disentangle-TR1 DF.NOM/3.PSR

*are’etr-an*

squeeze-NMZ

‘We release and disentangle their aching hearts.’
16.3.2.2 Asymmetrical coordination

In asymmetrical coordination the order of the coordinands is fixed; reversing the order will alter the meaning.

The most common type of relationship between coordinate clauses in narrative is one of sequence. For example:

(31) \(tu=pilang-aw\) \(m-u-ruma\) \(aw\) \(tu=pa-riya-aw\)  
3.GEN=bring-TR1 ITR-go-house and 3.GEN=CAUS-drunk-TR1  
‘He brought her home and made her drunk.’

(32) \(m-ekun\) \(aw\) \(tu=wadi\) \(kurenang\) \(i\) \(rikudran\)  
ITR-jump and 3.PSR=younger.brother follow LOC behind  
‘He jumped, and then his younger brother followed behind.’

Also very frequent is implied consequence, as in (33) and (34).

(33) \(mu-trepa\) \(tu=drekal\) \(aw\) \(mar-ka-la-la’udr\) \(a\) \(trau\)  
ACAUSS-aim 3.PSR=village and RECIP-ka-RED-drown ID.NOM person  
‘The village was targeted (by a typhoon), and people were drowned one by one (as a result).’

(34) \(sa1raw\) \(igelra\) \(pa-ka-la-ladram\) \(dra\) \(trau\), \(aw\)  
very embarrassed CAUS-ka-RED-know ID.OBL person and  
\(tu=lase-lasedr-aw\) \(tu=tiyal=dar\)  
3.GEN=RED-hide-TR1 3.PSR=belly=FREQ  
‘She is very embarrassed to let others know (that she’s pregnant), so she often hides her belly (from others).’

16.3.2.3 Ellipsis in clausal coordination

Ellipsis happens when there are identical elements in the clausal coordinands. There are two kinds of ellipsis: nominal and verbal. Nominal ellipsis is restricted to free NPs; clitic pronouns cannot be omitted, as shown in (37). In (35) and (36), the NP underlined can appear either in the first clause or in the second clause. Notice that in (36) the NP plays different roles in the two clauses and is marked for different cases. (37) shows that clitic pronouns cannot be ellipsed or a different meaning will emerge.

(35) \(tu=alru-aw\) \(idru\) \(na\) \(bulrabulrayan\), \(tu=abak-aw\)  
3.GEN=lift-TR1 that.NOM DF.NOM girl 3.GEN=pack-TR1  
[ ] \(kana\) \(trabak\)  
[that girl] DF.OBL box  
‘They lifted up the girl and packed her into the box.’

(36) a. \(tu=pukpuk-aw=ku\), \(aw\) \(<\text{en}>uwar\) \(i\) \(pilay\)  
3.GEN=beat-TR1=1S.NOM and <ITR>run.away SG.NOM Pilay  
‘Pilay beat me and then ran away.’

b. \(tu=pukpuk-aw=ku\) \(kan\) \(pilay\) \(aw\) \(<\text{en}>uwar\)  
3.GEN=beat-TR1=1S.NOM SG.OBL Pilay and <ITR>run.away  
‘Pilay beat me and then ran away.’
(37) a.  \textit{ku=pukpuk-aw i pilay, aw p<en>_uwar=ku}  \\
1S.GEN=beat-TR1 SG.NOM Pilay and <ITR>run.away=1S.NOM  \\
‘I beat Pilay and then ran away.’

b.  \textit{ku=pukpuk-aw i pilay, aw p<en>_uwar}  \\
1S.GEN=beat-TR1 SG.NOM Pilay and <ITR>run.away  \\
‘I beat Pilay and then she ran away.’

If the coordinands are two SVCs and the first verb of each is identical, that verb can be omitted from the second clause. For example, in (38) the verb phrase \textit{sagar=ku} ‘I like’ is omitted in the second clause, and in (39) and (40) \textit{muka} is omitted in the second clause.

(38) \textit{paru-ma-trina=ku=la i, sagar=ku <em>senay}  \\
gradual-ITR-big=1S.NOM=PERF TOP like=1S.NOM <ITR>sing  \\
aw [ ] m-uarak  \\
and ITR-dance  \\
‘When I grew up, I liked singing and (I liked) dancing.’

(39) \textit{tu=daul-aw=ku=la dra kemay maka-satr dra}  \\
3.GEN=call.on-TR1=PERF ID.OBL from along-above ID.OBL

\textit{seihu m-uka b<en>_a-bati-a, [ ] pa-sena-senay-a}  \\
government ITR-go <ITR>RED-tell-PJ CAUS-RED-sing-PJ  \\
‘The government called on me to go making speeches and (go making) singing performances.’

(40) \textit{m-uka m-u-sabak-a aw [ ] mi-walak-a=la i, ...}  \\
ITR-go ITR-go-inside-PJ and have-child-PJ=PERF TOP  \\
‘They got married and had a baby, …’

16.3.3 Adversative coordination

Adversative coordination is expressed by \textit{amuna} ‘but’. This element only connects clauses, as in (41).

(41) \textit{uliya kadri i ami a salraw bulray amuna}  \\
exist here LOC north ID.NOM very beautiful but

\textit{mi-a-wali nantaw k<em>_a}  \\
have-a-teeth DF.NOM/3.PSR <ITR>say  \\
‘It was said that here in the north, there is a very beautiful (woman) but she has teeth (in her private parts).’
Appendix I

A list of transcribed texts used in the grammar

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Speakers</th>
<th>Genre</th>
<th>Length (approx.)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 A prayer to the ancestors</td>
<td>Chen, De-fu</td>
<td>prayer</td>
<td>1 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Monkey ritual</td>
<td>Chen, De-fu</td>
<td>narrative</td>
<td>10 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 How to build a <em>trakuban</em> (boys’ house)</td>
<td>Chen, De-fu and Lin, Zhi-mei and a male</td>
<td>procedure + conversation</td>
<td>33 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 A tale of two brothers</td>
<td>Chen, Guang-rueng</td>
<td>folktale</td>
<td>15 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 The teaching of the elders</td>
<td>Chen, Guang-rueng</td>
<td>teaching</td>
<td>4 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 The origin of our tribe</td>
<td>Chen, Guang-rueng</td>
<td>narrative</td>
<td>5 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 A tale of <em>Dradrengaw</em></td>
<td>Chen, Guang-rueng</td>
<td>folktale</td>
<td>35 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 The history of Puyuma</td>
<td>Chen, Guang-rueng</td>
<td>narrative</td>
<td>25 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 The duties of Puyuma women</td>
<td>Chen, Guang-rueng</td>
<td>narrative</td>
<td>13 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 Isaw’s story</td>
<td>Lin, Hao-xun</td>
<td>narrative</td>
<td>22 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11 <em>Kuma</em> (Isaw’s pet)</td>
<td>Lin, Hao-xun</td>
<td>narrative</td>
<td>12 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12 A smart grandmother</td>
<td>Lin, Hao-xun</td>
<td>folktale</td>
<td>17 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 How to make <em>binariyaw</em> sticky rice cake (a traditional dish)</td>
<td>Lin, Hao-xun</td>
<td>procedure</td>
<td>5 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14 Isaw’s dream</td>
<td>Lin, Hao-xun</td>
<td>narrative</td>
<td>2 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15 The convention of <em>puadrangi</em> (a ritual)</td>
<td>Lin, Qing-mei</td>
<td>procedure</td>
<td>3 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16 A prayer for Isaw</td>
<td>Lin, Qing-mei</td>
<td>prayer</td>
<td>13 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17 The origin of millet</td>
<td>Lin, Qing-mei</td>
<td>folktale</td>
<td>6 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18 A tale of two brothers</td>
<td>Lin, Qing-mei</td>
<td>folktale</td>
<td>8 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19 The girl and the deer</td>
<td>Lin, Qing-mei</td>
<td>folktale</td>
<td>7 min</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 The titles are named by myself according to the content of the texts.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Speakers</th>
<th>Genre</th>
<th>Length (approx.)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>20 The origin of wasps</td>
<td>Lin, Qing-mei</td>
<td>folktale</td>
<td>8 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21 The change in the river’s course</td>
<td>Lin, Qing-mei</td>
<td>narrative</td>
<td>10 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22 A conversation</td>
<td>Lin, Qing-mei and her husband and visitors</td>
<td>conversation</td>
<td>4 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23 The training in a (boys’ house) trakuban</td>
<td>Lin, Zhi-cheng</td>
<td>narrative</td>
<td>15 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24 A heartless mother</td>
<td>Tseng, Xiou-hua</td>
<td>folktale</td>
<td>13 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25 Sea worship</td>
<td>Zhou, Xi-shu and Lin, Hao-xun</td>
<td>conversation</td>
<td>48 min</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26 A sermon</td>
<td>Wu, Xian-ming and Cheng, Yu-chiao</td>
<td>sermon</td>
<td>32 min</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Appendix II

A: Prefixation

Prefixation is the most productive affixation process in Puyuma. Some frequently appearing prefixes and examples are given below.

**ika-** ‘the shape of; forming; shaping’ (§7.3.4.1)

- **ika-ta-tigir** ‘the forming of a building’, < *tigir* ‘to build’
- **ika-ulrane-an** ‘one’s fat figure’, < *ulrane* ‘fat’

**ka-** ‘stative marker’ (§6.6)

**kara-** ‘collective; to do something together’

- **kara-ekan** ‘to eat together’, < *ekan* ‘to eat’
- **kara-na’u** ‘to watch together’, < *na’u* ‘to watch’

**kare-** ‘the number of times’

- **kare-pa-pat** ‘four times’, < *pat* ‘four’
- **kare-la-luwatr** ‘five times’, < *luwatr* ‘five’

**ki-** ‘to get something’; ‘to be V-ed (volitionally)’ (§9.6)

- **ki-’aputr** ‘to pick flowers’, < *’aputr* ‘flower’
- **ki-abak** ‘to be loaded’, < *abak* ‘to contain’
- **ki-beray** ‘to be given’, < *beray* ‘to give’
- **ki-kawi** ‘to hack wood’, < *kawi* ‘tree; timber’
- **ki-lengaw** ‘to listen’, < *lengaw* ‘sound’

**kir-** ‘to go against (volitionally)’

- **kir-trubung** ‘to bump into, to meet unexpectedly’, < *trubung* ‘meet’
- **kir-’etreb** ‘to be equal to’, < *’etreb* ‘companion’
- **kir-ngitra** ‘to be shoulder to shoulder’, < *ngitra* ‘shoulder’
- **kir-balribalri** ‘to face the wind’, < *balri* ‘wind’

**kitu-** ‘to become’

- **kitu-bulray** ‘to dress up; to become a young lady’, < *bulray* ‘beautiful’
- **kitu-bangsar** ‘to become a matured young man’, < *bangsar* ‘handsome’

**kur-** ‘be exposed to; be together (passively)’

- **kur-turus** ‘to be followed closely’, < *turus* ‘follow’
- **kur-panana** ‘to get hurt’, < *panana* ‘hurt’
- **kur-abak** ‘to be trapped’, < *abak* ‘to contain, to pack’
- **kur-na’u** ‘obvious’, < *na’u* ‘to see’
m- ‘actor voice affix/intransitive affix’ (§6.2 and §8.4.4)
ma- ‘actor voice affix/intransitive affix’ (§6.2 and §8.4.4)

maka- ‘along; to face against’
   maka-dare ‘lower levels; underside’, < dare ‘earth; dirt’
   maka-’iringidan ‘along the edge’, < ’iringidan ‘edge’
   maka-biruwa-ruwa ‘face the spirits/ghosts’, < biruwa ‘ghost’

mara- ‘comparative /superlative marker’
   mara-’idrang ‘older’, < -’idrang ‘old’

mar(e)- ‘reciprocal; plurality of relations’ (§9.3)
mi- ‘to have; to use’ (§10.4.6.2)
mu- ‘anticausative marker’ (§9.5)

mutu- ‘to become, to transform into’
   mutu-yawan ‘become a chief’, < yawan ‘chief’
   mutu-suan ‘become a dog’, < suan ‘dog’

pa-/p- ‘causative marker’ (§9.2.1)

pu- ‘put’
   pu-bini ‘sow’ < bini ‘seed’
   pu-kiping ‘put clothes on s.b.’ < kiping ‘clothes’
   pu-ngalrad ‘give a name to s.b.’ < ngalrad ‘name’

puka- ‘ordinal numeral marker’ (§4.5.4.3)
   puka-enem ‘the sixth’, < enem ‘six’

piya- ‘to face a certain direction’
   piya-ami ‘to face the north’, < ami ‘north’

si- ‘to pretend to’
   si-alra-alrak ‘to pretend to take something’, < alrak ‘to take’
   si-ulri-ulrid ‘to pretend not to understand’, < -ulrid ‘to not know’

tara- ‘to use (an instrument), to speak (a language)’
   t<em>ara-puyuma ‘speak Puyuma’

tinu- ‘to simulate’
   tinu-ma’idrang ‘the ones who imitate the elders’, < ma’idrang ‘old’
   tinu-yawan ‘the one who imitate the chief’, < yawan ‘chief’

 tua- ‘to make; to form’
   tua-eraw ‘to make wine’, < eraw ‘wine’
   tua-abay ‘to make sticky rice cake’, <abay ‘sticky rice cake’
   tua-drekal ‘to form a village’, < drekal ‘village’

u- ‘to go’
   u-sabak ‘go inside’, < sabak ‘inside’
   u-isatr ‘go up’, < isatr ‘above’

1 Whether the affix denotes comparative or superlative meaning depends on intonation.
Appendix II

ya- ‘to belong to’

ya-timulr ‘belong to the south’, < timulr ‘south’

ya- ‘nominaliser’ (§7.3.4.2)

B: Suffixation

Puyuma has ten suffixes, half of them marking the transitivity of a given clause. A list of suffixes is given below.

-<a> ‘projective marker’ (§6.3.2.1)
-<a> ‘numeral classifier’ (§4.5.4.2)
-<an> ‘nominaliser’ (§7.3)

asatr-an ‘height’, < asatr ‘high’
akan-an ‘food’, < akan ‘eat’
sa-sede-an ‘holiday’, < sede ‘interrupt’

-an ‘collective/plural marker’

ma’idrang-an ‘old people’, < ma’idrang ‘old’
wari-an ‘days’, < wari ‘day’

-anay ‘conveyance voice affix/transitive affix’ (§6.2 and §8.4.4)
-<aw> ‘patient voice affix/transitive affix’ (§6.2 and §8.4.4)
-<ay> ‘locative voice affix/transitive affix’ (§6.2 and §8.4.4)
-i ‘imperative transitive marker’ (§12.2)
-u ‘imperative transitive marker’ (§12.2)

C: Infixation

Only three infixes are found, and they are given below.

<in> ‘perfective marker’ (§7.3.1)
<em> ‘actor voice affix/intransitive affix’ (§6.2 and §8.4.4)

D: Circumfixation

There are six circumfixes found in the corpus. In some cases, it is difficult to decide if a given circumfix should be decomposed into a prefix and a suffix.

<in>-anan ‘the members of’

dr<in>ekal-anan ‘the whole villagers’, < drekal ‘village’

ka--an ‘a period of time’

ka-salrem-an ‘the cultivating season’, < salrem ‘to plant; to cultivate’

muri--an ‘the way one is doing something; the way something was done’
muri-sa’eru-an ‘the way one laughs’, < sa’eru ‘laugh’
muri-ami-an ‘the way various age groups were formed’ < ami ‘year’
muri-trau-an ‘the way families were formed; society’, < trau ‘person’
sa--an ‘people doing things together’
  sa-ra’ip-an ‘people sowing together’ < ra’ip ‘sow’

sa--enan ‘people belonging to the same community’
  sa-ruma’-enan ‘relatives’, < ruma’ ‘house; home’
  sa-drekal-enan ‘villagers’, < drekal ‘village’

si--an ‘nominaliser’ (§7.3.4.3)
  si-druma-an ‘nonlocal’, < druma ‘other’

Ca--an ‘collectivity, plurality’ (or CVCV—an)
  wa-wadi-an ‘brothers and sisters’, < wadi ‘younger sibling’
  ma-’idra-’idrang-an ‘old persons’, < ma-’idrang ‘old’
Appendix III

1 The grandmother and the grandson (Narrative)

(1) *asuwa=driyan i, ulaya a saya a drekal*

when=IMPF TOP exist ID.OBL one ID.OBL village
‘Long ago, there was a village.

(2) *kirekameli tu=kakuwayanan*

different 3.PSR=custom
Their customs were different.

(3) *an ma’idrang=la a trau aw unian=la dra*

when old=PERF ID.NOM person and not.exist=PERF ID.OBL

kedrang ki-karun i,
strength get-job TOP
When a person got old and without the strength to work,

(4) *tu=atel-anay i drena-drenan aw tu=paka<lawa>lawa-aw*

3.GEN=throw-TR3 LOC RED-mountain and 3.GEN=<RED>give.up-TR1

*palu dra*¹ m-inatray
until COMP ITR-die
they were thrown out into the mountains and left until they died.

(5) *idru na drekal i, amuna unian dra*

that.NOM DF.NOM village TOP but not.exist ID.OBL

akan-an aw
eat-NMZ and
That village, they were short of food.

(6) *salraw unian dra akan-an*

very not.exist ID.OBL eat-NMZ
They were very short of food.

(7) *driyama=la na sa-drekal-an i, k<em>iri-kirim*

so=PERF DF.NOM whole-village TOP <ITR>RED-be.sparing.with

---

¹ In this sentence, *dra* functions as a complementiser and introduces the complement clause of the verb *palu.*

See §14.3.4.
dra akan-an
ID.OBL eat-NMZ.
So, the whole village was sparing with food.

(8) driyama=la na unian= driya dra kedrang ki karun i,
so=PERF DF.NOM not.exist=IMPF ID.OBL strength get-job TOP
tu=atel-anay i drena-drenan
3.GEN=throw-TR3 LOC RED-mountain
So, those who didn’t have strength to work were thrown out into the mountains.

(9) ulaya a saya ruma’ mare-temuwan
exist ID.NOM one house RECIP-grandchild
There was a family that had a grandmother and a grandson.

(10) i temutaw=la, unian=la dra kedrang
SG.NOM his.grandparent=PERF not.exist=PERF ID.OBL strength
The grandmother had no strength.

(11) idru na walak i, tu=padrek-aw i
that.NOM DF.NOM child TOP 3.GEN=carry-TR1 SG.NOM
temutaw m-a-uka=la m-atel-a i drenan
his.grandmother ITR-RED-go=PERF ITR-throw-PJ LOC mountain
That child carried his grandmother on his back and went to throw her out into the mountains.

(12) ma-sikasik aw adri=driyan i, tr<em>ikelr dra sa’adr
ITR-start.off and NEG=IMPF TOP <ITR>pick ID.OBL branch
dra kawi
ID.OBL tree
They started off, and not for a long time, she picked branches from trees.

(13) aw adri=driyan i, tr<em>ukulr dra tralrun i dalran
and NEG=IMPF TOP <ITR>pluck ID.OBL grass LOC road
And, not for a long time, she plucked grasses off on the road.

(14) tu=ka-ladram-an dra dalran
3.PSR=ka-know-NMZ ID.OBL road
It was her way of knowing the route.

(15) idru na walak i, tu=ka-ladram-aw=la aw
that.NOM DF.NOM child TOP 3.GEN=ka-know-TR1=PERF and
tu=kiumal-ay i temutaw
3.GEN=ask-TR2 SG.NOM his.grandmother
That child, he realised, and he asked his grandmother,

(16) ‘idri i, nu=ka-la-ladram-an m-u-ruma’
this.NOM TOP 2S.PSR=ka-RED-know-NMZ ITR-go-house
i ruma’” tu=ka-aw i,
LOC house 3.GEN=ask-TR1 TOP
“These, are these your way of knowing the way home?” he asked,
Appendix III

(17) “ameli, kaimayay an a pawpaw=yu i tralrun, 
NEG if.by.any.chance when ID.NOM astray=2S.NOM.LOC grass 
an s<em>em>anan=yu i tralrun 
when <ITR>stray=2S.NOM.LOC grass 
“No, in case you go astray or lose your way in the wild,

(18) driyama=la tr<em>em>ikelr=ku dra sa’adr dranu 
so=PERF <ITR>pick=1S.NOM ID.OBL branch ID.OBL/2S.PSR 
ka-la-ladram-an 
ka-RED-know-NMZ 
that’s why I picked up branches for you so that you would know (the way).”

(19) idru na walak=la i, pameli ma-sepel kan 
that.NOM DF.NOM child=PERF TOP very ITR-sorry SG.OBL 
temutaw dra aru k-i<a>natray=la i, ma-ulrep=driya 
his.grandmother COMP will k-i<a>die=PERF TOP ITR-tired=IMPF 
k<em>em>i-anger dratu ka-sanan-an 
<ITR>get-thought ID.OBL/3.PSR ka-stray-NMZ 
That child, he was very sorry that his grandmother was going to die, 
but she was still worrying that he might get lost.

(20) idru na walak=la i, laman=la kan temutaw 
that.NOM DF.NOM child=PERF TOP pity=PERF SG.OBL his.grandmother 
aw tu=padrek-aw mare-belriyas m-u-ruma’ 
and 3.GEN=carry-TR1 RECIP-turn ITR-go-house 
That child, because he had pity on his grandmother, he carried her on his 
back and returned home,

(21) aw k<em>em>urutr dra buwang i sabak kantu ruma’ 
and <ITR>dig ID.OBL hole LOC inside ID.OBL/3.PSR house 
and he dug a hole inside their house,

(22) aw tu=lasedr-aw kana buwang i temutaw 
and 3.GEN=hide-TR1 DF.OBL hole SG.NOM grandmother 
and he hid his grandmother in the hole.

(23) na wa-wari-wari tr<em>em>aka-trakaw beray dra 
DF.NOM RED-RED-day <ITR>RED-steal give ID.OBL 
akan-an idru na walak 
eat-NMZ that.NOM DF.NOM child 
Every day, that child gave (her) food secretly.

(24) ka<em>em>dru aw, ulaya a druma a drekal 
<ITR>there and exist ID.NOM other ID.NOM village 
So it was, and there was another village,

(25) ma-ranger m-araw kandru kana drekal aw p-u-patraran 
ITR-want ITR-rob that.OBL DF.OBL village and CAUS-go-outside
that wanted to rob that village, and they announced three questions.

(26) “an maruwa=mu t<em>ubang kandri ku=ki<a>umal-an
if can=2P.NOM <ITR>answer this.OBL 1S.PSR=<a>ask-NMZ
i, adri=ku=la ta-tengedr=la kanmu” tu=ka-aw
TOP NEG=1S.NOM=PERF RED-invade=PERF 2P.OBL 3.GEN=say-TR1
(Their leader) told them, “If you can answer my questions, I won’t invade you”.

(27) aw, na sa-sa-a tu=ki<a>umal-an i, amau na
and DF.NOM RED-one-NPRS 3.PSR=<a>ask-NMZ TOP COP DF.NOM
kawi na katrebe, na ni-reput-an tu=lrudus
wood DF.NOM thick DF.NOM PERF-cut-NMZ 3.PSR=end
tu=rami i, “ka-karuwa=mu ma-ladram na isuwa
3.PSR=root TOP ka-can=2P.NOM ITR-know DF.NOM which
tu=lrudus tu=rami” tu=ka-aw
3.PSR=end 3.PSR=root 3.GEN=say
And their first question was, “A big timber, both its ends are cut, can you
tell which is the top and which is the root?” he asked.

(28) idru na kawi i, ma-risan katrebe tu=lrudus tu=rami
that.NOM DF.NOM wood TOP ITR-same thick 3.PSR=end 3.PSR=root
That timber, both ends are the same thickness.

(29) unian dra mi<sasa>sasa karuwa t<em>ubang
not.exist ID.OBL <RED>one can <ITR>answer
kandru kana sa<drekal>an
that.OBL DF.OBL whole-village
In the whole village, there was one who could answer.

(30) idru na walak=la i, tu=kiual-ay=la i
that.NOM DF.NOM child=PERF TOP 3.GEN=ask-TR2=PERF SG.NOM
temutaw
his.grandmother
That child, he asked his grandmother.

(31) i temutaw=la i, “idru na kawi i,
SG.NOM his.grandmother=PERF TOP that.NOM DF.NOM wood TOP
ta=pa-la’udr-anay i kali, tu=rami i, kinguwayan=dar
1P.GEN=CAUS-float-TR3 LOC river 3.PSR=root TOP before=FREQ
mu-la’udr, tu=lrudus i, ki-a-rikudran-an=dar” k<em>a
ACAUS-float 3.PSR=end TOP get-a-back-NMZ=FREQ <ITR>say
i temutaw
SG.NOM his.grandmother
His grandmother, she said, “This timber, if we floated it in the river,
its root would float to the front, its end to the rear”.
That child, he told the elder in the village,

and he answered those who wanted to rob the village, “Correct!” they said.

And the elder in the village was very pleased.

And, (the leader) announced the second question, “The drum, how can we make it make a sound by itself?” he said.

And there was no one in the whole village that could answer,

and so, that child, he went to ask his grandmother.

He told his grandmother, “They said such and such …”
His grandmother said, “Go and take a drum that hasn’t has the skin put on it. And inside the drum, put some wasps, and seal it with paper.”

That child, he did what she said.

He put some wasps inside the drum.

And he sealed the drum with paper.

Those wasps, they flew towards the light and hit the paper.

The sound was like the drum beating.

And he told their elder in the village.

And he answered those people, “Correct!” they said.

The elder was very pleased.
Appendix III

(49) na puka-telru na ki<a>umal-an i, ulaya a DF.NOM ORD-three DF.NOM <a>ask-NMZ TOP exist ID.NOM dru-a a ba’, ma-risan ma-trina tu=pinudradrekan, two-NPRS ID.NOM horse ITR-same ITR-big 3.PSR=body ulaya a saya i, lalak tu=ami-an exist ID.NOM one TOP young 3.PSR=year-NMZ
As for the third question, there were two horses, their bodies were the same size, one of them is younger.

(50) “kudakudayaw i, ka-la-ladram=ta na isuwa how TOP ka-RED-know=1P.NOM DF.NOM which na lalak, na ma`idrang” tu=ka-aw i, DF.NOM young DF.NOM old 3.GEN=say-TR1 TOP He asked, “How do we know which is young and which is old?”

(51) unian dra trau dra karuwa t<em>ubang not.exist ID.OBL person ID.OBL can <ITR>answer No one could answer.

(52) amau=la idru na walak m-uka=diya kiual-a COP=PERF that.NOM DF.NOM child ITR-go=IMPF ask-PJ kan temutaw SG.OBL his.grandmother
That child went to ask his grandmother.

(53) aw i temutaw “i, na kiniwayan m-eken and SG.NOM grandmother TOP DF.NOM before ITR-eat dra tralrun i, amau tu=walak ID.OBL grass TOP COP 3.PSR=child And his grandmother said, “The one that eats grass first is the child.

(54) idru na mara`idrang i, me-ngara kana that.NOM DF.NOM more-old TOP ITR-wait DF.OBL ma-kiteng m-eken dra tralrun aw m-eken ITR-small ITR-eat ID.OBL grass and ITR-eat The older one, it waits for the younger one to eat grass and then it eats”.

(55) aw m-uka=la t<em>ubang-a i, “pamau” k<em>a and ITR-go=PERF <ITR>answer-PJ TOP correct <ITR>say And he went and answered, “Correct!” they said.

(56) aw saygu t<em>ubang kandri kana telru-a ki<a>umal-an and can <ITR>answer these.OBL DF.OBL three-NPRS <a>ask-NMZ And he was able to answer those three questions.

(57) aw “adri-a=ku=la t<em>engedr kanmu” and NEG-PJ=1S.NOM=PERF <ITR>invade 2P.OBL And (the leader) said, “I will never invade you”.

The elder in the village, he was very pleased that the child could answer everything. And he asked that child, “I will give you whatever kind of reward you like”, he said.

The child said, “I have something to say. My answers were told (to me) by my grandmother. My grandmother, I hid her in the house. If I can ask for a reward, it is that you don’t scold me for lying to you.”.

And the elder said, “How would we scold you?”

The elder in the village, he was very pleased that the child could answer everything.
aru a-araw kanta drekal
will RED-rob DF.OBL/1.PSR village
Your answers were able to stop them robbing our village.

(67) an k<em>a>adrui, adri ti=ta-tengedr=yu
when <ITR>there TOP NEG 1.S.GEN=RED-attack=2.S.NOM
dranu b<in>a-betra’-an
ID.OBL/2.S.PSR RED<PERF>-lie-NMZ
So I won’t punish you for your lies.

(68) i temuu i, inaba tu=tranguru’
SG.NOM your.grandparent TOP good 3.PSR=HEAD
Your grandmother, her brain is good.

(69) karuwa b<en>a’a’aw kanta drekal
can <ITR>save DF.OBL/1.PSR village
She was able to save our village.

(70) adri atel-an i drenan=la” k<em>a
NEG throw-TR3:IMP LOC mountain=PERF <ITR>say
Don’t throw her out into the mountains.” he said.

(71) aw adri tu=atel-an i drenan=la
and NEG 3.GEN=throw-TR3 LOC mountain=PERF
And she wasn’t thrown out into the mountains.’

2 The process of making sticky rice cakes (Instructions)

(1) ma-rengay-a=ku=driya dra tua-abay-an dra binariyaw
ITR-tell-PJ=1S.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL make-rice.cake-NMZ ID.OBL sticky.rice.cake
‘I’ll tell about the making of binariyaw sticky rice cake.

(2) na binariyaw i, a s<in>anga dra drikedran
DF.NOM sticky.rice.cake TOP ID.NOM <PERF>produce ID.OBL sticky.rice
The binariyaw, it is a kind of sticky rice product.

(3) aw na drikedran i, ta=ilrang-aw dra enay, aw
and DF.NOM sticky.rice TOP 1.P.GEN=grind-TR1 ID.OBL water and
ta=lrubuk-aw dra lrubuk, aw ta=tra-tre’el-aw dra
1.P.GEN=sack-TR1 ID.OBL sack and 1.P.GEN=RED-press-TR1 ID.OBL
barasa i, mu-teres tu=enay
stone TOP ACAUS-filter 3.PSR=water
The sticky rice, we grind it with water, and we pack it in a sack, and we
press it with a stone, and then the water is filtered out.

(4) an tua-abay=ta i, k<em>epe1r=ta
when make-rice.cake=1.P.NOM TOP <ITR>handful=1.P.NOM
dra sa-kepelr, aw ta=tua-emu-aw dra
ID.OBL one-handful and 1.P.GEN=make-shape-TR1 ID.OBL
When we make rice cake, we grab a handful (of sticky rice), and we make it squishy like mud, and then we add a filling of crab, meat, preserved vegetable inside it.

(5) an pa-puka=ta dra kalang i, m-a-aya=ta
when RED-add=1P.NOM ID.OBL crab TOP ITR-RED-find=1P.NOM
dra kalaayan pa-lrubelrub drotu ika-tra-trina-an
ID.OBL suitable CAUS-mix ID.OBL/3.PSR ika-RED-big-NMZ
mu-lributr
ACAU-S-wrap
If we are adding crabs, we have to find a suitable size as (filling) mixture for the wrapping.

(6) aw, ta=ringring-aw na pa-ka-lraiben i na kalang,
and 1P.GEN=stir.fry-TR1 DF.NOM CAUS-ka-salty DF.NOM crab
aw, ta=pa-lrubelrub-anay kana binariyaw
and 1P.GEN=CAUS-mix-TR3 DF.OBL sticky.rice.cake
And we stir-fry the crab to make it salty, and we make it the filling for the binariyaw.

(7) na binariyaw i, ta=lributr-anay dra lrabilu
DF.NOM sticky.rice.cake TOP 1P.GEN=wrap-TR3 ID.OBL lrabilu
ida mangede’
ID.OBL tender
The binariyaw, we wrap it with tender lrabilu leaves.

(8) na p<in>a-lributr-an dra lrabilu i,
DF.NOM <PERF>CAUS-wrap-NMZ ID.OBL lrabilu TOP
tu=ka-adri-an tr<em>eketr kana bira’ kana rengas
3.GEN=ka-NEG-NMZ <ITR>stick DF.OBL leaf DF.OBL rengas
The thing wrapped in lrabilu won’t stick to the rengas leaf.

(9) aw i patraran i, ta=lributr-aw=la dra bira’
and LOC outside TOP 1P.GEN=wrap-TR1=PERF ID.OBL leaf
dra rengas aw ta=betbet-aw
ID.OBL rengas and 1P.GEN=tie-TR1
And on the outside, we wrap it with a rengas leaf and then tie it.

---

2 A kind of plant.
3 A kind of plant.
It won’t melt when we boil it in water.

Before we add in salted meat filling,

we preserve the meat with salt for one day, and we cut it to a suitable (size) for the filling of the binariyaw.

And about the size of the binariyaw, we have to see how big the size of the leaf of the rengas is.

The smell of the rengas is sweet: it is right for binariyaw sticky rice cake.

When we eat binariyaw, its smell is fragrant.
3 Part of a prayer

(1) ki-a-anun=mi=driya kana, ama=a, kandru get-a-bless=1P.ECL.NOM=IMPF 2S.OBL father=VCT that.OBL kananu ya-beray kaniam kana wa-wari-wari DF.OBL/2S.PSR NMZ-give 1P.OBL DF.OBL RED-RED-day ‘Father, we praise you for what you give us every day;

(2) nu=ya-beray kaniam na ka-ametrek-an 2S.PSR=NMZ-give 1P.OBL DF.NOM ka-peaceful-NMZ (For) the peace you give us,

(3) nu=ya-beray kaniam na ka-la-ladram-an dra 2S.PSR=NMZ-give 1P.OBL DF.NOM ka-RED-know-NMZ ID.OBL manay kema=mi i, what say=1P.NOM TOP the wisdom you give us,

(4) sa-sungalr=mi kana, ama=a RED-worship=1P.ECL.NOM 2S.OBL father=VCT we will worship you, Father.

(5) garem i, uliya naniam ki<a>ami-an kana ama=a now TOP exist DF.NOM/1P.PSR <a>petition-NMZ 2S.OBL father=VCT Now we have some petitions to make to you, Father.

(6) i isaw, tu=k<in>iram i-an miedreng kadri SG.NOM Isaw 3.PSR=<PERF>lie here i kiaedrengan, palu garem, LOC bed until now Isaw, since his starting to lie on the bed until now,

(7) nu=ya-’alraw kan isaw, nu=ya-laman 2S.PSR=NMZ-protect SG.OBL Isaw 2S.PSR=NMZ-sympathise kan isaw i, unian=mi dra palu-an SG.OBL Isaw TOP not.exist=1P.NOM ID.OBL demarcate-NMZ dra s<em>angalr-an kanu ID.OBL <TTR>appreciate-NMZ 2S.OBL (Because of ) your protection over Isaw, your sympathy for Isaw, our appreciation to you is boundless.

(8) s<em>angalr-a=mi=driya kana, ama, <TTR>appreciate-PJ=1P.NOM=IMPF 2S.OBL father Father, we want to thank you.

(9) amau na mara-mi-lama-laman-an=yu COP DF.NOM most-have-RED-sympathise-NMZ=2S.NOM You are the one who has the most sympathy.
(10) an kadru naniam ka-kualreng-an, ki-a-anun=mi
if there DF.NOM/1P.PSR ka-sick-NMZ get-a-bless=1P.NOM
ka
2S.OBL father=VCT
If we have difficulties, we pray to you, Father.

(11) ulaya a ma-trina niam=bangabang-an, ama=a,
exist ID.NOM ITR-big 1P.PSR=busy-NMZ father=VCT
(Now) Father, we have a big event.

(12) i isaw i, mu-alrak=la kemay i maka-satr
SG.NOM Isaw TOP ACAUS-get=PERF from LOC along-above
na ka-ra-ruwa pasekadr kanantu k<in>i-anger-an
DF.NOM ka-RED-can achieve DF.OBL/3.PSR <PERF>get-thought-NMZ
dratu a-uka-an m-u-isatr dra sasudang
ID.OBL/3.PSR RED-go-NMZ ITR-go-above ID.OBL boat
Isaw has received permission to achieve his dream to travel (lit. to get onto a boat).

(13) aru ka-si<a>kasik=mi=la, p<en>a-padan=mi=la
will ka-<a>start =1P.NOM=PERF < ITR>RED-prepare=1P.NOM=PERF
draniam a-uka-an
ID.OBL/1P.PSR RED-go-NMZ
We will start off soon, and we are preparing for our journey.

(14) k<em>adrini=mi=driya dra ka-kualreng-an=driya
< ITR>here=1P.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL
ka-sick-NMZ=IMPF
But we still have some difficulties.

(15) adri p<en>auwa naniam paisu
NEG < ITR>enough DF.NOM/1P.PSR money
We don’t have enough money.

(16) karuwa misasa m-uka taytaw amau?
can alone ITR-go 3S.NEU tag
Can he go alone, can he?

(17) ka<a>dru=driya nantu lang na pa-pulang
<a>there=IMPF DF.OBL/3.PSR company DF.NOM RED-help
na aru ka-keser 'k<em>adras na aru pa-padrek
DF.NOM will RED-strong < ITR>lift DF.NOM will RED-carry
kan isaw
SG.OBL Isaw
There must be (a person) that can help him and who is strong enough to lift Isaw up and to carry him on his back.

(18) m-a-aya=mi=driya dra ka-ra-ruwa i manay
ITR-RED-find=1P.NOM=IMPF ID.OBL ka-RED-can SG.NOM who
We are still looking for a person who can do that.
(19) *ama=a, pulang-i=mi*  
father=VCT help-TR2:IMP=1P.NOM  
Father, help us.

(20) *beray-i=mi dra maruwa-a=mi atrebung dra*  
give-TR2:IMP=1P.NOM ID.OBL can-PJ=1P.NOM meet ID.OBL  
*lalak dra karuwa kurenang kaniam*  
child COMP can follow 1P.OBL  
Help us that we can find someone who can go with us.

(21) *aw, ki-a-ami=mi kanu, ama=a*  
and get-a-bless=1P.NOM 2S.OBL father=VCT  
And, father, we ask for your blessing.

*naniam ka-ka-kawang-an na paisu i,*  
DF.NOM/1P.PSR ka-RED-walk-NMZ DF.NOM money TOP  
adri=mi=driya ma-ladram dra ulaya i isuwa  
NEG=1P.NOM=IMPF ITR-know COMP exist LOC where  
Our travel monies, we still don’t know where they are.

(22) *adri p<en>auwa=driya naniam paisu ....*  
NEG <ITR>enough=IMPF DF.NOM/1P.PSR money  
We don’t have enough money …’
References


—— 2005, The core-oblique distinction and core index in some Austronesian languages of Indonesia. MS.


—— 2006a, Complex predicates in some Formosan languages. Paper presented at 10-ICAL, Palawan. MS.


—— 2004, Complementation in typological perspective. Position paper in 2004 International Workshop on Complement Clauses and Complementation Strategies. RCLT, La Trobe University, Melbourne. MS.


Haspelmath, Martin, 1987, Transitivity alternations of the anticausative type. (Arbeitspapiere, N.F., No.4) Cologne: Institut für Sprachwissenschaft der Universität zu Köln.


—— 2004, Transitivity and ergativity in Formosan and Philippine languages. Linguistics, University of Hawai‘i: PhD dissertation.


Ogawa, Naoyoshi, and Erin Asai, 1935, Gengo ni yoru Taiwan takasago-zoku densetsushu [The myths and traditions of the Formosan native tribes (texts and notes)]. Taihoku [Taipei]: Institute of Linguistics, Taihoku Imperial University.


References

— 2006, The argument structure of undergoer voice clauses in Formosan and other
Philippine-type languages. MS. Paper presented at AFLA 13, Hsinchu, 24 to 26 March
2006.

Ross, Malcolm D. and Teng, Stacy Fang-ching, 2003, The notion of ‘verb’ in Puyuma:
a construction grammar approach. MS, Paper presented at the Second Workshop of
Formosan Languages, Academia Sinica, Taipei.

— 2005a, Formosan languages and linguistic typology. Language and Linguistics
6:739–781.


In Timothy Shopen, ed. Language typology and syntactic description, vol. I: Clause

Sagart, Laurent, 2004, The higher phylogeny of Austronesian and the position of Tai-

Schachter, Paul, 1977, Reference-related and role-related properties of subjects. In Peter
Cole and Jerrold M. Sadock, eds Syntax and semantics, vol. 8: Grammatical relations,

Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Conference on Performatives, Presuppositions and Implicatures.

Sebba, Mark, 1987, The syntax of serial verbs: an investigation into serialisation in Sranan

Voice in Philippine languages, 85–142. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins
Publishing Company.

Sprenger, Arnold, 1971, The numerals of the Puyuma language (Katipol dialect). Fu-Jen
Studies 4:49–60.

— 1972, Overt construction markers in Puyuma (Katipol dialect). In Charles T.C. Tang,
Jeffrey C.H. Tung and Anthony Y.T. Wu, eds Papers in linguistics in honor of A.A.

Starosta, Stanley, 1974, Causative verbs in Formosan languages. Oceanic Linguistics

— 1988, A grammatical typology of Formosan languages. Bulletin of the Institute of

— 1995, A grammatical subgrouping of Formosan languages. In Paul Jen-Kuei Li,
Cheng-hwa Tsang, Dah-an Ho, Ying-kuei Huang and Chiu-yu Tseng, eds Austronesian
studies relating to Taiwan, 683–726. Symposium Series of the Institute of History and
Philology No.3. Taipei: Academia Sinica.

— 1997, Formosan clause structure: transitivity, ergativity, and case marking. In Chiu-
yu Tseng, ed. Chinese language and linguistics IV: Typological studies of languages
Taipei: Academia Sinica.


—— and Wu, Chen-huei, 2006, Prototypical and less prototypical patterns of reduplication in Formosan languages. In Henry Y. Chang, Lillian M. Huang and Dah-an Ho, eds Streams converging into an ocean, Festschrift in Honor of Professor Paul Jen-Kuei Li on his 70th Birthday, 97–142. Language and Linguistics Monograph Series W-5. Taipei: Academia Sinica.

